STATE LIBRARY OF PENNSYLVANIA
3 0144 00194713 4

S
CLASS 909 BOOK Sa 34

VOLUME 30

PENNSYLVANIA
STATE LIBRARY

Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2019 with funding from
This project is made possible by a grant from the Institute of Museum and Library Services as administered by the Pennsylvania Department of Education through the Office of Commonwealth Libraries

https://archive.org/details/vol30modernhisto00salm

Modern History;

OR, THE

PRESENT STATE

Penn. State Library

OF All NATIONS.

DESCRIBING

Their respective Situations, Persons, Habits, Buildings, Manners, Laws and Customs, Religion and Policy, Arts and Sciences, Trades, Manufactures and Husbandry, Plants, Animals and Minerals.

By Mr. *SALMON.*

VOL. XXX.

Being the Third Volume of *AMERICA*, contains,

I. A Description of *Chili*, *Patagonia* or *Terra Magellanica*, and *Terra del Fogo*.

II. Of *La Plata* or *Paragua*.

III. Of the Country of the *Amazons*.

IV. Of the *Spanish* Islands of *Cuba*, *Hispaniola*, and *Porto-Rico*.

V. A summary of the State of *Spanish America*.

VI. A Description of *Brazil*, or the Dominions of *Portugal* in *America*.

VII. A State of the *British* Plantations, particularly of *Virginia*.

The whole illustrated with MAPS *and* CUTS.

LONDON:

Printed for the AUTHOR: And sold by J. ROBERTS, in *Warwick-Lane*; and the Booksellers in Town and Country.

MDCCXXXVII.

Virginia archives

THE

CONTENTS

OF THE

THIRTIETH VOLUME.

The INTRODUCTION Page 1

CHAP. I. OF the Name, Situation, and Extent of *CHILI*, and of the Face of the Country, its Mountains, &c. 33

CHAP. II. Of the Springs, Lakes, Rivers, Seas, Winds, Tides, and Seasons 43

CHAP. III. Of the Provinces and Subdivisions of *Chili*, and of their Towns, Fortresses, and other Buildings 51

CHAP. IV. Of the Persons and Habits of the *Chilesians*; their Genius, Temper, Arts, Manufactures, Food, Exercises, and Diversions 61

CHAP. V. Of the Animals of *Chili* 70

CHAP. VI. Of its Vegetables 73

CHAP. VII. The History and present State of *Chili* 82

The Present State of LA PLATA, *or* PARAGUA.

CHAP. I. Of the Name, Situation, and Extent of *La Plata*, and of the Face of the Country 168

CHAP. II. Of the Seas, Lakes, Rivers, and Seasons of *La Plata* 170

CHAP. III. Of its Provinces, chief Towns, and other Buildings 174

CHAP. IV. Of the Persons and Habits of the Natives; their Genius, Temper, Food, Exercises, and Diversions 181

CHAP. V. Of their Husbandry, Plants, Animals, and Minerals 184

CHAP. VI. The History and present State of *La Plata*, and the Religion of its ancient and modern Inhabitants 190

34418

The

The CONTENTS.

The Preſent State of the Country of the AMAZONS.

The Name, Situation, and Extent of the Country 197
The River *Amazon* firſt diſcovered 198
Its Sources and Courſe 211
The Air, Seaſons, Animals, and Vegetables 212
The Perſons, Habits, and Genius of the Natives 213

The Preſent State of the SPANISH ISLANDS.

CHAP. I. Of the Iſland of *Cuba* 215
CHAP. II. Of the Iſland of *Hiſpaniola* 226
CHAP. III. Of the Iſland of *Porto Rico* 237
The Concluſion of *Spaniſh America* 245

The Preſent State of BRAZIL.

CHAP. I. Of the Name, Situation, Extent, Face of the Country, Springs, Rivers, Lakes, Seas, Air, Winds, and Seaſons 256
CHAP. II. Of its Provinces, chief Towns, Fortreſſes, and other Buildings 261
CHAP. III. Of the Perſons and Habits of the *Braſilians*; their Genius and Temper, Arts and Sciences, Food, Exerciſes and Diverſions 280
CHAP. IV. Of their Animals 284
CHAP. V. Of their Vegetables 288
CHAP. VI. Their Hiſtory, Government, Forces, Religion, Marriages, Women, Children, Slaves, and Funerals 296

The Preſent State of the BRITISH PLANTATIONS.

CHAP. I. Of the Name, Situation, Extent, and Subdiviſions of the *Britiſh* Plantations 311
CHAP. II. Of the Province of *Virginia*, *viz.* of the Face of the Country, its Mountains, Seas, Capes, Bays, Rivers, Springs, Lakes, Winds, Tides, and Seaſons 315
CHAP. III. Of the Provinces or Subdiviſions and chief Towns of *Virginia*, and of their other Buildings 323
CHAP. IV. Of the Perſons and Habits of the *Virginians*; their Genius and Temper, Arts, Manufactures, Food, Exerciſes and Diverſions, Diſeaſes and Remedies 332
CHAP. V. Of the *Virginian* Animals 339
CHAP. VI. Of the *Virginian* Soil and Vegetables 375
CHAP. VII. The Hiſtory of *Virginia* 392

THE

THE INTRODUCTION TO THE THIRD VOLUME OF *AMERICA.*

IN this Introduction to the third Volume, I ſhall take an Opportunity of conſidering ſome Objections that have been made to the modern Hiſtory of *Africa*, and of giving an Anſwer to the Letters of ſeveral of my Correſpondents, in relation to the Conduct of the remaining Part of this Work, which is now brought near a Period. Introduction to the third Volume.

It ſeems, in treating of the Diſcovery of *America*, I had obſerv'd, that *Ariſtotle* and the Ancients in general were ſo far from knowing any thing of *America*, that they knew nothing of that Part of *Africa* The Ancients knew nothing of *Africa* beyond the Equator.

which lies near or beyond the Equator; for even *Pliny* assures us, that it was generally held in his Time, *That the middle Region of the World, where the Sun continually run his Course, was parch'd and burnt up with Fire.* And tho' the same celebrated Writer mentions a Tradition, that *Hanno* and some other *Carthaginian* and *Phenician* Adventurers had sail'd round *Africa*, it is evident he did not believe it; for he could not then have asserted, that the Torrid Zone was not habitable, which those Adventurers must have pass'd twice, and sail'd 35 Degrees to the Southward of the Equator in that Voyage, and seen the Sun for a whole Year at least to the Northward of them.

The Ancients must then have known that the Countries under the Equinoctial were habitable. They must have known another Hemisphere, been acquainted with other Stars and Constellations than those that are visible to the Northward of the Equator: Which were such remarkable Discoveries, that if they had been once made, would never have been forgot by those learned and polite Nations the *Egyptians*, *Greeks*, and *Romans*: And consequently I thought it reasonable to conclude, that the South of *Africa* was no more known to the Ancients than *America* was.

Objections to this Opinion.

In answer to this Opinion, some Gentlemen of my Acquaintance, in order to undeceive me, I presume, were so good as

to

to ſend me the following Paſſages out of *Herodotus*, with ſome Remarks upon them.

Herod. Lib. iv. *Cap.* 41, 42. *Africa Mari eſt manifeſtè circumflua, exceptò duntaxat ubi Aſiæ contermina eſt; Neco Ægyptorum Rege hoc primo demonſtrante, is enim miſit navibus Phenicis quoſdam, præcipiens ut tranſvecti Columnas Herculeas penetrarent ad Septentrionale uſque mare, atque ita ad Ægyptum remearent.* This Direction to go to *Hercules Pillars*, and penetrate to the North, is unintelligible.

Phenices igitur à Rubro mari ſolventes abierunt in mare Auſtrale, qui, cum Autumnus adveniſſet, applicatis ad terram navibus, ſementem faciebant in quamcunque Africæ partem navigantes perveniſſent, ac meſſem exſpectabant—— Deinde meſſo frumento navigabant. Ita biennio conſumpto anno tertio ad Herculeas Columnas declinantes in Ægyptum remearunt, referentes quæ apud me fidem non habent, ſed fortè apud alios: In prætereundo Africam ſe habuiſſe ſolem ad dextram.

" This is the Fact, as related by *Hero-*
" *dotus* (ſays theſe Gentlemen) and the
" Queſtion is, how theſe Men, thus ſent
" out by *Necus*, ſhould really know that
" *Africa* was ſurrounded by Water;
" that it might be ſail'd round within
" the Space of three Years; that in Au-
" tumn they muſt be obliged to go on
" Shore, and ſtay there long enough to
" ſow Corn and reap it; and in the Voy-

" age * *all along have the Sun to the Right-*
" *hand*, unleſs they had really perform'd
" this Voyage.——It will not be enough
" to ſay, that you can't ſee how ſuch a
" Voyage could be performed, or to tell
" us of high Seas, croſs Winds, or to
" argue from Conſequences; *viz.* How
" came it about that the King of *Egypt*
" planted no Colonies in thoſe new-diſ-
" covered Countries? When a Fact is ſo
" well circumſtantiated as this before us;
" and when modern Experience ſhews
" thoſe Circumſtances to be exactly true,
" nothing but ſhowing a down-right Im-
" poſſibility for ſuch a Fact being per-
" formed can any way invalidate it. 'Tis
" plain, from *Herodotus*, that from the
" Teſtimony of theſe Men, he believed
" that *Africa* was ſurrounded Southward
" by Water—All that ſeem'd to him
" incredible in their Narrative was—That
" the Land of *Africa* ſhould run out ſo
" far to the South, as † *that theſe Men*
" *ſhould ſee the Sun in the greateſt Part*
" *of their Voyage to the North of them.*
" You muſt not think that this Story was
" ſlighted, and look'd upon as a Fable in
" thoſe Days.——

" A thouſand Cauſes, Difficulty of the
" Voyage, a ſmall Proſpect of Advantage
" ——Troubles that immediately ſucceeded

* This is impoſſible.

† The Paſſage in *Herodotus* does not ſay ſo.

" in

" in *Egypt* might hinder its being further " profecuted — However, we find about " 115 Years after *Necus*, that the matter " was difputed in *Xerxes*'s Court — For " *Herodotus* tells us in the fame Book, " Chap. 43. — That when one of *Xerxes*'s " great Men had offended him, inftead of " putting him to death, he ordered him, " by way of Punifhment, to endeavour to " make this fame Voyage, *viz.* To " * *fet out to* Egypt, *and to fail by the* " Streights *round* Africa *into the* Red-Sea. " — This great Man accordingly under- " took the Voyage; and after he had fail'd " fome Months beyond the *Streights*, " probably difcouraged by the Difficulties " from Wind, Sea, *&c.* he return'd, tell- " ing *Xerxes* the Voyage could not be " perform'd — But this Anfwer was fo " far from fatisfying that Monarch, that " he put him to death for his former Crime. " — From whence it is further evident, " that the Ancients, at leaft fome of them, " believed that *Africa* was *Mari Circum-* " *flua*.

Since this kind Intimation from my Friends, I have obferv'd that feveral modern Writers are of Opinion, that other Adventurers, befides the *Phenicians*, had furrounded the South of *Africa* in thofe early Ages.

The Opinion of fome modern Writers of this Matter.

* Directly contrary to the *Phenician* Voyage.

Mr.

Mr. *Birchet*

Mr. Secretary *Birchet*, in his *Naval Hiſtory*, particularly affirms, that the Ancients were acquainted with the South of *Africa*, and had ſail'd round it by the *Cape of Good Hope* more than once; for which he quotes *Herodotus* alſo, and mentions *Plutarch*, *Pliny*, and ſome others of the Ancients, to have been of that Opinion.

In the fourth Page of his *Naval Hiſtory*, ſpeaking of the Navigation of the Ancients he ſays, " *Herodotus* tells us, that *Necus*, " King of *Egypt*, after he had laid aſide " his Project of cutting a Canal from the " *Nile* to the *Red-Sea*, ſent out ſome *Phe-* " *nicians* to make Diſcoveries; who ſail- " ing from that Sea, launched into the " Southern Ocean, where, when Autumn " came on, they landed in *Libya*, ſow'd " Corn, and ſtaid till it was ripe, whence " having got in their Harveſt they de- " parted; and when they had been abſent " two Years, arrived the third in *Egypt* " by way of the *Pillars of Hercules*. They " reported, ſays he, (*what whoſo will may* " *believe for me*) that in their Paſſage a- " bout *Africa*, they had the Sun on their " Right-hand; and in this manner (he " goes on) was *Libya* firſt known; (*which*, " *by the bye*, (ſays Mr. *Birchet*) *is an* " *ample Teſtimony that the* Cape of Good " Hope *was known and doubled by the* " *Ancients, and that too long before the* " *Time of* Hanno *the* Carthaginian.)

Quotes *Herodotus* alſo for it.

Page 12. He says, "*Pliny* tells us, that "*Hanno*, in the flourishing times of *Car-* "*thage*, sail'd round *Africa* from *Gades*, "or *Cadez*, to the end of *Arabia*, and "*publish'd an Account of his Voyage.* P. 104. "speaking of the Conquest of *India* by "*Alexander the Great*, he says, he gave "Orders afterwards to *Nearchus* and *One-* "*sicritus*, who were most skill'd in Navi- "gation, to take the strongest and best "built Ships of his Fleet, and penetrate "as far into the Ocean as they could with "Safety, and then return to him, either "by the River *Indus*, or *Euphrates*, the "former of whom *(Nearchus)* as *Plu-* "*tarch* tells us in the Life of *Alexander*, "having coasted along *Arabia*, *Ethiopia* "and *Libya*, came about to the *Pillars* "*of Hercules*, and return'd through the "*Mediterranean* to *Macedonia*.

Cites *Pliny* for *Hanno*'s Voyage.

The Voyage of *Nearchus*.

For which *Plutarch* is cited.

From whence 'tis observable, that there are no less than three Voyages mention'd by the Ancients to be made round the South of *Africa*, besides that perform'd in part by the *Persian* Nobleman *Xerxes* sent on the like Expedition. But this still renders it the more surprising that we have no better Account from the Ancients of the Southern Part of *Africa*; of a Southern Hemisphere, or of the Countries under the Equinoctial; especially when the same Authors relate, that *Hanno* the *Carthaginian*, and the *Persian* Nobleman, wrote a very particular History of their respective Voyages: Had they been

been really perform'd, would not ſome one of thoſe remarkable Particulars have reach'd us as well as the general Report or Tradition that they made thoſe Voyages? And would not ſome one of thoſe Powers, or ſome other naval Power, acquainted with this grand Diſcovery, have attempted to plant Colonies, or make Settlements on thoſe golden Coaſts of *Guinea* and *Zangubar*; or thoſe fruitful Countries about the Cape, where they muſt of neceſſity have been on Shore, if ever they made that Voyage? I muſt confeſs there are ſtill ſome other modern Writers of our own Nation that ſeem to give Credit to thoſe Authors; who relate, that the Ancients ſail'd round *Africa*; and among the reſt, thoſe Gentlemen that are employ'd by the Bookſellers to furniſh us with a *Univerſal Hiſtory*.

Page 267 of their firſt and only Volume yet extant, they relate the Story of *Pharaoh Necus*'s ſending the *Phenicians* round *Africa* by the *Cape of Good Hope*; and Page 406 they mention it again, with the following Note or Remark, *viz.*

The Opinion of our Univerſal Hiſtorians.

" *We ſee then the* Portugueſe *were only* " *the Re-diſcoverers of the* Cape of Good " Hope. Here we will take Leave to " animadvert a little upon a celebrated " Author, * who will have it, *the* Phenici- " ans *made it a common Practice to trade* " *with* India *by the way of the* Cape of

* *Hut.*

Good

" Good Hope *from the time of* Solomon.
" This is incredible on many Accounts;
" 1. The *Phenicians* had no such Temp-
" tation to undertake so long and dange-
" rous a Voyage as we have; the Voyage
" to them must have been much longer
" than it is at present to us. 2. They are
" not above half so far from *India* as we
" are. 3. *It is incredible that the Struc-*
" *ture and Rigging of their Ships were*
" *rightly adapted for so unfavourable a*
" *Navigation*; *nor is it likely that they*
" *could at once furnish themselves with*
" *Stores and Provisions sufficient for their*
" *Use and Necessities, and at the same time*
" *have any great Cargo of Goods on Board.*
" 4. These Disadvantages consider'd, it
" must appear that they might have been
" supplied with all the Eastern Commodi-
" ties in general at a much cheaper Rate
" from the *Egyptians* and *Edomites* on the
" *Arabian* Gulf, and from *Syria* on the
" *Euphrates*; and this certainly was a
" Part of the Trade they drove from *Syria*
" to *Egypt*. 5. *It is not to be imagined,*
" *if the contrary Practice had been usual,*
" *that all Memory of it would have been*
" *lost*; *that the* Romans *in* Ovid's *Time*
" *would have talked of the* Torrid Zone
" *as uninhabitable*; and that *Herodotus*
" would have reckoned it as so noble a
" Transaction of *Necus*'s Reign, that he
" sent the most expert *Phenicians* he could
" procure to explore the Shores of *Africa*;

" or that the ſame in other reſpects moſt " * knowing Hiſtorian would have diſ- " puted the Credibility of what the Sailors " reported on their Return, that they had " the Sun on the Right-hand of them, it " being the ancient Cuſtom, as we have " ſome-where read in *Plutarch*, to ſet the " Face to the † Weſtward; in which " Poſture the Sun muſt be on the Right- " hand of him who is to the Southward " of its Courſe, which they muſt have been " over and over again who doubled the " *Cape of Good Hope*. In ſhort, the *In-* " *dian* Commerce by that Rout could have " anſwered no manner of End to the " *Phenicians*, nor could they have been " tempted to frequent it, ſituated as they " were, between *Egypt* and *Syria*, the " two great Magazines of whatever the " Eaſt afforded.

The Univerſal Hiſtorians refute their own Opinion.

It is obſervable that ſome of theſe Reaſons, offer'd by our Univerſal Hiſtorians, againſt the *Phenicians* trading with the *Eaſt-Indies* by the way of the *Cape of Good Hope*, appear of equal Force againſt their ſailing round *Africa* at all, as the *Unfitneſs of their Ships for ſuch a Voyage, and their acknowledg'd Ignorance of the* Torrid Zone *after this pretended Voyage was made.*

* Whether *credulous* would not have been a more proper Epithet.

† *Quære*, If many more had not a greater Veneration for the Eaſt than the Weſt.

I pro-

I proceed now to make some further Objections against this pretended Voyage of the Ancients round the *Cape of Good Hope*, and to enforce those already made.

Further Reasons to shew the Ancients never sail'd round *Africa*.

And in the first place, as these *Phenician* Mariners are supposed to be the most skilful Artists of that Age in marine Affairs, how came they not to speak of this remarkable Passage with more Propriety, or indeed more intelligibly? How came they not to say that the Sun was for the most part to the Northward of them in that Voyage? or why did they not say it was in their Backs when they stood to the South, and in their Faces when they return'd to the North; and *only on their Right-hand when they doubled or turn'd about the* Cape of Good Hope, the most Southern Promontory of *Africa?* as in truth it must have been, if ever they had made that Voyage.

2. This appears to have been no more than a Report, an uncertain Tradition in the time of that Historian. *Herodotus* is so far from citing any Author where it was to be found, that he plainly tells us he did not believe it. He had related a great many other incredible things in his History, but this had obtain'd so little Credit in the Age he liv'd, that even this credulous Writer gave it up as a fabulous Relation, and durst not avouch the Truth of it. Nor is it any more improbable that the Ancients should conjecture that *Africa* was surrounded by the Sea than the

Moderns ſhould believe that there is a North-eaſt or a North-weſt Paſſage round *Aſia* or *America*, which we have been endeavouring to find out theſe two hundred Years: and notwithſtanding our numerous Diſappointments, it is ſtill believ'd by ſome there is ſuch a Paſſage.

But ſhould it hereafter be found out, will it follow, that becauſe People have a great while conjectur'd there was ſuch a Paſſage, that therefore it was known and uſed heretofore?

Again; *Plato* expreſly ſays, that there was a vaſt Iſland beyond the *Atlantick Ocean*, equal in Dimenſions to *Aſia* and *Africa*: And that there were ſeveral intermediate Iſlands which rendered the Paſſage eaſy thither; all which we find exactly true at this Day; and yet no Man, I preſume, will take upon him to ſay that the Ancients ever made a Voyage to *America* and back again: From whence I infer, that ſuch lucky Gueſſes as theſe, tho' People may have happen'd to gueſs right, are far from proving that ſuch Voyages were known or uſed by the Ancients. It is much more wonderful that *Plato* ſhould deſcribe the Situation and Dimenſions of *America*, than that the Ancients ſhould gueſs that either the North or South Parts of our Continent were ſurrounded by the Sea.

3. The Time limited for this Voyage is much too ſhort: it was impoſſible the Ancients then (or indeed the Moderns now, with

with all the Advantages they have) ſhould coaſt round that Part of *Africa* from the *Red-Sea* to *Hercules Pillars*, as thoſe *Phenicians* are ſaid to have done within the Space of two Years, and return in the third to *Egypt*; for in ſailing upon any Coaſt almoſt, eſpecially on unknown Shores, there is no advancing in the Night-time. It is to this Day a Rule ever to lie-by in the Night-time upon an unknown Coaſt. Even upon our own, which we know ſo well, few will venture to ſail in the Night; and thoſe who have done it, have too often reap'd the Fruits of their Temerity: Among other Inſtances, we may remember, Sir *Cloudſly Shovel* and ſeveral of our Men of War were caſt away on our own Coaſt in the Night-time, when there was no Storm, only a moderate Gale of Wind: And we loſt great Part of another Fleet in the Mouth of the River *Canada*, tho' they were furniſh'd with Pilots (even in the Day-time) in foggy Weather; which I mention to ſhew the extreme Difficulty of a coaſting Voyage, tho' we know the Countries never ſo well. I take it for granted therefore, that theſe *Phenicians* never durſt or could ſail in the Night-time, or in foul and foggy Weather in the Day-time on that unknown Coaſt: And if this be admitted, the two Years in which they are ſuppoſed to make this Voyage muſt be reduc'd to one at leaſt, as they were oblig'd to lie-by, or remain at an Anchor

Anchor above half the two Years, for want of Light or bright Weather, how elſe ſhould they avoid the numerous Rocks and Sands that muſt be found upon the Coaſt, and particularly at the Mouths of Rivers, in a Voyage of that Extent.

But further, it is admitted in the Relation of this Voyage, that theſe Mariners went on Shore in ſome Part of *Africa*, and remain'd there at one time long enough to ſow and reap their Corn, which, if we ſuppoſe to be about ſix Months, this reduces the remaining Year to half a Year — It muſt be remember'd alſo, that upon all Coaſts between the Tropicks (within which the greateſt Part of this Voyage muſt be perform'd) they have annually a fair and a tempeſtuous Seaſon by turns, and that during the ſtormy Seaſon no Ship (even with all the Advantages we have at this Day of building Sails and Compaſs) can ſail, or even live upon the Coaſt; and there are four of theſe tempeſtuous Seaſons between the Tropicks within the Space of two Years, in which there is an abſolute Neceſſity of getting out to Sea at a Diſtance from the Coaſt, or putting into ſome very ſecure Harbour; and conſequently every coaſting Veſſel muſt remain in Harbour ſeveral Months every Year within the Tropicks, or infallibly be caſt away; whence it follows, that ſeveral Months more muſt be loſt within the Space of two Years.

Add

Add to this, that upon the Weſtern Coaſt of *Africa* a little to the Northward of the Equator, the Wind conſtantly ſits oppoſite to thoſe who ſail to the North-weſt for three thouſand Miles and upwards; which muſt be another very conſiderable Hindrance to a Veſſel coaſting it from the *Cape of Good Hope* to the *Streights*, if it did not render ſuch a Voyage abſolutely impracticable, till the Compaſs was found out; for then a Ship could not ſtand out to Sea and avoid thoſe Winds. Sure I am, that no Ships, of what Nation ſoever, at this Day pretend to coaſt it to the Northward in their Return from *Guinea*, but ſtand out to Sea and take a vaſt Compaſs to avoid thoſe Winds.

Let it be conſider'd further, that the coaſting along all the Bays, Creeks, and Mouths of Rivers muſt make the Paſſage three times as long as we make it now, who ſail moſt part of the Way at a Diſtance from the Shore in a direct Line, and are not oblig'd to follow all the Turnings and Windings of the Coaſt; and conſequently the *Phenicians* muſt be three times as long in performing this Voyage (if it was practicable at all) as we are now.

It is worth our Obſervation alſo, that the *Portugueſe* who firſt found the Way round *Africa* by the *Cape of Good Hope* (of the Moderns at leaſt) and actually coaſted it as the *Phenicians* are ſuppoſed to have done, were threeſcore Years (inſtead of three)

three) before they could double the Cape, tho' they had all the Advantages of Ships, Sails, Compaſs and Skill the Moderns are poſſeſs'd of, and could ſtand out to Sea when they met with croſs Winds, or a dangerous and uneven Coaſt; and ſail againſt or upon a Wind, as the Sailors term it, which the Ancients never pretended to, and if they had, could never have practiſed this Part of Navigation with Succeſs, ſince they were oblig'd to keep near the Coaſt, where a Ship wants Room to tack and turn about as ſhe may in the Ocean.

4. And with me it is a very great Objection to the *Phenician* Voyage, that it is pretended to be made *all at once, the whole Coaſt of* Africa *diſcover'd in one Voyage*, which cannot be ſaid of any Country of a fortieth Part of that Extent. The uſual and moſt rational way of making Diſcoveries is by ſlow Degrees. He muſt be a mad Man that would run precipitately over Rocks and Sands without ſounding as he went along, or taking any Precautions to ſecure himſelf from Shipwreck upon an unknown Coaſt. Theſe very *Phenicians*, when they ſent out Colonies in the *Mediterranean*, put into Harbour and fix'd themſelves in the firſt fruitful Country they came at on the *African* Shore (where *Carthage* afterwards was founded.) Here they remain'd a conſiderable time before they advanc'd further,

and

and it was many Years before they reach'd the Mouth of the *Streights*, and ſtill ſome Ages before they diſcover'd the Weſt Coaſt of *Africa* as far as *Cape Verde*, North Latitude 15.

But theſe Adventurers, in *Herodotus*, are ſaid to ſurround this Quarter of the World at once, without making one Settlement, or planting one Colony by the Way, or once returning to their Principals to give an Account of the Difficulties or Succeſs of the Voyage, or requiring further Supplies or Re-inforcements to enable them to purſue it.

It appears alſo very odd to me, that theſe People ſhould go on Shore in Autumn to ſow Grain; for the tempeſtuous or rainy Seaſon is their Spring between the Tropicks, and the Seaſon for ſowing; whereas in Autumn, all Corn and Fruits are ripe; in the fair or dry Seaſon is their Harveſt, and this alſo is their Seaſon for ſailing; and had they remain'd on Shore at this time, they had loſt the Opportunity of ſailing that Year, and inſtead of half a Year muſt have remain'd a whole Year on Shore; beſides, they would have been troubled to have made their Corn grow in the dry Seaſon.

5. It is another very conſiderable Objection to the Reality of this Voyage, that neither the *Egyptians*, *Greeks*, *Carthaginians*, or *Romans*, ever made a ſecond Attempt to diſcover the South of *Africa*,

if the Way had been thus happily trac'd out for them. As for the Story of the *Perſian* Nobleman ſent upon this Expedition, it has very much the Air of Fable. He muſt have been an egregious Fool to return to *Xerxes* again, who proſecuted him capitally, when he was got ſo far out of his Power, eſpecially when he had done nothing to merit his Favour; and it is obſervable alſo, that they make this *Perſian* to take the quite contrary Way in attempting this Voyage that the *Phenicians* are ſaid to have done, which cannot be preſumed, when the former had met with ſuch Succeſs the other Way: Beſides, the Srory of this Nobleman makes rather againſt the Feaſibleneſs of this Voyage than for it, inaſmuch as after he had attempted it, he declar'd the Voyage was impracticable. All that can be concluded from this Relation therefore is, that there was a Report or Conjecture about that time, that *Africa* was ſurrounded by the Sea on the South, which no body diſputes.

6. It is very ſtrange alſo (as has been hinted already) that theſe *Phenicians* ſhould not take notice that they had paſs'd under the Sun twice at leaſt in this Voyage: that they had loſt many of the Northern Stars, and diſcover'd a new Hemiſphere: that the Sun, between the Tropicks, always brought ſtormy Weather, and Deluges of Rain along with it when it was vertical: and that it was always fair Weather when the

the Sun was at the greateſt Diſtance from them, directly oppoſite to the Seaſons without the Tropicks, where the Approach of it uſually brings fair Weather, and the Abſence of the Sun is attended with Storms and foul Weather.

7. It is equally ſtrange, that they ſhould give no manner of Account of any one Nation or People they had ſeen; or of any one Plant or Animal upon all the Coaſt, when they are ſaid to have been half a Year on Shore at a time; and that they ſhould not mention thoſe mountainous Seas at the Cape, which no Man, in theſe latter Ages, ever paſs'd without Aſtoniſhment.

8. I ſhould have expected alſo, that the Name of this great Commander, who piloted and conducted this happy Fleet round *Africa*, ſhould have been tranſmitted to us. The Name of *Columbus*, who found out *America*, is known to every Man almoſt; to many, more than the Name of the Prince that employ'd him: And how comes the Name of this *Phenician* Captain to be entirely loſt.

9. If it be neceſſary at this Day to proceed with Caution, and to advance ſlowly from one Point or Harbour to another, and obtain the Knowledge of the Coaſt by Degrees, how much more was this neceſſary than when they durſt not go far to Sea for want of a Compaſs, but muſt ſail cloſe to thoſe Rocks and Sands near the Shore, and might expect to be ſhipwreck'd by

every extraordinary Blaſt of Wind upon the Coaſt, or to have been driven out to Sea beyond a Poſſibility of recovering the Coaſt again, particularly when they came near the *Cape of Good Hope*, call'd by the *Portugueſe* at firſt *Cabo Tormentoſo*, or *The tempeſtuous Cape*, from the frequent and unparallel'd Storms they met with there; where the Waves run in a literal Senſe Mountain high; and the tall Ships we build at this Day have no way to ſave themſelves from periſhing, but to run before the Storm under a little piece of a Sail juſt enough to keep the Ship in a ſteady Courſe; for if they bring to, ſo that the Waves beat againſt the Side of the Ship, ſhe is filled with Water, or over-ſet; and if they have not Sea-room, but are upon a Lee-ſhore, they muſt inevitably periſh; for there is not a Port within 500 Miles of the Cape either Way where a Ship can ride ſecurely in theſe Storms: Nor is it poſſible to drop their Anchors in ſuch ſtormy Weather. Nay, if they were actually moor'd in Harbour, in ſome of thoſe Storms they muſt be driven from their Anchors and wreck'd on Shore in the Winter Seaſon; and thoſe Storms are very frequent even in the Summer. The Guard Ship, which belongs to the *Dutch* there, is forced to lie moor'd with vaſt Iron Chains. No Cables will hold her in theſe Storms. And if our preſent Shipping cannot live upon this Coaſt in ſtormy Weather, how

how ſhould the ſlight low-built Galleys of the Ancients live on that Coaſt where there are no Harbours for ſo many hundred Miles; eſpecially when they did not know the proper Seaſons for ſailing, and what Winds they ſhould meet with, as we do now in every Latitude? Our Ships that paſs the Cape in the Winter Seaſon at this Day never care to come within the Sight of it; for all their Security, in theſe Storms, is to get Sea-room, ſo as they may run before it. They ſeldom pretend to bear up againſt the Wind, as they do in other Seas. From whence I conclude, that leſs than a Miracle could not carry the ſlight low-built Galleys of the Ancients round the Cape. They durſt not run out to Sea if the Wind would permit them, for want of a Compaſs, and becauſe their Ships or Galleys were too low and open to live in thoſe Seas; and if the Wind ſat on Shore, it was impoſſible they ſhould eſcape being daſh'd to pieces.

10. Another Conſideration that occurs is the Difficulty of ſtowing or laying in Proviſions for ſuch a Voyage, or of getting them by the Way——That it was impoſſible they ſhould lay in for a fourth Part of ſuch a Voyage, Wood, Water, Fleſh, Corn, *&c.* is evident from the Make of ſuch ſhallow coaſting Veſſels, becauſe they had not deep Hulls or Holds, as our high-built Ships have; for if they had, they muſt, in many Places, have kept a great

Diſtance

Diſtance from the Coaſt on account of the Rocks and Sands that lie near the Surface of the Water, and run out ſeveral Leagues into the Sea, even out of ſight of Land at the Mouths of great Rivers, many of which were to be paſſed in this long Voyage: And how they ſhould paſs ſuch Shelves, tho' they did not draw much Water, is not eaſy to be conceived; for when we come upon a ſtrange Coaſt, in the ſmalleſt Ships, we are forced to heave the Lead and ſound the Depth of the Sea all the Way we go; and when we come to the Mouth of a River, with all theſe Precautions, the ſkilfuleſt Sailors do not care to enter it without the Aſſiſtance of a Pilot of the Place: Even the Mouth of the River *Thames*, which we know ſo well, is never enter'd by a Ship of any Burthen, by the Way of the *Downs*, without a Pilot. How impracticable then muſt it be to paſs or enter the Mouths of ſo many vaſt Rivers as occur in a Voyage round *Africa?* But to proceed.

11. The Difficulty of getting Proviſions by the way (if they were not laid in at firſt) upon many Coaſts, particularly on Part of the *Guinea* Coaſt, is another Objection not eaſily anſwer'd; for there runs a Surf or ſwelling Sea, which breaks upon the Shore with ſuch Impetuoſity, that no *European* Boat or Veſſel can go on Shore there. We are forced in the faireſt Seaſon to make uſe of the Country Canoes or Floats, which

which cannot ſink, to carry both Men and Goods on Shore, and theſe are often over-ſet. The *Phenicians* therefore could not go on Shore here in the faireſt Seaſon, and if they happen'd to be on this or any other ſuch Coaſt in the ſtormy Seaſon, they muſt inevitably periſh. Our Ships at this Day do not pretend to ride out thoſe conſtant Periodical Storms that ariſe between the Tropicks, but get out to Sea when they apprehend the Time approaches; and if they ſtay too long, are driven on Shore, as the *Phenicians* muſt infallibly have been.

12. And ſhould it be ſuppoſed, that neither the Surf of the Sea, or ſtormy Weather, could prevent theſe People going on Shore for Proviſions, yet in many Places this Coaſt is a dry barren Deſart for many hundred Miles, where neither Wood, freſh Water, Corn, Fleſh, Salt, or other Proviſions are to be had. Let it be conſider'd alſo, what Time muſt be ſpent almoſt every Week in going on Shore and getting Proviſions, and this will induce us to believe the Voyage between *Egypt* and *Hercules Pillars*, or the *Streights*, could never be performed by People that had no Compaſs, or any Knowledge of thoſe Coaſts, in two or three Years.

13. Let it be conſider'd further, that in Fogs and thick hazy Weather, between the Tropicks, and in the Winter-time and ſtormy Weather, without the Tropicks, they

they could neither have Sun or Stars to guide them: And if they ever loſt ſight of Land, and were ſo fortunate to fall in with it again, it was impoſſible to know which Way they were ſailing: The Land could be no Guide to them, becauſe this being the firſt Voyage, they are not ſuppoſed to know it; and they muſt either lie ſtill till they had better Weather and the Stars appear'd, or venture going back again, or at leaſt out of their Way: Beſides, on the other ſide of the Equator, they would have loſt ſight of many of the Stars they knew, and thoſe few they could ſee in our Hemiſphere muſt appear in ſuch a different Poſition from what they uſed to ſee them here, that theſe could be no Direction to them in their Voyage.

14. Theſe *Phenicians* alſo muſt have had good Fortune not to have periſh'd, or to have been very much diminiſh'd in their Numbers in ſo long a Voyage, ſince they muſt often have been oblig'd to go on Shore in unhealthful Places between the Tropicks, ſuch as the Coaſt of *Guinea* for Inſtance: And if they were only diminiſhed and ſickly, this muſt be a great Impediment to the proſecuting the Voyage, which depended as much upon the Strength of the Men at the Oar as on the Winds and Sails. We have had a late memorable Inſtance of the Unhealthfulneſs of ſome Coaſts between the Tropicks in Admiral *Hoſier*'s Misfortunes, who buried the Sailors

of

of his Fleet twice over while he lay upon the Coaſt of *Terra-Firma*, before *Porto Bello*, and loſt his own Life there; and the Ships were ſo eaten up with the Worms, that it was found neceſſary to re-build them: And in both theſe Particulars the Coaſt of *Guinea*, and ſome others in *Africa*, are equally fatal. The Iſland of *St. Thomas*, under the Equator and near the Coaſt of *Congo*, is ſo unhealthful, that the *Dutch*, having raviſh'd it from the *Portugueſe* by Force twice, loſt the Colonies they ſent thither, and were forced to quit that Iſland to the *Portugueſe* again, on account of the Unhealthfulneſs of the Country.

15. Another piece of good Fortune that muſt attend theſe *Phenicians* to enable them to perform this Voyage, muſt be a continual good Underſtanding with every Nation on this Continent, where they were forced to go on Shore for Proviſions; and yet ſcarce any People have been found more barbarous and unhoſpitable than thoſe of *Africa*; and if ever a Quarrel did happen between them and the *Phenicians*, in which the latter were defeated, this muſt have put a Period to the Voyage.

16. I have already mention'd the Ships of Admiral *Hoſier*'s Squadron being deſtroy'd by Worms, and as the *Phenicians* are ſuppoſed to coaſt it all the Way for above 90 Degrees backwards and forwards, and to remain a conſiderable Time on the

Shores to get Proviſions, their Veſſels would probably have been too much impair'd in the Voyage to have accompliſh'd it.

If it be objected that Ships which ſail round *Africa* at this Day are liable to this and ſuch other Misfortunes as have been mention'd, this is a Miſtake; for Ships do not often ſail all along the Coaſt at this Day, but far out at Sea, whereby they do not only avoid the contrary Winds, but alſo the Hazards of Rocks and Sands, and make the Way ſhorter by two Thirds than thoſe People could do, who were forced to creep along the Shore; to go into every Bay and Creek, and into all the Mouths of Rivers they muſt encounter in this extenſive Voyage.

I am very well ſatisfy'd, the moſt ſkilful Sailor in *Great-Britain*, who is beſt acquainted with the *African* Shores, would not undertake, for any Reward, to coaſt round *Afric* from *Egypt* to *Hercules Pillars*, or the *Streights*, within the Space of *ſeven* Years, *without a Compaſs*, tho' the *Phenicians* are ſaid to have done this in two or three at moſt, and at a Time when they were perfectly ignorant of the Coaſt, and of the Winds and Weather they ſhould meet with. And I am apt to think, that ſuch a Voyage, either with Ship or Galley, *with a Compaſs*, could not be performed in many Years *without ſtanding out to Sea*, and avoiding the never-variable contrary Winds, and thoſe periodical

Tempeſts

Tempeſts or Monſons, that never fail to viſit all the Coaſts that lie between the Tropicks once or twice a Year.

17. Thoſe that keep out at Sea have not only the Advantage of Sea-room to tack and turn which Way they pleaſe, but their Weather is much better than near the Shore; and if they have not a Wind to their Purpoſe they can run into the Way of one, which thoſe who were forced to keep cloſe to the Shore could not do.

18. The Ships we have now can lay in Proviſion enough for their Voyage in their ſpacious Holds, and by that Means are not oblig'd to go on Shore and hazard their being wreck'd on the Coaſts. They alſo avoid the Danger of Diſeaſes, and the Outrages of the barbarous Inhabitants, and the Deſtruction of their Veſſels by the Worms, all which Misfortunes the *Phenicians* muſt have been liable to; it being ſcarce poſſible they ſhould recover the ſight of Land again if they were driven a great Diſtance from it, and therefore they muſt of neceſſity have kept cloſe to this unknown Shore moſt of the Voyage.

19. And laſtly, In other coaſting Voyages in the *Red-Sea*, the *Mediterranean*, *&c.* they were acquainted with the Coaſt, and if they happen'd to be driven out to Sea, when they recover'd ſight of Land again they knew where they were; but here the Land could be no Direction to them, becauſe they never ſaw it before.

Beſides, it ſeems to have been a Rule with the Ancients, always to ſail in the fair Seaſon, and never, if they could avoid it, in the Winter, when tempeſtuous Weather was expected, even without the Tropicks. This is evident from the Account St. *Paul* gives us of his Voyage from *Paleſtine* to *Rome*. They propoſed, he ſays, to have ſtaid the whole Winter at ſome Port till the fair Seaſon return'd; and yet the *Romans* had as good Ships and as ſkilful Sailors in thoſe Days as any Nation.

In clear ſerene Weather, in Summer-time, they might venture out of ſight of Land now and then, becauſe they had the Sun and Stars to direct them, and Storms were leſs frequent then than in the Winter: But in this Voyage round *Africa*, in which they are ſuppoſed to be two Years at leaſt, they muſt have had two Winters or ſtormy Seaſons, if not more; for they muſt paſs the Tropicks four Times, at each of which they might meet with the Monſons, or annual Storms. And if they did not alſo meet with Storms without about the Cape, beyond the Tropick of Capricorn, and in the *Atlantick Ocean*, on this ſide the Tropick of Cancer, they muſt have been more favoured than ever any Ships were that have ſail'd round *Africa* of late Years.

The Objections againſt this Voyage ſum'd up.

The Sum of my Objections againſt this *Phenician* Voyage are; that this Tradition could not be credited by the *Greek* or *Roman* Hiſtorians, becauſe they unanimouſly

mouſly held, that the *Torrid Zone* (which muſt have paſs'd twice in ſuch a Voyage) was not habitable: that the Mariners would have taken ſome notice of the Southern Hemiſphere, and of the Countries they viſited South of the Equinoctial, if they had really made that Voyage.

That it was impoſſible to diſcover and navigate an unknown Coaſt of fifteen or twenty thouſand Miles Extent in the Space of two or three Years without a Compaſs, when the Mariners were neither acquainted with the Rocks and Sands upon that Coaſt, or with the Winds, Currents, or Seaſons they were to meet with in any Part of it, and wanted the Stars that uſed to guide them on this ſide of the Equator; that it is ſtrange no Nation ſhould make a ſecond Attempt, or ever ſettle one Colony in *Africa*, South of the Equator, or even near it, if the *Phenicians* made ſuch an expeditious and ſucceſsful Voyage round it, eſpecially ſince great part of *Africa* abounded in golden Sands, which muſt have been diſcover'd by them at the Mouths of thoſe Rivers they paſs'd. It is a further Objection to this Voyage, that the Ancients knew nothing of the annual periodical Winds or Storms between the Tropicks, and of their ſhifting regularly every half Year to the oppoſite Points: that the Winter or ſtormy Seaſon always advanc'd with the Sun, and they had the faireſt Weather when

when it was at the greateſt Diſtance from them, contrary to what happens in Countries without the Tropicks.

That the Galleys of the Ancients could never paſs the *Cape of Good Hope* without many miraculous Incidents, if the Winds and Seas there were what we find them at this Day.

That in ſuch Galleys they could neither lay in Proviſions ſufficient for the Voyage, nor could they ſtay to procure them by the Way, if it was perform'd within the Space of two or three Years: And if they would have gone on Shore from time to time for them, it would have been impracticable on many Parts of the Coaſt of *Africa*, becauſe of the Surf, or ſwelling of the Sea in ſome Places; and in others, there are neither Wood, Water, or Proviſions of any kind to be met wth for ſome hundreds of Miles.

That they muſt have had extreme good Fortune not to have been deſtroy'd by Diſeaſes, Enemies, or other Accidents on Shore, if they had eſcap'd the Dangers of the Sea.

They muſt have remain'd in Harbour near one Half the Time, on account of the never-failing tempeſtuous Seaſons and contrary Winds, and muſt have lain by ſtill longer on account of dark Nights and foggy Weather, which reduces the Time of their ſailing to a very few Months, much

much too ſmall a Space of Time to encompaſs *Africa*, even with all the Advantages we are Maſters of; which Conſideration alone is ſufficient to overthrow the Credit of this Voyage.

But all theſe Objections, united and duly weigh'd, I perſuade myſelf amount to a Demonſtration, that this Voyage could never be perform'd by the Ancients within the Space of three Years at leaſt, in the Opinion of any Seaman, who is acquainted with the Coaſt of *Africa*, and the Winds and Seaſons upon that Coaſt, and ſenſible of the Hazard and Difficulty of ſailing upon an unknown Shore without a Compaſs; tho' ſpeculative Men, who are unacquainted with Maritime Affairs, may, poſſibly, be of another Opinion.

A Review and a Continuance of the whole Work to the preſent Time intended, in one Volume.

I ſhall conclude this Introduction with aſſuring the Gentlemen that have hitherto encouraged and ſupported this MODERN HISTORY, that, in purſuance of the kind Intimations they have frequently given me, I intend, as ſoon as *America* is finiſh'd, to take a Survey of the whole Work, in a ſeparate Volume, and bring down the Hiſtory of every Country to the Year 1737; and to add to it ſuch further Diſcoveries and Improvements as have been made by other Travellers ſince I enter'd on this Work, with proper Remarks

on

on the Credibility of them: And am extremely pleaſed to find that the Sentiments of my Friends agree ſo perfectly with mine, that a Supplement of this Nature will be neceſſary to render the Work complete.

THE

THE PRESENT STATE OF *CHILI.*

CHAP. I.

Of the Name, Situation and Extent of Chili, *and of the Face of the Country, their Mountains,* &c.

THIS Country was named *Chili* by the firſt *Spaniſh* Adventurers, from a famous River and Valley of that Name, where they obtain'd a ſignal Victory over the Natives: Whether the People had any common Name for the whole Country before the *Spaniſh* Conqueſt I very much queſtion, it not being united under one Soveraign, but divided into a great many little Clans or Tribes, commanded by their reſpective Chiefs, when the *Spaniards* arrived there; and every particular Nation

Chili. Name.

Chili. or Family had a distinct Name, which they receiv'd from or communicated to the several Countries they possess'd. *Chili*, in which I shall take the Liberty of comprehending *Patagonia*, the *Terra-Magellanica*, and *Terra del Fogo*, is bounded by *Peru* on the North, by *La Plata* and the *Atlantick* Ocean on the East, and by the great *South-Sea* on the South and West, extending in Length from North to South 27 Degrees, 30 Minutes; *viz.* from 25 to 57 Degrees, 30 Minutes, South Latitude: But the Breadth is very unequal, being about 400 Leagues broad in the North, and lessening gradually till it is not 100 broad in the South, and is consequently of a Pyramidical Form, the Northern Boundary being the Base, and Cape *Horn* the Summit of the Pyramid. The opposite Part of the Globe to this Country is the *East-Indies*.

Situation.

Face of the Country. The Face of this Country very much resembles that of *Peru*; for all our Sea-men agree, that the Coast of *Chili* is a high bold Shore, and that further within the Land there arise other Hills, which the *Spaniards* call *Sierra's*, and above them the *Andes*, the highest Mountains in the known World, which extend, as has been observ'd in the Description of *Peru*, from *Santa Martha* in *Terra-Firma*, to the Straights of *Magellan*, that is, from 10 Degrees North to 55 South Latitude, running 65 Degrees from North to South. To the Description I have given of these Hills in *Peru*, I shall here add *Ovalle*'s Account of them, and of the Face of this Country, which he had crossed often between *Chili* and *La Plata* (as he informs us.)

The *Andes* of *Chili*. These Mountains, says that Writer, are a Prodigy of Nature, and without Parallel in the

the World, being a high Chain of Hills 1500 Leagues in Length, and 40 Leagues broad, with many intermediate Valleys: The Aſcent is ſo prodigious that we employ three or four Days in arriving to the Top of them, and as many more in the Deſcent, that is, ſpeaking properly, and only of the Mountain; for otherwiſe it may be affirmed that one begins to mount even from the Sea-ſide, becauſe all the Way, which is about 40 Leagues, is nothing but an extended ſhelving Coaſt, for which Reaſon their Rivers run with ſuch Force, that their Streams are like Mill-ſtreams, eſpecially near their Sources. Chili

When we come to aſcend the higheſt Part of the Mountains, we feel an Air ſo piercing and ſubtil, that 'tis with much Difficulty we breathe, which obliges us to fetch our Breath quick and ſtrong, and to open our Mouths wider than ordinary, applying to them likewiſe our Handkerchiefs to condenſe our Breath, and break the extreme Coldneſs of the Air, and ſo make it more proportionable to the Temperament which the Heart requires. This I have experienced every time that I have paſſed thoſe mighty Mountains.

Don Antonio de Herrera, and other Writers obſerve, that thoſe who paſs the *Andes* in *Peru* ſuffer great Reachings and Vomitings; becauſe no one thing produces ſo great an Alteration at once as a ſudden Change of Air, and that of the Mountains being ſo unproportion'd to common Reſpiration, produces in thoſe who paſs over it thoſe ſurpriſing and painful Effects. 'Tis true, that in that Part of the *Cordillera* in *Peru* which they call *Pariacaca*, there may be a Concurrence of other Cauſes, and a particular Diſpoſition of the Climate, to which may

Chili. be attributed ſome of theſe Effects: For if they were to be attributed only to the Height of the Mountain, we that paſs it in *Chili* ought to find thoſe Inconveniences as much or more, becauſe the Mountain is higheſt without Compariſon here; and yet I never endured thoſe Reachings, or Vomitings, nor have ſeen any of thoſe Motions in others, but only the Difficulty of Breathing, which I have mention'd.

Others experience other Effects, which I have often heard them relate; but certain it is, we go through theſe Mountains, treading as it were upon Clouds; when we aſcend to the higheſt we can no longer ſee the Earth for the Clouds below, but the Heavens are clear, and the Sun ſhines out in its full Luſtre.

The *Iris*, or Rainbow, which in the Valleys we ſee croſſing the Heavens, we obſerve from this Height extended under our Feet; nor is it leſs admirable, that while we travel over theſe Hills, and ſee at a Diſtance Tempeſts and Storms falling into the Valleys beneath, the Serenity over our Heads exceeds that of the fineſt Summer's Evening.

Vulcano's in the *Andes*. There are, in this *Cordillera*, or Chain of Mountains, ſixteen Vulcano's, which at ſeveral times have broken out, and cauſed Effects very terrible and aſtoniſhing to all the Country. Amongſt the reſt, that which happened in the Year 1640 is worthy to be remember'd; it broke out in the Enemy's Country, in the Territory of Cacique *Aliante*, burning with ſo much Force, that the Mountain cleaving in two, caſt forth pieces of Rocks all on Fire, with ſo horrible a Noiſe, that it was heard many Leagues off juſt like the going off of Cannons.

The firſt of theſe Vulcano's is called the *Vulcano of Copiapo*, and is in about 26 Degrees

on

on the Confines of *Chili* and *Peru*; in 30 Degrees is that of *Coquimbo*; in 31 and a half that of *Liqua*; in 35 that of *Peteroa*; in 36 and a half that of *Chilau*; in 37 and a quarter that of *Antoco*; this is followed by that of *Notuco* in 38 and a half; that of *Villarica* is in 39; near this is another in 40 and a quarter, and in 41 is that of *Osorno*; and near that, in less than a quarter of a Degree, that of *Guanatruca*; and in a little more than 42 Degrees, that of *Quetrucabi*; and last of all are two more, one without a Name, in 44, and that of *St. Clement*, which is in 45 and a half. Chili.

Mines of the *Andes*.

These Mountains are supposed to be very rich in Mines, but there may be two Causes assign'd why their Riches do not manifest themselves more: The first is that general State Reason and inviolable Maxim among the *Indians* to conceal and not discover them to any other Nation. For if any one among them, either out of Interest, Negligence, or any other Motive of Conveniency, discovers any thing of this kind, his Death is infallible, and no Power on Earth can save him.

The other Reason to be assign'd for not seeking after these Mines is, the great Plenty of every thing necessary for Life; so that Hunger, which is the Prompter of covetous Desires, being wanting, there are few that care to run Hazards, and go through impracticable Desarts in search of hidden Treasure; especially finding already so much Gold in the Valleys and Rivers, that even the Mines in the *Low Countries* are not wrought.

Further Observations on the *Andes*.

The Difference which may be observ'd in passing the *Cordillera* between each side of the Mountain is so great that they seem two different Worlds (the East and West Parts.) One would

Chili. would think Heaven had placed these Mountains here to divide them as a Wall, and keep off from the West all the Storms and ill Weather of the East. Any one that travels to the Top of them may experience this clearly, for there he discovers both Horizons, and when he looks to the East, all is covered with gross Vapours, which seem to hinder the Light and shadow all the Country; and at the same time looking West, the Heavens are so bright that it causes Pleasure and Joy to look on them. The East side is full of a cloudy thick Air, which engenders Storms and Hail, with horrible Thunders and Lightnings: On the other side, in the West, there is not a Cloud to be seen, but all is clear and bright, as if in the Heavens themselves there were such a Partition as the *Cordillera* to divide the Climates; and upon Earth there is a Difference in the Trees, Plants, and Animals on each side.

A curious Observer contemplating once from this Height, this remarkable Difference, said, That Nature, in the Fabrick of this Part of the World, seem'd to have turn'd her Back upon the Eastern Provinces, and look'd with her Face only upon *Chili*, giving Blessings with both Hands to this last, and leaving the other as it were disinherited, and grieving at the Preeminency of its elder Brother. In going down to the Eastward also, there are fewer Fountains and Rivers, and those muddy, the Face of the Land melancholy, without so much as one green Tree to recreate the Sight, nor any pleasant Verdure; and when at last you meet with some, as in the Valley of *Uspallata*, the Heats begin to be intolerable, but when we go to the West 'tis quite otherwise; for as soon as we begin to descend, we meet with lovely

Springs,

Springs, the Trees are green, the Groves frequent and pleasant, and the little Valleys are like so many resting Places in that great Staircase; from the very Foot of the Mountains one feels the Mildness of the Sea Air, and one is charm'd with the Harmony of the Birds and other delightful Objects. Chili.

At the Foot of the Mountains, on the East side, on the contrary, the Land is barren and little cultivated, neither are their Flocks of any kind fed or bred; so that the Fields look like a barren Desart, but this may proceed possibly from the Thinness of the People, who have not try'd the Fertility of the Earth; for the Plains below these are extremely fertile where they are cultivated.

The Springs on the West side of the Mountains do so fertilize the Fields below, that they keep the Earth fresh and green all the Year: And there is such Variety of Trees, so admirably disposed, that one would think they were planted by the Hand of Man; many of these are loaded with Fruits of the Country, of which the *Indians* make excellent Liquors, and some of their Fruits are very good to eat. The Valleys also are full of odoriferous beautiful Flowers, produc'd by Nature without human Industry, and there are among them most extraordinary Physical Plants. The little Hills afford good Pasture, and in their Valleys, Olives, Almonds, and all sorts of Fruit-trees thrive extremely. In the Plains also are Vineyards, of which are made excellent Wines.

With the first Rains of the Winter, which are about the middle of *May*, the *Cordillera* begins to be cover'd with Snow, and to put on, as it were, a white Armour to hinder its being passed, not only by Men, but even by Animals Weather on the *Andes*.

Chili. Animals and Birds, which are so driven out of it by the Rigour of that Season, that there is not one remaining in it.

Even the *Silguerillo's* and *Sorsales* (Birds, which of their own Nature are so hot, that in the very Beginning of the Summer they take to the Mountains) as soon as they perceive that the Winter draws near, come in Flocks down to avoid its Rigour in the Mountains; and then the Ground being almost covered with them, it proves the Season of Pleasure, for the Youth of the Country take and carry Loads of them home, reserving some to put in Cages, their Notes being very sweet. The *Cordillera* is thus shut up five or six Months in the Year; so that till *October* or *November*, it cannot be passed without manifest Danger of one's Life, and in the midst of Winter not at all, because all the Paths and Ways are cover'd to the Heighth of many Yards; and if any one should be rash enough to attempt it, he would not be able to go forward or backward, as has happen'd to several who either upon some very pressing Concern and Interest, or flying from a Death which threaten'd them for their Crimes, have found it in these Deserts.

These are bury'd in the very Bosom of Frost and Snow, which preserves them without being embalm'd, and yet keeps them incorruptible and dry, for so they have been found after many Years; such is the Cold of those Mountains, that it dries up all the Moisture that can cause Corruption in dead Bodies, and so preserves them.

This Difficulty of passing the *Cordillera* is less at the Entrance than at the End of the Winter, because the Drifts of Snow are not then so violent as to shut up the Ways intirely.

In

In thoſe Seaſons, therefore, ſome do venture to paſs, tho' with great Danger, and ſometimes they are ſo lucky as to get off well, becauſe they meet with a clear Sky, yet at other times it coſts them dear, and always 'tis with infinite Labour that they get through. Chili.

In ſhort, every body has ſome Story to tell of the Mountain, and complain of it; for ſome loſe their Toes, others their Fingers, ſome their Sight, ſome are be-numb'd and lam'd, and ſo remain all their Lives with great Infirmities. And I do not wonder at all at this, becauſe tho' one ſhould paſs without a Storm, yet the Cold is ſo intenſe, that it cannot but injure Nature extremely in that Seaſon, ſince even in the midſt of Summer when we paſs this Mountain, and in the lower Part of it we ſwet with Heat, as ſoon as we come to paſs the Top we are forced to put on double Cloathing, and prepare the Stomach with good warm things to withſtand the Sharpneſs of the Cold, and the Subtleneſs of the Air, which penetrates the Body through and through if it be not well cover'd.

'Tis neceſſary to obſerve, that it is of this Cold of the Mountain that Authors ſpeak when they ſay, that the Cold of *Chili* is ſo ſevere, that the Rivers are frozen up, and Men frozen to death in the Fields: For this is true only of thoſe uninhabitable Mountains where I believe at that Seaſon the Rivers are frozen, and if any Springs do eſcape, they are very few, and that in the Valleys moſt ſecur'd and ſhelter'd.

And thus the Truth of what Hiſtorians relate may be reconcil'd; for they not knowing the Country, make no Diſtinction between the Mountains and the Plains, in which there never

Chili. was ſeen any ſuch Effect of Cold in any Part of them; for the Sea Air, which is thick and moiſt, tempers the Sharpneſs of the Blaſts from the *Cordillera*; and for this Reaſon it is, that the Colds of the *Pampas* of *Cuyo* and *Tucuman*, on the Eaſt Side of the *Andes*, are ſo inſupportable; which being at ſuch a Diſtance from both Seas, and not enjoying the Warmth of its Vapours, the Air in Summer is intolerably ſcorching, and in Winter ſo cold, and for want of Rain ſo dry, that 'tis common for Animals to be found dead in the Fields as well as Men.

CHAP.

CHAP. II.

Of the Springs, Lakes, Baths, Rivers, Ports, Seas, Winds, Tides, and Seasons of Chili.

Chili.

Springs and Rivers.

I Have already taken notice of the numerous Springs, Lakes and Rivers that are found on the Mountains of the *Andes* in *Peru*: There are as many on the Mountains of *Chili*; and 'tis obſerv'd, that Springs and Rivers abound much more in the low Lands of *Chili* than they do in *Peru*. The Rivers which run from the *Andes* Weſtward, and fall into the *South-Sea*, both in *Peru* and *Chili*, as has been obſerv'd, are rapid Torrents, generally occaſioned by the melting of the Snows on thoſe Mountains, and the Declivity of the Ground, and conſequently are ſcarce any of them navigable far from their Mouths; but near their Sources they run ſo violently, that there is no croſſing them at ſome Seaſons. There are Rivers alſo that precipitate themſelves from the Tops of thoſe high Mountains, forming the moſt beautiful natural Caſcades that ever the Eye beheld, while others tumble from ſo vaſt a Height that their Waters diſperſe and fall upon the Valleys beneath in Drops like Showers of Rain; and when the Sun ſhines upon them, afford a moſt agreeable Proſpect as they deſcend; of theſe,

Chili. the Water-works in the Palaces of *Italy* and *France* are but faint Reſemblances, and would be contemn'd by any one that had view'd thoſe ſplendid Effects of natural Cauſes.

Ovalle mentions ſeveral famous Fountains in the Mountains of the *Andes*, particularly thoſe call'd *Los Oyos de Aqua*, or *The Eyes of Water*, in a Valley of about a Mile diameter, adorned with Ever-greens and Flowers, which make it the very Picture of Paradiſe, he ſays. This Valley is ſurrounded with prodigious high Rocks, and in the middle of it theſe Fountains ſpring up, throwing themſelves with great Force into the Air, and falling down again form two large Streams, running in a winding ſerpentine Courſe through the Valley, ſometimes at a Diſtance, and then approaching nearer each other till they unite at length in one Channel and form a conſiderable River, the Water whereof is as clear as Chryſtal, and ſo extremely cold, that 'tis impoſſible to drink a Draught of it. He mentions alſo ſome Streams iſſuing from the *Andes*, that forcing themſelves through a Mountain have a natural Bridge over them, form'd of a Rock, the Vault whereof is adorned with Stones of various Colours, which hang like Icicles from the Top and Sides of it, under which run five different Rivers of hot Water that cure many Diſeaſes.

Baths. There are many ſalutary Fountains alſo in the Plains and Valleys of *Chili*, particularly one that riſes at the Foot of the Vulcano of *Villarica*, and runs into a neighbouring Lake. There are two more which riſe near each other and form the River *Chico*, one of them hot and the other cold. The Baths of *Rancagua*, near the Town of *St. Jago*, are celebrated alſo for

for the Cure of many Diſtempers; thoſe of *Mayten*, *Mapocho* and *Conctially*, have the like healing Virtues; but, my Author obſerves, thoſe Fountains are the beſt that are fartheſt from the *Andes*. Chili.

The moſt conſiderable freſh Water Lakes are thoſe of *Tagatagua*, near *St. Jago*, and that of *Puren*, in which the *Chileſians* had an impregnable Fortreſs, from whence the *Spaniards* could never drive them. They have alſo ſeveral ſalt Water Lakes, which have a Communication with the Sea, part of the Year. In ſtormy Weather the Sea forces a Way into them, and leaves them full of Fiſh; and when the Communication with the Sea ceaſes, as it does in *January*, and the hot Weather comes on, the Water congeals, and leaves a Cruſt of fine white Salt a Foot thick. Lakes.

I come now to ſpeak more particularly of the Rivers of *Chili*, of which there are fifty large ones riſing in the *Andes* and running Weſtward into the *South-Sea*, and theſe are join'd by many other leſſer Streams that fall into them in their Courſe, none of them running more than 30 or 40 Leagues before they reach the Sea, and that ſo precipitately from thoſe high Mountains, that they are not navigable (as has been hinted already) for a Veſſel of any Burthen much beyond their Mouths.

The chief of theſe Rivers are, 1. The River of *Salado*, a ſalt River on the South Confines of *Peru*, which falls into the *South-Sea* in 25 Degrees of South Latitude, the Waters whereof are ſo hot that they cannot be drank. But, I preſume, *Ovalle* talks merrily when he relates that a Horſe which drank plentifully of them was turned into Salt while he was drinking. Salt River.

2. The

Chili.

2. The River *Copiapo*, which diſcharges itſelf into the ſame Ocean in 26 Degrees South Latitude.

Copiapo River.

Guaſco. 3. The River *Guaſco*, which falls into the Sea in 28 Degrees: The laſt two forming good Bays at their Mouths for Shipping to ride in.

Coquimbo. 4. The River *Coquimbo*, which diſcharges itſelf into the *South-Sea* in 30 Degrees South Latitude.

Govanadore. 5. *Govanadore*, in 31 Degrees 20 Minutes South Latitude.

6. *Jongoy.*

7. *Lemari.*

8. *Chuapa.*

9. *Tongotoma.*

Valpariſo. 10. *Valpariſo*, and

Maypoco. 11. *Maypoco.* All which diſcharge themſelves into the *South-Sea* between 31 and 33 Degrees of South Latitude.

12. There are four or five ſmaller Rivers which fall into the Sea together, near *Valpariſo*, as *Funnel* relates; but ſays, he does not know another Inſtance of ſo many Rivers ſo near together on the whole Coaſt of *Chili.*

Maule. 13. The River *Maule*, one of the largeſt of their Rivers, the Mouth whereof is in 33 Degrees and an half.

Itata. 14. The great River *Itata*, in 34 Degrees.

Bobio. 15. The River *Bobio*, in 37 Degrees, eſteemed the largeſt River in *Chili.*

Imperial. 16. The River *Imperial*, which falls into the *South-Sea* in 38 Degrees 40 Minutes.

Baldivia. 17. The River of *Valdivia*, or *Baldivia*, which diſcharges itſelf into that Ocean in 40 Degrees South Latitude.

Chico. *Coronado.* 18. The Rivers *Chico*, *Balena*, and *Coronado*, which fall into a great Bay, form'd by the Iſland of *Chiloe* and the *Main*, between 41 and

and 43 Degrees of South Latitude, to the Southward of which are the River of *Martyrs* and the River of the *Apoſtles*, which fall into the *South-Sea* between 45 and 48 Degrees of South Latitude. Chili.

The chief Ports of *Chili* upon the *South-Sea* are, the Port of *Copiapo*, in 26 Degrees South Latitude; of *Coquimbo*, in 30 Degrees; of *Govanadore*, 31 Degrees 20 Minutes; of *Valpariſo*, 32 Degrees 30 Minutes; of *Itata*, 34 Degrees 35 Minutes; of *Conception*, 37 Degrees; of *Santa Maria*, 37 Degrees 30 Minutes; of *La Moucha*, 38 Degrees 30 Minutes; of *Valvidia*, in 40 Degrees; of *Brewers-haven*, or *Carelmepo*, 41 Degrees 30 Minutes; of *Caſtro* in the Iſland of *Chilve*, 42 Degrees 30 Minutes. Ports.

The Seas that border upon *Chili*, if we include *Patagonia*, are the *Atlantick* on the Eaſt, and the *South-Sea*, or *Pacifick Ocean*, ſo nam'd from the fine ſerene Weather Sea-men meet with there, on the Weſt; but this *Pacifick* Name is only proper to that Part of the South Sea which lies within 30 or at moſt 35 Degrees of South Latitude, for all that lies South of 35 is as ſubject to Storms as any other Sea, and the Winds as variable as in other Places. But to the Northward of 35 or thereabouts, the Winds are always ſoutherly two or three Points upon the Shore, and theſe ſoutherly Winds continue to blow 140 or 150 Leagues to the Weſtward of the Shore before they alter; and at 200 Leagues to the Weſtward, the true Trade Wind ſets in at Eaſt South-eaſt till you have paſſed the *Pacifick Ocean* and arrive at the *Eaſt-Indies*. Seas and Winds.

The Tides on this Coaſt riſe but nine or ten Foot, it being an open bold Shore, with very few Bays or Harbours in it; and 'tis an Obſervation of *Dampier* and other Seamen, that the Tides.

Chili. the Tide never rises so high on such a Shore as it does where there are Bays, Gulphs and great Rivers that confine it.

Seasons. In speaking of the Seasons of *Chili* it is necessary to have regard to the three grand Divisions which are comprehended under that general Name; for these are as different from each other in many Respects as they are from any other Part of the World almost; only in this they all agree, that when it is Summer, in those Countries which lie to the Northward of the Tropick of Cancer, as *Europe*, *Asia*, and *North America* for the most part do, then it is Winter in *Chili* and all other Countries to the Southward of the Tropick of Capricorn.

The three grand Divisions or Provinces of *Chili*. The three grand Divisions of *Chili* are, 1. That of *Chili Proper*, which lies between 25 and 45 Degrees of South Latitude, and between the Mountains of *Andes* and the *South-Sea*. 2. The Province of *Cuyo*, or *Cuito*, which lies between the *Andes* on the West, and *La Plata* on the East; and 3. *Terra Magellanica*, comprehending *Patagoma* and *Terra del Fogo*, and extending from 45 Degrees of South Latitude to Cape *Horn*, in 57 Degrees 30 Minutes, bounded by the *Atlantick Ocean* on the East, and the *South-Sea* on the South and West.

In *Chili Proper*. 1. In *Chili Proper* the Spring begins in the middle of *August*, and lasts to the middle of *November*, when the Summer begins, and lasts till the middle of *February*; and then follows the Autumn, which lasts till the middle of *May*, when they enter upon their Winter. The Trees are all bare of Leaves, and white Frosts cover the Ground in a Morning, which are usually dissolv'd however within two Hours after

after Sun-rise, and 'tis very seldom that any Snow falls in the Valleys or low Grounds. Chili.

Neither the Heat or the Cold are so great here as in other Countries of the same Latitude, but that Part of the Country which lies next the Sea is warmer than that which is contiguous to the Mountains: Nor is there so much cloudy or rainy Weather here in Winter as in Countries that lie in the same Latitude either North or South. The North Wind, which brings wet Weather with it, seldom lasts more than two or three Days at a time, and then is succeeded by the South Wind, which is always attended with a bright clear Heaven, and brings Health and Pleasure with it. In Summer they have constant serene settled Weather without Rain; nor have they occasion for any, the Country is so well watered by the Rivers of melted Snow, which in the Beginning of the Summer descend from the Mountains of *Andes*. Weather in the low Lands.

2. In the Province of *Cuyo*, which lies East of the Mountains of *Andes*, extending from *La Plata* to 45 Degrees, on the contrary, the Winter is extreme cold, it freezes in the House, and their Cattle die if left abroad; and the Heats are equally intolerable in Summer: Thunder, Lightning, and Tempests, are frequent here also in the Summer, and such Deluges of Rain in the Spring, as over-flow the Country; all which, it is supposed, the Mountains of *Andes* skreen the Country of *Chili Proper* from: But then I find the Province of *Cuyo* has scarce any Rain in the Winter, only continued Frosts and bright settled Weather. In *Cuyo*.

3. As to that Part of the Country which is call'd *Terra Magellenica*, and *Patagonia*, which I have comprehended within the Bounds In *Terra Magellenica*.

Chili. of *Chili*, and lies between 45 and 57 Degrees 30 Minutes South Latitude.

This is a cold uncomfortable Country, and, according to our Seamen, who have ſurrounded it, the Cold is more intenſe here than in other Countries in the ſame Latitude in our Northern Hemiſphere. Certain it is, that none of our *European* Adventurers have been invited either by the Air or Soil to plant Colonies either on the Eaſt or Weſt Coaſt of *Patagonia*, or *Terra Magellenica*, hitherto, and the *Spaniards* that poſſeſs the reſt of *Chili*, contiguous to this Country, perfectly neglect it, and do not think it worth their while to penetrate further Southward than to the Latitude of 45 or thereabouts; tho' they claim the Property of the Land as far as the Promontory of Cape *Horn*, the fartheſt Boundary of *South-America*.

CHAP. III.

Of the Provinces and Subdiviſions of Chili, *and of their chief Towns, Buildings, and Fortreſſes.*

THE Provinces and Subdiviſions of this Country are the ſame I mention'd in treating of the Air and Seaſons, *viz.* 1. *Chili Proper.* 2. *Cuyo*, or *Cuito*; and 3. The Southern Diſtrict of *Terra Magellenica*, in which is included *Patagonia* and the *Terra del Fogo.* Chili. Provinces and chief Towns.

The Province of *Chili Proper* is bounded by *Peru* on the North; by the Province of *Cuyo*, or *Cuito*, on the Eaſt; by the *Terra Magellenica* on the South; and by the *Pacifick Ocean* on the Weſt, being about fourteen hundred Miles in Length from North to South, and ſcarce an hundred in Breadth from Eaſt to Weſt, being confin'd between the Mountains of *Andes* and the *South-Sea.* *Chili Proper.*

The chief Towns in *Chili Proper* are, 1. *St. Jago.* 2. *Conception.* 3. *Coquimbo*, or *La Serena.* 4. *Baldivia*, or *Valdivia.* 5. *Imperial.* 6. *Villa Rica.* 7. *Oſorno.* 8. *Caſtro.* 9. *Copiapo.* 10. *Guaſco.* 11. *Angol*, or *The City of the Confines*; and 12. *Arauco.*

1. The City of *St. Jago*, ſituated in 34 Degrees South Latitude, 77 Weſt of *London*, 2 Leagues Weſt of the Mountains of *Andes*, *St. Jago.*

Chili. and 18 East of the *Pacifick Ocean*, on a small River at the Foot of a Hill, in a pleasant and fruitful Valley, which is above 28 Leagues in Circumference, and watered by the great River *Maypo*, or *Maypocho*, on the Banks whereof the *Indian* Villages are very numerous. The *Spanish* Writers relate, that there were not less than fourscore thousand *Indians* inhabited this Valley when they first arrived there, which, from the great River that run through it, was call'd *The Valley of Maypocho.*

St. Jago being the Metropolis of *Chili*, before it was destroy'd by the Natives, was the largest and best built City in the Country, and, according to the usual *Spanish* Model, had a great Square in the middle of it, from whence the principal Streets ran in a direct Line, and were crossed by others at Right-Angles. On the North Side of the great Square stood the Town Hall, in which their Courts of Justice were held; and on the West the Cathedral and Bishop's Palace; and the other two Sides were adorned by Piazzas and Balconies over them. Besides the Cathedral, there were several Parish Churches, Monasteries, and Nunneries, built with white hewn Stone, and richly adorn'd; and into the principal Streets were brought Canals from the River, which lies on the North Side of the Town, and from thence their Gardens and the adjacent Fields were watered in the dry Season, the Town being plentifully supply'd with all manner of Corn and Fruits, both *European* and *Indian*, and with Flesh of all sorts from the numerous Flocks and Herds that are fed in the Valley that surrounds it. This was a Bishop's See, the Seat of the Governor of *Chili*, and the Courts of Justice here was a University, at least the Fathers had

School

Schools in their Monasteries, and a Power of conferring Degrees on such as had qualified themselves for them by their Studies. This City was founded by *Peter de Valdivia*, who conquered this Part of *Chili* in the Year 1541. *Valparizo* is the Port Town to it. Chili.

2. The City of *Conception*, situated on a fine Bay of the *South-Sea*, in form of a Crescent, in 37 Degrees South Latitude, the Island of *Santa Maria* lying before it, and forming a good Harbour. The Town to the Landward is encompass'd by Hills that rise gradually one above another, and are planted with Vines and Fruit Trees in a semi-circular Form, affording a most agreeable Prospect from the Sea. This Town also is a Bishop's See, and was founded by *Valdivia*, in the Year 1550. *Conception.*

3. *Coquimbo*, or *La Serena*, is situated in 30 Degrees South Latitude, on a small River in a fine Valley (from whence it takes the Name of *Coquimbo.*) It stands in full View of a Bay of the Sea, from which 'tis about two Miles distant, over-looking a fruitful Plain, which lies between the Town and the Sea. The Place is of a pretty large Extent, containing seven or eight Churches, and several Monasteries, but of no great Strength, as the Buccaneers relate, who took the Town and burnt it in the Year 1680, with an hundred Men only, tho' the *Spanish* Garrison consisted of treble their Number; but the People had carried off most of their Treasure and valuable Effects. This Town also was founded by *Valdivia*, in the Year 1544. *Coquimbo.*

4. The Town of *Baldivia*, or *Valdivia*, is in 40 Degrees South Latitude, situated on an Eminence at the Point of a Peninsula, form'd by *Baldivia.*

Chili. by two Rivers, which, with the Islands before it, make it the secureſt and moſt ſpacious Harbour on the Coaſt of *Chili*. It is defended alſo by ſeveral Forts on the ſaid Iſland and Peninſula; but, in the Opinion of Sir *John Narborough*, who viſited this Port by the Command of King *Charles* II. in the Year 1670, the Town might eaſily be taken.

The Paſſage up to the Town for great Ships is on the Eaſt Side, being about 6 Leagues, but it is not above 2 Leagues from the Sea by another Paſſage on the Weſt Side, by which the ſmaller Veſſels go up. This Commander obſerv'd there were three Rivers fell into the Harbour, but they were not navigable much beyond the Town: What this Place is moſt conſiderable for beſides the Harbour is, the rich Gold Mines in the Neighbourhood, in the working of which, *Peter Valdivia*, who founded it in the Year 1552, and gave his own Name to it, employ'd twenty thouſand *Indians*, who finding themſelves cruelly oppreſſed, by being forced to dig in the Mines and do other intolerable Drudgeries, roſe upon the *Spaniards*, re-took this and moſt of the Towns they had built, and making *Valdivia* Priſoner, 'tis ſaid, pour'd melted Gold down his Throat, reproaching him, that his Avarice was not to be ſatisfy'd otherwiſe. The War continued between the *Spaniards* and the *Chileſians* for an hundred Years, and is not entirely ended at this Day; tho' the *Spaniards* have re-poſſeſs'd themſelves of *Baldivia* and ſome other Places; but I ſhall enlarge upon theſe Articles when I come to treat of the Hiſtory of this Country.

Imperial. 5. The Town of *Imperial* is ſituated on an Eminence at the Confluence of two Rivers, in 39 Degrees South Latitude, about 24 Leagues

to

to the Northward of *Baldivia*, being about 3 Leagues distant from the Sea, but the Port is not deep enough for Vessels of any considerable Burthen. Chili.

6. The Town of *Villarica*, situated on a Lake near the Foot of the *Andes*, in 40 Degrees South Latitude, 20 Leagues East of *Baldivia*. This Place obtain'd its Name from the vast Quantities of Gold found in the adjacent Country. It was taken and destroy'd by the *Chilesians*, in the Year 1604, who put every Man they found in it to the Sword, not sparing the Priests or Monks, and carried the Women into Captivity, in Revenge for the numerous Cruelties exercised on them by the *Spaniards*: Nor can I learn that the *Spaniards* have ever re-built the Town since, or even re-possess'd themselves of this Part of the Country. *Villarica.*

7. *Osorno* is situated on a Bay of the Sea, in 41 Degrees South Latitude, about 20 Leagues South of *Baldivia*, and was built by *Hurtado de Mendoza*, who succeeded *Valdivia* in the Government of *Chili*. This Town was also destroy'd by the *Indians* in another Insurrection, but the *Spaniards* afterwards rebuilt it, and are possess'd of it at this Day. *Osorno.*

8. *Castro* is situated on the West Side of the Island of *Chiloe*, in 42 Degrees South Latitude. This Town was built by the *Spaniards*, about the Year 1600, when the *Chilesians* had in a manner driven them from the Continent, and forced them to fly for Refuge thither. This Island of *Chiloe*, according to Sir *John Narborough*, extends from 41—40 South Latitude to 43—30. It is a fruitful Island, and bears good Wheat; and both here and at *Osorno*, over-against it, there is great Plenty of Gold, which the *Spaniards* purchase of the Natives; but *Castro.* *Chiloe* Island.

Chili. but the *Chileſians* will not ſuffer the *Spaniards* to ſearch for Mines as formerly, keeping Poſſeſſion of all the inland Country, and maintaining their Liberties to this Day, which they recover'd with ſo much Bravery after the *Spaniards* had enſlaved them, and in Appearance eſtabliſh'd their Dominion.

Copiapo. 9. The Town of *Copiapo* is ſituated 26 Degrees North Latitude, at the Mouth of a River of the ſame Name, which, with an Iſland that lies before it, forms a tolerable Harbour in the *South-Sea*. The Valley of *Copiapo*, to which this Town communicates its Name, was the firſt the *Spaniards* poſſeſs'd themſelves of after their Conqueſt of *Peru*, being a fruitful and well-peopled Country.

Guaſco. 10. *Guaſco* is ſituated on a Bay of the ſame Sea, in 28 Degrees South Latitude, where Ships ride ſecure from the South and South-Weſt Winds, but is not a Place of any Conſequence.

Angol. 11. *Angol*, or *The City of the Confines*, is ſituated in 38 Degrees South Latitude, in a fine fruitful Plain 8 Leagues Weſt of the Mountains of *Andes*, being waſh'd by the great River *Biobio* on the South, and another River on the North, and is ſaid to be founded by *Valdivia*, ſoon after the Town of *Conception*, from which it is about 20 Leagues diſtant.

Arauco. 12. *Arauco* is ſituated about 5 Leagues North of *Angol*, and gives Name to a Valley inhabited by the braveſt People of *Chili*, who long defended their Country againſt the Invaſion of the *Spaniards*, and when they were ſubdu'd by the irreſiſtible Artillery, Fire-Arms, and Cavalry of the *Spaniards*, not being able to bear the Oppreſſion of their Conquerors long, had recourſe to Arms again, took the Towns

Towns and Fortreſſes that had been built to keep them in Subjection, and defeated and kill'd their General *Valdivia* in Battle, as will be more particularly related in the enſuing Hiſtory. Chili.

2*dly*, The Province of *Cuyo*, or *Cuito*, in which I comprehend the Deſarts of *Pampas*, is bounded by *La Plata* on the North; by the *Atlantick Ocean* on the Eaſt; by *Patagonia* on the South, and the Mountains of *Andes* on the Weſt; being about a thouſand Miles in Breadth generally from Eaſt to Weſt, and extending from the 35th to the 45th Degree of South Latitude; of which the *Spaniards* are Maſters only of a very ſmall Part between the *Andes* and *La Plata*; the reſt of the Country between the *Andes* and the *Atlantick* was never yet ſubdu'd. *Cuyo* Province.

I find but three *Spaniſh* Towns mention'd in the Province of *Cuyo*, *viz.* 1. *Mendoza*. 2. *St. John de Frontiera*; and 3. *Oromante*, or *St. Lewis of Loyala*, all of them upon the Northern Confines, the *Spaniards* poſſeſſing very little of this Country on the South and Eaſt. Chief Towns in *Cuyo*.

1. *Mendoza* is ſituated in 35 Degrees South Latitude, on a Paſs of the Mountains of *Andes*, between the Provinces of *Chili Proper* and that of *Cuyo*. *Mendoza*.

2. *St. John de Frontiera* is ſituated to the Northward of *Mendoza*, on the Confines of *La Plata*. *St. John de Frontiera*.

3. *Oromante*, or *St. Lewis*, is ſituated South-Eaſt of *Mendoza*, in 36 Degrees South Latitude, and 70 Degrees of Weſtern Longitude, which is all the Deſcription I can meet with of theſe three Towns. *Oromante*.

Chili. *Patagonia.* 3*dly*, The Province of *Patagonia*, or *Terra Magellenica*, in which I include the *Terra del Fogo*, is bounded by a Line drawn from the *Atlantick* to the *Pacifick Ocean*, in 45 Degrees of South Latitude, on the North; by the *Atlantick Ocean* on the East; and by the *South-Sea*, or *Pacifick Ocean*, on the South and West. The most Southern Promontory, call'd Cape *Horn*, lying in 57 Degrees 30 Minutes South Latitude.

In this Part of the World I meet with no Towns either of the Natives or *Europeans*, and therefore I proceed in the next place to describe the Houses of the *Chilesians*, and their Way of Life in these three *Chilesian* Provinces.

Buildings of the *Chilesians.* The *Chilesians* do not live in Towns, but every Tribe extends itself on the Bank of some River in the Valleys between the Mountains, their Houses standing regularly, and at a Distance from each other; neither do they remain long in one Place, but remove for the Conveniency of Pasture, and, as the Season of the Year requires, sometimes into the higher and sometimes into the lower Grounds, in which they do not find much Difficulty, for their Houses are all upon a Floor, slightly built of Wood, and consist of three or four Rooms only, which are so contriv'd that they can be taken asunder and remov'd one after another: Their Doors have neither Hinges, Locks, or Bolts, their Furniture being so mean, tho' they live in one of the richest Countries in the World, that they fear no Robberies: Their Beds are the Skins of Beasts laid upon the Floor, a Block or a Stone serves them for a Pillow, and they lay a Coverlet or two over them, made of the Wool of their Country Sheep. Their Dishes are of Wood, or made of some Calabash, or Goad,

Goad, which ſerve them alſo inſtead of Pails and Pitchers; earthen Pots they have to boil and ſtew their Meat in; a rough unhewn Block ſerves for a Seat, and another of the ſame kind for a Table; and their Lances, Swords, and other Arms are the principal Ornaments of their Houſes: This is to be underſtood of the *Indians* of the Province of *Chili Proper*; for thoſe who inhabit *Cuyo*, and the Plains on the Eaſt Side of the Mountains of *Andes*, are ſtill leſs poliſh'd. Some of them live in Caves, and others, after the *Arabian* Way, are ever roving from one part of the Country to another; and that they may do this with the greater Eaſe, they have no Houſes at all, only a ſlight Tent made of the Skins of Beaſts to ſhelter them againſt the Rain and Sun, and they have nothing to do but to take up their Tent-poles and Skins, whenever they are diſpoſed to march. Chili. Natives of *Cuyo* no fix'd Abode.

They look upon it as a ſort of Impriſonment to be confin'd to one Place, therefore have neither Houſes, Gardens, Plantations, or Furniture to clog or ſtop their Progreſs.

The Liberty of wandering whither they pleaſe is eſteem'd the greateſt of all earthly Bleſſings. Sometimes, ſay they, we are pleas'd with the Freſhneſs of a River Side, and weary of that, we reſort to the Woods and Shades, and then again we remove to the open and champain Country. All the Pleaſure of Life is in Variety. In one Seaſon we hunt, in another we are employ'd in fiſhing, and in another we enjoy the Fruits of the Earth, which are produc'd ſpontaneouſly; when theſe begin to fail us in one Country, we reſort to another. Wherever we happen to encamp, that is our Home. We have no more Fondneſs for one

Chili. Place than another. We go where we will, without leaving any thing behind us we much regret or desire, which uses to torment those who have fix'd Habitations when they are forced to part with them or from them: We fear no ill News, having nothing to lose. Our Wives and Children are our only Treasure, and while we have these we want nothing.

As to the Natives of *Patagonia*, or *Terra Magellenica*, I could never learn there was a single Town in the Country, and scarce any thing that looks like a House; nothing but poor Huts of a pyramidical Form, just to skreen the miserable Inhabitants from the Rigour of the Weather have ever been seen there, and very few of these; for this seems to be the most thinly inhabited of any Part of *South-America*.

Fortresses. As to the Fortresses, and strong Places of the *Chilesians*, according to the Account the *Spaniards* give us of them, they seem to resemble those of the ancient *Britons*. They were usually situated in Woods, surrounded by Lakes, or Morasses, and the Trees cut down and laid across serv'd them instead of Walls. Where they had no Water or Marshes to defend them, they made broad Ditches, and planted sharp Stakes at the Bottom of them. In some Places the Ditch was cover'd over with a slight Crust of Earth, so that the *Spanish* Horse fell in upon them when they least suspected it; and this seems to have been a common Stratagem all over *America* to dig Pits in the Roads and set Stakes in them whenever they expected to be attack'd by the *Spanish* Cavalry; but the *Spaniards* reveng'd themselves with great Severity on the Natives whenever they happen'd to lose either Men or Horses by this Stratagem.

CHAP.

CHAP. IV.

Of the Perſons and Habits of the Chileſians ; *their Genius, Temper, Arts, Manufactures, Food, Exerciſes, and Diverſions.*

THE *Chileſians*, according to Sir *John Narborough*, are of the middle Size, and ſtrong limb'd, of a tawny Complexion, and have long black Hair exceeding harſh ; their Features tolerably good, their Teeth white and ſound, active of Body, but of a dejected Countenance. They agree with the reſt of the *Americans* in pulling the Hair off their Chins and other parts of their Body, as ſoon as it appears, with Tweezers, or Nippers made of Shells. Their Women are moderately tall, ſlender, and well-ſhap'd : They braid and curl their Hair frequently, letting it grow to a very great Length. Chili. Perſons.

When *Ovalle*, and other *Spaniſh* Writers, tell us that the *Chileſians* are very fair, it muſt be underſtood in Compariſon of thoſe *Indians* that lie near the Equinoctial, and perhaps they may be fairer than ſome of the *Spaniards* and *Portugueſe* ; but Sir *John Narborough*, who was an *Engliſhman*, eſteem'd them very tawny compar'd with his Countrymen.

As to thoſe *Chileſians* who inhabit the Province of *Cuyo*, and the Plains of *Pampas*, between

Chili. between the Mountains of *Andes* and the *Atlantick Ocean*, theſe are People of a larger Stature than thoſe of *Chili Proper*, and of a darker Complexion, and the Women paint their Faces or ſome part of them Green.

The third Province of *Chili*, denominated *Patagonia*, and *Terra Magellenica*, is the Country which our firſt Diſcoverers peopled with Giants, Dwarfs and Monſters: But none that have viſited theſe Coaſts the laſt hundred Years having ſeen any thing of this kind, the moſt credulous ſeem now ready to give up thoſe Relations as fabulous, I ſhall ſay nothing more therefore of the People that inhabit this Tract of Land, but that the further we proceed to the Southward beyond the Equator, the more robuſt the People are, and the lighter the Colour of their Hair, as we find it in our Northern Hemiſphere, and as they have very little Communication with any Part of the World, they are eſteem'd as ſavage as any of the *Americans*.

The Men of *Chili Proper* wear a looſe Garment made of the Wool of their Country Sheep, pretty full, and reaching down to their Knees or lower, which is put on like a Surplice, not being open before, or on the Sides, and has not Sleeves. They have a kind of open Drawers and Doublets, but no Shirts, any more than Shoes and Stockings, but wear a kind of Buſkin, or Half-ſtocking, on their Legs; and on their Heads a ſtiff Hat or Cap, cock'd up before like a Dragoon's Cap, the Crown of which is ſometimes adorned with a beautiful Plume of Feathers, dy'd Wool, or a Noſegay of Flowers.

The Habits of the Women differ little from thoſe of the Men, only they have no Covering

on

on their Heads, but a kind of Coronet of Wool of several Colours binds their Temples. Their Hair is part of it curl'd and braided, and the rest flows down their Backs to a great Length. The Women have also a kind of Sash with which they bind or swathe their Bodies from the Middle upwards, and when they go abroad, throw a Cloak or a Mantle over all. Chili.

On Festivals their Cloaths are of the same Form, but finer, and of more beautiful Colours; and as they adorn their Heads with Feathers or Flowers, their Necks are cover'd with Chains of beautiful Shells, or precious Stones. Ornaments.

The *Indians* on the East Side of the *Andes*, in the Province of *Cuyo* and the Plains of *Pampas*, are not near so well cloathed as those on the West. They are contented with Leaves to hide their Nudities, and the Skins of Beasts serve them for Cloaks, or Mantles, which is all the Cloathing they wear as far as I can learn, and their Ornaments are some glittering Trifles which they hang upon their Lips, that are bor'd through for that Purpose, and rather disfigure than adorn their Faces, in the Opinion of Strangers.

As to the People of *Patagonia*, or *Terra Magellenica*, 'tis said, they go like the ancient *Britons*, perfectly naked, tho' they live in an exceeding cold Climate; so cold, that the *Spaniards* who were sent to build Forts and settle Colonies in the Streights of *Magellan*, all of them perish'd, and the whole Country is so disagreeable to *Spanish* Constitutions, that they have not one Colony in it, tho' they claim the Property of the whole as far as Cape *Horn*, the most Southern Promontory in *America*.

As

Chili.

Genius and Temper.

As to the Genius and Temper of the *Chileſians*, they are the braveſt People of the new World, and to this Day remain unconquer'd, for the moſt part. The *Peruvian* Emperors formerly made ſome Impreſſion on their Northern Frontiers, but were repuls'd when they came to the Valley of the *Araucans*, and could never penetrate further. The *Spaniards*, by the Advantage of their Artillery, Fire-Arms and Horſe, which theſe People had never ſeen before, alſo ſubdu'd ſeveral of their Provinces; but when the Terror of theſe were over, and the *Chileſians* had learned the Uſe of Fire-Arms, and to manage Horſes, they revolted and drove the *Spaniards* out of their Country, of which they at this Day retain but a very ſmall part near the Coaſt of the *South-Sea*, as will be obſerv'd in the enſuing Hiſtory.

Nor were theſe People leſs remarkable for their Wit than their Courage; they did not only learn the Art of War of the *Spaniards*, but excell'd them ſoon in warlike Stratagems, and their Generals became ſuperior to the *Spaniards:* What gave their Enemies a vaſt Advantage of them at firſt was, their being divided under ſo many petty Princes, the Heads of their Clans; but they no ſooner united under one Chief or General, than they became exceeding formidable.

The *Chileſians* are remarkable alſo for their Patience and Fortitude, being bred up to Hardſhips from their Infancy: They endured Fatigue, Heat, and Cold, to Admiration, inſomuch that they wanted ſcarce any Qualification that is requiſite to form good Soldiers; and where they apply themſelves to learn any other Art or Science, frequently excell their *Spaniſh* Maſters.

In

In Temperance only they are deficient. In eating, drinking, and venereal Encounters they know no Bounds; particularly at their Feſtivals and Entertainments, which laſt ſeveral Days, they eat and drink moſt immoderately, ſcarce ever parting ſober; and the Women, as well as Men, frequently drink to Exceſs, but then it is by themſelves, and at different times; for when their Huſbands carouſe, they make it their Buſineſs to attend and take care of them when they are diſorder'd, and prevent Quarrels, which frequently ariſe when they are elevated. Chili.

They eat very little Meat, except Veniſon, before the *Spaniards* arriv'd and ſtock'd their Country with Beef and Mutton, Hogs and Goats; for *America*; as has been obſerv'd, produced no ſuch Animals, and now they ſeldom eat Fleſh but at their Feſtivals: Their uſual Diet is Maiz, or *Indian* Corn, boil'd, parch'd, or ground, and made into Paſte, with Pulſe, Roots, Fruit and Herbs: Their Drink is either made of their *Indian* Corn dry'd and ſteep'd, or of their Fruits, and is very ſtrong and palatable; and in the Southern Provinces the *Spaniards* have introduc'd Grapes, and make good Wine, but the Northern Provinces are too cold for it. Their Food.

They dance, ſing, and play upon Inſtruments at their Feſtivals, tho' they make but dull Muſick with their wooden Drums and Flutes, as they are call'd; and if their Wind Inſtruments are made of the Bones of their Enemies, as ſome relate, it cannot be very harmonious. They dance round a kind of Maypole, as the common People ſometimes do here, but with this Improvement, that they lodge ſeveral Bottles of good ſtrong Liquor Their Diverſions

Chili. about the Pole, and drink round to one another in the Intervals of their Dances till they are exceeding merry, and ſometimes very drunk. And thus they frequently paſs away whole Nights as well as Days; and it is when the Men are thus heated with Liquor that they reſolve upon ſome Expedition againſt their Enemies, or on a Hunting-Match, in both which they will endure incredible Fatigues, tho' they live ſo luxuriouſly at other times: And indeed it is their laborious Exerciſe, and the Hardſhips they ſuſtain in the Field, that makes them excell all other *Indians* in military Exploits, and gives them ſuch robuſt Conſtitutions. Pain and Pleaſure they experience alternately, and the Labours of the Chaſe, or a ſevere Campaign, give a Reliſh to their ſofter Amuſements.

Exerciſes. Their Children are bred up from their Infancy to endure Hardſhips, to manly Sports and the Exerciſe of Arms; and even their Women are not exempted from them, but attend their Huſbands in the moſt hazardous Enterpriſes, in which they ſometimes bear a part. The whole Nation is ſo addicted to War, that it ſeems to be both their Buſineſs and their Pleaſure: Nor did they ever want an Exerciſe for their Courage during the Reigns of the *Peruvian* Emperors, who were perpetually invading and harraſing their Frontiers, tho' they could never make any great Impreſſion on them. Since the *Spaniards* arriv'd, they have been in a perpetual State of War with thoſe Invaders, and have learn'd of them to manage their Horſes ſo well, and to uſe the Fire-Arms they have taken from the *Spaniards*, that to this Day they maintain the inland Country againſt them, ſuffering the *Spaniards* to poſſeſs

poſſeſs only ſome few Towns upon the Coaſt. This Genius for War, poſſibly, may be one Reaſon they have made ſo little Improvement in other Arts and Sciences; for except thoſe who form their Arms, their Bows, Arrows, Lances and Darts, there are very few Artificers among them: And indeed they have very little Occaſion for Mechanicks, neither their Houſes or Furniture requiring many Materials, or much Skill to put them together; and their Cloathing is always the ſame, not ſhap'd to their Bodies, but looſe about them, and they never alter their Faſhions. However, it appears they underſtood Spinning, Weaving, and Dying pretty well, and could ſew or tack their Cloaths together before the *Spaniards* came amongſt them; and where they apply themſelves to learn any mechanick Art of the *Spaniards*, they make excellent Workmen.

Chili. Few Artificers.

They had no Books, Letters, or Writings among them any more than the reſt of the *Americans*, but aſſiſted their Memories by *Quippo's*, or Knots, as the *Peruvians* did, and would caſt up an Account by them with great Exactneſs: And many of them are now become the greateſt Proficients in the Liberal Arts who live under the *Spaniſh* Juriſdiction.

Learning.

The Skill the Natives of *Chili* had in Phyſick and Surgery was very mean; Bleeding, Purging, and Vomiting, and the Application of certain Herbs to their Wounds, was all they knew of this Science almoſt: And inſtead of a Lancet, they uſed a ſharp piece of Flint ſet in a ſmall Cane, not much unlike the Inſtrument we bleed Horſes with. But the Natives are ſaid to be of ſuch ſtrong, hale Conſtitutions, and uſe ſo much Exerciſe, that they have very little Occaſion for Phyſick, and live frequently

Phyſick.

Chili.

to an hundred Years of Age, their Memory seldom failing them to the last, any more than their Teeth or Eyes; but if they are remov'd into *Peru* or any hot Climate, they soon sicken and die, as we find by the *Chilesian* Prisoners the *Spaniards* take and send to their Colonies nearer the Equinoctial.

Their Aversion to Servitude.

So averse are they to Slavery, that there is no keeping them Prisoners long in their own Country: They will run any Hazard to make their Escape, and sometimes die by their own Hands, so much do they dread the Cruelty of the *Spaniards*, who send the captive *Chilesians* therefore to the most distant Countries. Several of them however have escap'd back to their own Country, even from *Lima*, which is 500 Leagues distant from it; tho' they are forced to creep along by the Sea-side, and traverse all the Turnings and Windings of the Shore, which makes the Way as far again; and in this extensive Journey they dare not enter any Town or inhabited Place for fear of being re-taken by the *Spaniards*, insomuch that they are forced to feed upon Cockles and other Shell-fish they find by the Sea-side. Nor are they less put to it for Water to drink in the *Peruvian* Deserts than they are for Food: And a further Inconvenience is, that they are forced to swim cross the Mouths of several rapid Rivers in their Passage; and yet do they frequently overcome all these Difficulties by Time and Patience, and arrive at their own Country.

Ovalle relates, that some of these *Chilesians* being taken captive and sent in Chains from *Baldivia* to *Peru* on Board a Ship, found Means to get off their Fetters, and jumping into the Sea, swam on Shore when the Ship was more

more than a Mile distant from it: and that one old Man, who was not so fortunate as to get away with the rest, when he found all his Companions gone the next Day fell upon the Master of the Ship, and having wounded him in several Places with a Knife, threw himself into the Sea, but was shot before he could reach the Shore; which Occurrence *Ovalle* produces as an Instance of the Bravery of the *Chilesians*, and the Aversion they have to the being carry'd out of their Country.

CHAP.

CHAP. V.

Of the Animals of Chili.

Chili.

Animals.

IN this Country we meet with the *Peruvian* Sheep and Goats, and ſuch other Quadrupedes as have been deſcrib'd in *Peru*, but they don't ſeem to have abounded in four-footed Animals in any part of *America*, or to have had that Variety of them as we have in this part of the World. The *Spaniards*, however, tranſported thither almoſt every Species about 200 Years ago, which being left to run wild in their Foreſts, are vaſtly multiply'd, inſomuch that 'tis ſaid, the *Chileſians* can now bring a Body of ten or twelve thouſand Horſe into the Field at a ſhort Warning; and they carry on a very great Trade with the Hides of their black Cattle as well as the Fleſh, which they dry and ſend to *Peru*, but are forced to burn or bury vaſt Quantities of Beef every Year, not having a ſufficient Demand for the Fleſh of thoſe numerous Droves they annually kill for their Skins.

Their Birds and Fowls alſo are much the ſame that are found in *Peru*; Eagles, Hawks, Parrots, and the Couder, a prodigious large and ravenous Bird of Prey, two or three of which will ſeize upon a young Calf or Heifer and devour them, and they are not afraid to attack Boys and Girls; but of theſe there are not many here, any more than in *Peru*.

The

The Parrots fly ſcreaming in ſuch numerous Flocks, that they obſcure the Sight of the Sun, and never fail to come down from the Mountains into the Valleys at the Seaſon of the Year when the Fruits are ripe, of which they deſtroy great Quantities.

At the time when they ſlaughter their Beef, there comes down another voracious Fowl, larger than a Duck, which gorges itſelf with the Carcaſes that are left in the Fields, ſo that it cannot fly till it has got rid of its Load; and they are hunted and knock'd on the Head by the Boys at this Seaſon.

The Oſtrich is another Bird the Natives hunt, and tho' he cannot fly, yet by the Help of his Wings he runs ſo ſwiftly that he frequently eſcapes from the fleeteſt Dogs and Horſes.

They have another long-leg'd Fowl, bigger than a Turkey, that wades through Ponds and Rivers, and lives upon Fiſh. Theſe the *Indians* hunt for their Feathers, which are red and white, and take many more Fowls on the ſame Account; for Plumes of beautiful Feathers are the principal Ornaments of their Heads. They abound alſo in Singing-Birds of various kinds, many of them unknown to this part of the World; and they have ſeveral the ſame as ours, ſuch as Linnets, Nightingales, Blackbirds, and Finches. Of tame Fowls they had but one Sort, between a Duck and a Hen, when the *Spaniards* arrived here, but now they have introduced all manner of *European* Poultry, which multiply exceedingly, and are much better Food here than in warmer Climates. Theſe only, of all the People of *America*, can ſay they are Gainers by being acquainted with the *Spaniards*; for they ſtill

retain

Chili. retain their Liberties (moſt of them) and have acquir'd the Poſſeſſion of *European* Cattle, Fowls, Grain and Fruits, which they wanted before. They have alſo learn'd ſeveral Arts and Sciences of the *Europeans*, and in many Inſtances excell their Maſters.

Fiſh. Their Lakes and Rivers abound in good Fiſh as well as their Seas. Whales and Grampus's are frequently found on the Coaſt of *Chili*, and there is plenty of Albecores, Bonetta's, Flat-fiſh, and Shell-fiſh.

CHAP.

CHAP. VI.

Of their Foreſt and Fruit-Trees, Grain, Plants, Herbs, Roots, Flowers and Minerals.

MONG the Foreſt Trees of this Country, the principal are the Cypreſs Tree, the Cedar, the Oak, the Pareguay, and the Cinamon Tree, ſo call'd, I preſume, from ſome Reſemblance it may have to the true Cinamon in its Colour; but the Bark has neither that fine Smell or Taſte as the true Cinamon has. This Timber is uſed chiefly in their Buildings, and they have alſo the Sandal, the Palm, the Pine Tree, and the Guayac, which is a Wood as hard and as heavy as Iron almoſt. There is another Tree call'd the Thorn-Buſh, that grows in Cluſters, or Groves, which is their ordinary Fewel near *St. Jago*: It has ſome Reſemblance of an Oak, but more durable, the Heart of it is red and ſcarce ever decays. They make Charcoal of this Wood for their Furnaces and Forges. Both this and the Oak loſe their Leaves in Winter, as well as their Fruit Trees, but there are ſome wild Trees that do not, tho' covered with Snow. The Muſtard Plant, *Ovalle* relates, grows vaſtly large here: He ſays, he has travell'd many Leagues through Groves of Muſtard, which were taller than

Chili. Foreſt Trees.

Chili. Man and Horſe, and the Birds, as 'tis ſaid in the Goſpel, build their Neſts in the Branches.

Flowers. As ſoon as the firſt Rains fall in the Spring, the Fields are cloathed with green, and within a Month there is good Graſs, with which Nature produces yellow Flowers in great abundance, and after theſe, a vaſt Variety of other Flowers, red, blue, green, yellow, *&c.* of which, *Ovalle* ſays, he numbered two and forty ſeveral Sorts at one Time: Nor did he reckon among theſe any of their Garden Flowers, or thoſe brought from *Europe*, ſuch as Carnations, Roſes, Gilliflowers, Lillies, *&c.* and thoſe wild Flowers ſmell extremely ſweet Morning and Evening, as do ſeveral of their green Herbs, from which they diſtill perfum'd Waters.

Medicinal Herbs. They have alſo Phyſical Herbs of great Virtue, and the *Spaniards* have diſcover'd many more, ſince their Arrival, than the Natives were acquainted with, ſome whereof will expell Poiſon.

Ovalle mentions a Plant call'd Quinchamali, which riſes about a Foot above the Ground, and ſpreading like a Noſegay ends in little Flowers that reſemble Saffron; this they take up and boil with the Roots, and the Liquor being drank hot diſſolves any coagulated Blood in the Body, occaſioned by Wounds or Bruiſes, preventing Impoſtumations.

Another of theſe healing Herbs is call'd Albaquilla, which grows on a Shrub almoſt as large as a Tree; the Leaves are fragrant and ſweet to the Taſte, the Juice whereof apply'd to green Wounds is a preſent Cure.

A third healing Herb grows like a Lock of fine Hair, and being boil'd in Water, and drank, cures Fevers and Pleuriſies. There

are

are Herbs that cure the Sciatica, others that dissolve the Stone in the Bladder, and, if we may credit *Ovalle*, here are Herbs that cure almost every Malady. Chili.

The Fruits peculiar to the Country mention'd by *Ovalle* are, the Pengu, a red Fruit of an oval Form, something bigger than a Filbert, which they boil and eat with their Meat. The Magne, whose Fruit is black, like a Mirtle Berry, and well tasted, but perfectly dyes the Mouth and Hands black. They have many other Fruits, of which they make good Liquor; but the most admired is the Murtilla, which grows in 37 Degrees beyond, and is the common Food of the Natives of that part of the Country. It is of a red Colour, and in Form like a small Grape with little Seeds in it, like those we find in Figs; this Fruit has a delicious Taste and Smell, and they make a Wine of it, which excells our *European* Wine, 'tis said, and all other Liquors, and is the more valuable because it grows in a part of the Country that is too cold for our Wine; and when it turns sour exceeds all other Vinegar in Flavour. Fruits.

They had also a Seed call'd Madi, which afforded very good Oil before the *Spaniards* introduc'd Olives.

As to their Fruits in general, the *Spanish* Writers observe, that they have scarce any of those that grow in the Countries between the Tropicks, and consequently those that are found in *Mexico* and *Peru* are not many of them to be met with here. But then they have this Advantage, that whatever Fruits are carried thither from *Europe* thrive prodigiously, particularly Vines, Figs, Olives, Apple-Trees, Pears, Apricots, Peaches, Quinces, Pomegranates, Cherries, Plumbs, Oranges, Lemons, *European* Fruits.

Chili. Citrons and Almonds. But the Fruit that thrives moſt is the Apple of every kind, of which they have prodigious Orchards, and they are forced to thin them when they are ſmall, or they break down the Trees before they are ripe.

Corn. Of Maiz, or *Indian* Corn, they had great plenty before the *Spaniards* arriv'd, but they had neither Wheat, Barley, Oats, Annis, Cummin, Coriander-ſeed, Linſeed, Flax, Hemp, Peas, Cabbage, Lettice, Raddiſhes, Cardoons, Chicory, Endive, Cucumbers, Purſly, Garlick, or Onions, all which they have now in abundance, and in greater Perfection than they are to be met with here; and their Roots, particularly Turnips, grow to a prodigious Size.

Ovalle obſerves, that tho' every part of *America* is oblig'd to the *Spaniards* for ſome of theſe *European* Seeds and Plants, yet they are all to be found only in *Chili*. In ſome Provinces, ſays he, they have *European* Grain, in others Oil, in others Fruit, but in *Chili* they have now all manner of Trees, Plants, Seeds and Animals almoſt that are in *Europe*, and here they thrive and multiply to Admiration. He adds, that he has ſeen Apple Trees, Pears, Mulberry Trees, and Walnut Trees grow to the Size of Elms, Strawberries as big as Pears, and Quinces as big as a Man's Head: That Fruit is ſo plentiful that they enjoy it in a manner in common. No Man refuſes to let another go into his Garden and take what he pleaſes; and he has ſeen their beſt Fruits grow wild in the Fields for a Mile together.

Mines. There are Mines of Gold, Silver, Copper, Quickſilver and Lead in *Peru*, but the *Spaniards* ſeem to ſlight all of them but the Gold.

When

When *Valdivia* made a Conqueſt of part of this Country, 'tis ſaid, he employ'd no leſs than fifty thouſand *Indians* in working the Gold Mines; at which the Natives were ſo provok'd, that they made a general Revolt, defeated and kill'd *Valdivia*, and drove the *Spaniards* out of moſt of the Towns they had built. After which they made a Law, that it ſhould be capital to diſcover a Mine to the *Spaniards* or any other Foreigners. Nor will they ſuffer a Mine to be opened now; ſo that tho' the *Spaniards* have repoſſeſſed themſelves of ſome Towns upon the Coaſt, they meet with no other Gold at preſent than what they purchaſe of the *Chileſians*, who gather none but what they find in the Sands of their Rivers, or on the Surface of the Earth, tho' there are more Gold Mines here than in any part of the World. Both the *Engliſh* and *Dutch* have endeavour'd to cultivate an Underſtanding with the Natives of *Chili*, in order to traffick with them for their Gold, but could never ſucceed. They look upon all Strangers to have the like Paſſion for Gold as the *Spaniards* have, and imagine, if they ſhould ſuffer them to plant Colonies there, they would attempt to take their Country from them, as the *Spaniards* have done. And ſince I am now treating of the Produce of this Country, it may be proper to ſay ſomething of the foreign Trade of *Chili*, which conſiſts altogether in exporting that Produce to *Peru* and *Mexico*; namely, Gold, Copper, and other Metals, Hides, Tallow, dry'd Fleſh, Fiſh, Corn, Fruits, Wine, Oil, Salt, Hemp, Flax, Cordage, Leather, Timber for Shipping and other Uſes, Medicinal Herbs and Drugs: The chief Articles in theſe Exportations being Hides and Tallow. *Ovalle* relates, that

Chili.

Foreign Trade.

Chili. that he has known twenty thouſand Quintalls of Tallow exported in one Year from *Chili* to *Lima* only, and Hides and Leather in proportion. Their naval Stores are another great Article, which the *Peruvians* receive entirely from thence, as alſo the Copper, of which they make their great Guns and Bells: And the *Spaniards* of *Chili* take in return from *Mexico*, *Panama* and *Lima*, the Merchandiſe of *China*, *Eaſt-India* and *Europe*. At leaſt this was the Nature of their Traffick when the *Spaniards* were poſſeſs'd of this Country, but no doubt it muſt be decreaſed in proportion to what the Natives have recovered from them.

What has been ſaid hitherto upon this Head the Reader will obſerve relates to the Province of *Chili Proper*; as to that of *Cuyo*, which lies on the Eaſt of the Mountains of *Andes*, and between thoſe Mountains and the *Atlantick Ocean*, we have not ſo perfect an Account as could be wiſh'd, nor indeed of any of the Inland Provinces. The Reader muſt be content therefore with ſuch a one as I can collect from the Authors before me, among whom *Ovalle*, a Native of *Chili*, and who was Procurator for the Jeſuites of that Province at *Rome*, is the principal.

The Difference between *Cuyo* and *Chili Proper*.

He repeats, in the firſt place, ſome Obſervations he made upon another Occaſion, namely, that it is amazing to reflect when there are only the Mountains of *Andes* between the Provinces of *Cuyo* and *Chili Proper*, they ſhould be ſo different in their Qualities, and in every Reſpect almoſt diametrically oppoſite to each other, tho' the Latitude be the ſame.

In *Cuyo*, he ſays, the Heats are intolerable in Summer, while the Weather in *Chili* is very temperate. In *Cuyo* Thunder, Lightning, Rain,

Rain, and Tempeſts are frequent in Summer, while in *Chili* they have ſettled ſerene Weather, without Thunder, Lightning, or Rain. In Winter the Weather is variable in *Chili*, but never exceſſive cold to the weſtward of the Mountains, whereas in *Cuyo* they have conſtant ſerene Weather in the Winter, and exceſſive hard Froſts, inſomuch that the Cattle die in the Fields if they are not hous'd, and for five or ſix Months every Year the Paſſages of the Mountains are ſo lock'd up by the Snows that theſe two Provinces have no manner of Communication. Chili.

In *Chili* there are ſcarce any Snakes or poiſonous Inſects, but in *Cuyo* they abound, and they are tormented alſo with Buggs, Muſquito's and other Vermine, of which they have none, or very few, in *Chili*.

As for Cattle, the *Spaniards* have pretty well ſtock'd this Province with all manner of *European* Cattle as well as *Chili*, and they have great Numbers of *Peruvian* Sheep and Goats of their own. They abound alſo in Corn and Wine, and their Fruits are ſaid to have a better Flavour than thoſe of *Chili*, their Summers being hotter, and of this there is ſuch plenty that they ſupply the Province of *La Plata*, and even *Buenos Ayeres*, on the *Atlantick Ocean*, with dry'd Grapes, dry'd Peaches, Apples, Oil, and excellent Wine. But then this muſt be underſtood of that part of the Province that lies next the Mountains, for the Deſarts of *Pampas* extend ſix or ſeven hundred Miles further Eaſtward, over which they are forced to paſs in their Way to *Buenos Ayeres*. Theſe, ſays my Author, are vaſt Plains, which, like the Ocean, afford an unbounded Proſpect, but produce neither Trees The Deſarts of *Pampas*.

or

Chili. or Herbage; and then proceeds to relate the Manner of travelling over thoſe Deſarts, which gives us ſome further Light into the Nature of this Country.

They travel, he ſays, in covered Carts and Waggons, made as commodious almoſt as an Houſe, with Doors to ſhut, and Windows on each ſide to let in the Air; and they lay Beds, or Mattreſſes, on the Floor, on which they ſleep great part of the Journey. Theſe Waggons are drawn by Oxen, and they ſet out about two Hours before Sun-ſet, travelling all Night and till the Sun is an Hour high the next Morning, and then they bait (not at an Inn, for I can't learn there is a ſingle Houſe in the Country) but they reſt and eat that Proviſion they carry with them, or take to hunting by the Way; for thoſe that are diſpoſed for rural Sports have Horſes and Dogs with them, and take great Numbers of the Guanacoes and Vicunes, a kind of wild Sheep and Goats, Animals almoſt peculiar to *South-America*, which have been already deſcrib'd in treating of *Peru*. They take alſo a great many Patridges, Francolins, and other Game, from whence one would be inclin'd to think it muſt be a mighty pleaſant Journey from *Chili* to *Buenos Ayeres*; but Travellers inform us that they are ſubject to Inconveniences which very much abate the Pleaſure of it, particularly the exceſſive Heats which oblige them to lie ſtill all the middle of the Day, and then they have no other Defence from the Sun or Rain than what the Waggon affords at many Stages, tho' at ſome there happens to be ſmall Brooks and Willows growing by them that afford the Traveller a refreſhing Shade: But the greateſt Inconvenience is the Want of Water, which they

they do not meet with ſometimes for ſeveral Days Journey, and therefore are forced to carry Water both for themſelves and their Cattle; and ſometimes this is all ſpent, as my Author ſays it happen'd when he paſſed theſe Plains, and they muſt have periſh'd if they had not happily been reliev'd by a Shower of Rain. But all this might be remedied if the Country was inhabited; for they meet with Springs it ſeems in many Places within a few Yards of the Surface: And the Rains alone, which happen frequently in Summer, might be preſerved in Ciſterns and Reſervoirs, if there were any Towns or Villages in the Country; but at preſent, ſays my Author, theſe are the Difficulties we meet with in the Plains of *Cuyo*, *Tucuman*, and *Rio Plata*; adding, for many Leagues we do not ſee a Hill, a Tree, or a Stone, any more than Water, unleſs our Way lies near the Banks of the River *Plata*, or ſome other River.

CHAP. VII.

The Hiſtory of Chili, *containing the ancient and preſent State of that Country.*

Chili.

The Hiſtory of *Chili.*

THE firſt Account the *Spaniards* receiv'd of *Chili* was from the *Peruvians*, who ſubdu'd the Northern Part of that Province in the Reign of their tenth *Inca*, *Yupanqui*, but afterwards met with ſo powerful an Oppoſition from the confederated *Chileſians*, that the *Inca's* determin'd to make the River *Maulle* the utmoſt Bounds of their Empire, and accordingly fortified the Banks of it againſt the Invaſions of the *Barbarians*, as they call'd them; for all we can learn of the ancient *Chileſians* from the *Peruvians* is, that they worſhip'd a great many Creatures animate and inanimate as Gods, and were very unpoliſh'd and unciviliz'd; that they had no other Form of Government than the Patriarchal. Every Tribe or Family was governed by its reſpective Head, or Chief, who was ſucceeded by his eldeſt Son, or neareſt Relation, on his Deceaſe. And when they were invaded, or had Wars with their Neighbours, they made choice of the Man moſt famous for Courage and military Skill for their General. As to that Part of the Country that was conquer'd by the *Inca's*, the *Chileſians* were obliged to conform themſelves to the Religion and Manners

ners of the *Peruvians*, and their Emperors made no Difference between these and the rest of their Subjects. Chili.

Don Diego de Almagro was the first of the *Spanish* Generals who, after the Reduction of *Cusco*, the Capital of *Peru*, undertook an Expedition against *Chili*, in which he was introduced by the *Inca Paulla*, who put him in Possession of that Part of it which was under the Dominion of the *Peruvian* Emperors, about the Year 1535, as has been already related in the History of *Peru*: After which, *Almagro* subdu'd some of the more Southern Provinces of *Chili*, and probably would have extended his Conquests further, if he had not been oblig'd to return to *Peru* to make head against the *Pizarro's*, who had formed a Design to deprive him of his Share of that Province, and to have usurp'd the sole Dominion of all the Conquests the *Spaniards* had made to the Southward of the Equator. *Almagro's* Expedition to *Chili*.

Valdivia, or *Baldivia*, was the next *Spanish* Commander that attempted to extend their Conquests in *Chili*. He had served in the Wars of *Italy*, and was look'd upon as one of the best Officers that went over to *America*, for which Reason he was made choice of by the Marquis *Pizarro* to enlarge their Empire on that Side. *Valdivia* enter'd upon this Service in the Year 1540, and met with little Opposition from that Part of *Chili* which was Subject to the *Inca's*; but on his advancing further he was frequently encounter'd by the confederated Caciques. However, he penetrated as far as the Valley of *Mapocho*, which he found extremely fruitful and well peopled. In this Valley, being eighty Miles in Circumference, and situated 2 Leagues to the Westward *Valdivia's* Invasion of *Chili*.

Chili.

of the Mountains of *Andes*, he founded the City of *St. Jago*, in the Year 1541, in 34 Degrees South Latitude, and built a Caſtle for the Defence of it and of the Gold Mines in the Neighbourhood, which he compel'd the conquer'd *Indians* to work in: At which the *Chileſians* were ſo exaſperated, that they raiſed Forces and attack'd the Caſtle before it was well finiſh'd, and were very near carrying it; however, they were at length repuls'd, and *Valdivia* acquainting the Viceroy of *Peru* with the State of his Affairs, received a Re-inforcement of Troops from thence, under the Command of *John Baptiſta Paſtene*. But ſtill it appears he was not ſtrong enough to make any great Progreſs; and the *Indians* giving out that there were very rich Gold Mines in a certain Part of the Country not far from *St. Jago*, drew a Detachment of his Forces (who went in ſearch of them) into an Ambuſcade, and cut off every Man of them except their Commander and a *Negroe*, who eſcap'd to *St. Jago* by the Swiftneſs of their Horſes. Whereupon *Valdivia* ſent for another Re-inforcement of Troops to enable them to advance againſt the *Chileſians*; and built the Town and Caſtle of *Coquimbo*, or *Serena*, on a Bay of the Sea, in 30 Degrees South Latitude, to ſecure his Communication with *Peru*, and prevent the Supplies being cut off which he expected from thence.

In the mean time the Civil Wars breaking out in *Peru*, *Valdivia* was commanded thither with ſome of his Officers and Soldiers, and left his Conqueſts in *Chili* to the Care of his Lieutenant *Franciſco de Villagra*; but the Rebels being defeated in *Peru*, *Valdivia* returned again to *Chili* with a good Body of veteran

veteran Soldiers, who had ſerv'd in thoſe Wars. During the Abſence of *Valdivia*, there happen'd a Miſunderſtanding between his Lieutenant *Franciſco de Villagra* and *Pedro Sanchez de Hoz*, to whom the King of *Spain* had granted the Government of the further Part of *Peru* and *Chili*, and who with Reaſon therefore expected the Command of the Forces in *Chili* in the Abſence of *Valdivia*; and indeed he had a Right to that Command before *Valdivia* himſelf, as he received his Commiſſion only from the Marquis of *Pizarro*, who had no Authority in *Chili*; nor would *Don Sanchez* have ſubmitted to *Valdivia*'s taking upon him the Command of that Army, but upon Condition of his being put in Poſſeſſion of the richeſt Part of *Chili*.

This *Valdivia* had agreed to, but his Lieutenant *Villagra*, taking an Opportunity to quarrel with *Sanchez* in the Abſence of *Valdivia*, as has been intimated, made him Priſoner and cut off his Head, whether by the Order of *Valdivia* his Rival or not, is uncertain, but he appeared very well pleas'd with the Fact when it was done, having thus got rid of a Man that had ſo much Colour to claim the beſt Part of his Conqueſts, and look'd upon *Valdivia* himſelf as a Uſurper.

The Civil Wars of the *Spaniards* in *Peru* and *Chili*.

While the *Spaniards* were thus engaged in Civil Broils both in *Peru* and *Chili*, the *Chileſians* made their Advantage of them, ſurpris'd the *Spaniſh* Garriſons of *Copiapo* and *Coquimbo*, and putting them to the Sword, demoliſhed both thoſe Towns: And it was with Difficulty *Franciſco de Villagra* defended himſelf in *St. Jago* itſelf till the Return of *Valdivia*, who bringing a good Army with him, reſtor'd his Affairs, drove the *Chileſians* from the Valleys

Chili. Valleys of *Copiapo* and *Coquimbo* again, and rebuilt the Towns the *Indians* had deſtroy'd there; after which he marched further Southward, and having paſſed the River *Maypo*, ſubdu'd the *Promoca's*, a warlike Nation, who had defended their Frontiers not only againſt the *Peruvian* Emperors, but againſt the *Spaniards* commanded by *Almagro*. He afterwards tranſported his Troops over the great Rivers *Maulle* and *Itata*, and obſerving an advantageous Situation on a Bay of the *South-Sea*, in 37 Degrees South Latitude, he founded a City there in the Year 1550, giving it the Name of *Conception*. But the *Chileſians*, enraged to ſee themſelves thus bridled and reſtrain'd of their native Liberties by the Towns and Fortreſſes erected by the *Spaniards* in their Country, aſſembled in great Numbers, and harraſs'd the new City of *Conception* with repeated Attacks, killing a great many *Spaniards*, and endangering the Loſs of their whole Army. *Valdivia*, however, finiſh'd the Fortification of that Town the latter End of the Year 1550, and having ſent out a Party to diſcover the Country, advanc'd further Southward in the Beginning of the Year 1551, bending his March towards the Plains of *Angol*; and having croſs'd the great River *Biobio*, founded the City of *Imperial* on a Hill at the Confluence of two Rivers in 39 Degrees South Latitude, 4 Leagues Eaſt of the *Pacifick Ocean*, and 40 to the Southward of *Conception*.

This City ſtands in a fine fruitful Plain, inhabited, as the *Spaniards* relate, by four-ſcore thouſand *Indians* when they arrived there, a very peaceable Nation, that gave them no Diſturbance while they were building the City, and ſuffered *Valdivia* to parcel out both their

their Perſons and their Lands among his Followers without Oppoſition. Chili.

From hence he marched towards the Mountains of *Andes*, and 16 Leagues to the Eaſtward of *Imperial* laid the Foundation of a City, which he call'd *Villa Rica*, from the Richneſs of the Gold Mines he found there. And here the *Spaniſh* Hiſtorians take the Liberty of cenſuring the Conduct of their Hero *Baldivia*, in endeavouring to graſp more than he could poſſibly hold with the few *Spaniſh* Forces he commanded. That brave People, they obſerve, had never been vanquiſh'd by the *Spaniards* in ſo many Encounters, if they had not been terrify'd and aſtoniſh'd at the Firing their Artillery and ſmall Arms, which the *Indians*, at firſt, imagin'd to be real and not artificial Thunder and Lightning; and that thoſe who diſcharg'd them were rather Gods than Men: Their Horſes and the Men upon them, armed *Cap-a-pee*, ſeem'd alſo invulnerable, not being able to pierce their Armour with their Spears and Darts, which rendered the *Spaniards* ſtill more terrible. But the *Chileſians* being at length undeceived, and finding their Enemies to be but Men like themſelves, notwithſtanding the Diſadvantage they had in the Want of Horſes, Artillery, and Armour, reſolved to make another bold Puſh for the Recovery of their Liberties, being perſuaded they ſhould be able, by their Numbers and Courage, to expell theſe Strangers out of their Country, who had ſo unjuſtly enſlaved them; in which they were not entirely miſtaken, for the *Spaniards*, not conſidering that the Dread of their Arms and Horſes was now worn off, grew remiſs and negligent in their military Diſcipline, and attended more to the enriching themſelves than

The *Chileſians* revolt.

Chili.

than to the ſecuring their Conqueſts, which was attended with many ill Effects; for by compelling the *Indians* to dig in the Mines, they daily exaſperated them more and more. And by aſſembling ſo many of them together at the Mines, gave them an Opportunity of forming Schemes, and executing them too with better Succeſs than they could have done if they had remain'd diſperſed in their reſpective Villages.

The *Araucans*, the braveſt Nation of the *Chileſians*, had oppoſed the *Spaniards* with the greateſt Succeſs, but had been at laſt oblig'd to ſubmit; and this being one of the moſt deſirable Countries in *Chili*, *Baldivia*, in the Diſtribution of the Lands, had reſerv'd this Valley for himſelf; and being ſenſible that the Natives were not to be kept under unleſs by pure Force, he erected three Caſtles in this Valley, and left Garriſons in them while he marched further Southward, and built the Town of *Valdivia*, as has been related; where finding ſtill richer Mines, 'tis ſaid, he employ'd fifty thouſand *Indians* in the working of them, and ſpent ſo much time there in amaſſing Wealth, that the *Araucans*, taking Advantage of his Abſence, engaged the whole Country in a Conſpiracy againſt the *Spaniards*, and choſe the celebrated *Caupolican* for their General.

Caupolican General of the *Chileſe.*

Valdivia receiving Intelligence of the intended Inſurrection, return'd in ſome haſte to the Valley of *Arauca*, where he found thirteen or fourteen thouſand of the Natives aſſembled in Arms, whom he charged with his Horſe, and oblig'd them to retire into the Woods and Incloſures as often as they appear'd, but was not in a Condition to diſperſe them entirely; they

they frequently rallied and attack'd his Troops, and thus they continued to encounter him for ſeveral Days in a ſort of Running-fight.

His Conduct.

The *Chileſian* General obſerving that his engaging the *Spaniards* with ſuch Numbers only occaſion'd Confuſion among his People, thoſe in the Front frequently giving way to the *Spaniſh* Cavalry, and diſordering the reſt of his Forces before ever they were engag'd, divided his Army into Battalions of a thouſand each, ordering them to charge the Enemy by turns. He repreſented to them, that the *Spaniards* were but an hundred and fifty Horſe; and that a thouſand of his brave Countrymen might eaſily maintain their Ground for ſome time againſt ſo ſmall a Number, notwithſtanding the Advantage the Enemy had in their Arms and Horſes. However, he only deſir'd they would make their utmoſt Efforts. He had no Expectation that the firſt Battalion ſhould gain the Victory, but when they found themſelves oblig'd to retire, requir'd them to take care in their Retreat not to diſorder the other Bodies, but rally themſelves, and draw up in the Rear, that they might be ready for a ſecond Charge; and the ſame Commands he gave to the Officers of the other Battalions.

In purſuance of theſe Orders, the firſt Battalion engaged the *Spaniſh* Horſe with great Reſolution, and having held them in play ſome time, leiſurely retir'd, being ſucceeded by the ſecond and that by the third, and ſo on till the *Spaniards* had continued the Engagement for ſeven or eight Hours without Intermiſſion, and both Men and Horſes began to faint with the Labours of the Day, or for want of Refreſhment; which *Valdivia* too late obſerving, made a precipitate Retreat,

Chili. ordering his Troops to take poſſeſſion of a Paſs about a Mile from the Field of Battle, where he did not doubt he ſhould yet be able to defend himſelf againſt all the Power of the Enemy. But a *Chileſian*, who had been Page to *Valdivia*, and baptized by the Name of *Philip* (whoſe *Indian* Name was *Lautaro*) hearing his Maſter give Orders for their Retreat, deſerted at that Inſtant to his Countrymen, and directed them to take poſſeſſion of the Paſs before the *Spaniards* could arrive there. He bid them (ſays the royal Hiſtorian, *De la Vega*) *make uſe of the Advantage they had in their Hands, recover their Liberties, and reſcue their Country from Deſtruction, by cutting off thoſe Thieves and Uſurpers who had invaded it:* And taking up a Spear, charged his late Lord, *Valdivia*, at the Head of a Company of *Chileſians*, while another Detachment of the *Indians* ſecured the Paſs, as he directed them.

Lautaro deſerts to the *Chileſe*.

The *Spaniards* routed.

And now the *Chileſians* ſeeing the *Spaniards* unable longer to reſiſt their Attacks, preſſed them on every Side, without giving them a Moment's time to breathe, who finding Death inevitable, call'd upon JESUS CHRIST, but more upon the bleſſed Virgin and the reſt of the Saints, to ſave them; but were all cut in pieces on the ſpot, except the General *Valdivia* himſelf, who was taken Priſoner while he was making his Confeſſion to a miſerable Prieſt in the ſame Circumſtances, whom they kill'd immediately, but brought *Valdivia*, with his Hands bound behind him, before *Caupolican*, the *Chileſian* General, who ordering him to be ty'd to a Tree, that he might be executed with more Ceremony than thoſe that fell in the Battle, *Valdivia*, 'tis ſaid, meanly beg'd his Life of the Conquerors, addreſſing himſelf

Valdivia taken,

chiefly

chiefly to *Lautaro*, who was but a few Hours before his Slave. He promiſed, if they would ſpare him, to withdraw all the *Spaniſh* Forces out of *Chili*, and never more diſturb their Peace, ſwearing by all that was ſacred to perform his Promiſe; but the unrelenting Enemy was deaf to his Entreaties; even *Lautaro* obſerved, that it was Madneſs to truſt to the Promiſes of a Captive who would infallibly change his Note if he was ſet at Liberty. Whereupon the General pronounced his Doom, tho' Authors differ about the Manner of his Execution. Some affirm, they poured melted Gold down his Throat, bidding him ſatisfy himſelf with that Metal he ſo violently thirſted after. Others relate, that one of the *Indian* Caciques, not bearing to hear it debated whether the Deſtroyer of their Country ſhould live or die, beat out his Brains with a Club, without aſking the General's Leave; and all the *Spaniſh* Writers agree that they made Trumpets and Flutes of his Bones, and preſerved his Skull as a Memorial of that important Victory; which they celebrated by feaſting and dancing after their Country Manner, and inſtituted publick Sports and Exerciſes, ſuch as Running, Wreſtling, and Leaping, to be obſerved annually in memory of it; and expecting the *Spaniards* would give them another Viſit, they encamped in ſome of their moſt inacceſſible Woods and Mountains; and *Caupolican* conſtituted *Lautaro* his Lieutenant-General for the Services he had done in the late Battle, finding him every way qualified for that Poſt.

Chili.

and executed.

Lautaro Lieutenant General.

The News of *Valdivia*'s Misfortune arriving at the City of *Conception*, his Lieutenant *Franciſco de Villagra* aſſembled the *Spaniards* that

Chili. were dispersed in the several Provinces of *Chili*, and being joined with several thousand of his *Indian* Allies, marched to the Valley of *Arauca* to give Battle to *Caupolican*; but that General cunningly retir'd before him, till he found the *Spaniards* so far engaged in the Woods and Defiles that their Horse could be of little use to them: And then sending out Detachments to possess the Passes in their Rear, he boldly faced about and attack'd them in Front, ordering his Men not to stand to be shot at, but immediately advance and come to a close Engagement, mixing themselves with the Enemy, whereby they avoided the Mischief they used to receive from their Fire-Arms at a distance; and being much more numerous than the *Spaniards* and their Allies, by this Stratagem gained another memorable Victory, killing no less than two thousand five hundred *Spaniards* and *Indians* on the spot. After which, *Lautaro*, with a Part of the *Chilesian* Army, marched towards the City of *Conception*, and finding it abandon'd by the *Spaniards*, set fire to the Town and demolish'd it.

The *Chilesians* obtain a second Victory.

Conception abandon'd and burnt.

Lautaro afterwards laid Siege to the City of *Imperial*, but the Winter coming on was obliged to raise it, by the great Rains which fall at that Season; tho' the *Spaniards* ascribe their Deliverance to a Miracle, assuring us, that the Virgin *Mary* appeared visibly to the whole Army over the City *Imperial*, and defended it against these Barbarians.

Imperial besieg'd.

Conception rebuilt and destroy'd a second time.

The *Spaniards* afterwards rebuilt the City of *Conception*, but *Lautaro* drove them from thence a second time; and observing that the *Chilesian* Liberties would ever be precarious while the *Spaniards* had any Footing in their Country, he assembled a great Army and laid

laid Siege to the capital City of *St. Jago*, where being unfortunately kill'd with an Arrow, the Siege was raiſed. Chili. *Lautaro* kill'd before *St. Jago*.

However, the Governor of *Peru* apprehending all *Chili* would be loſt, ſent his Son *Don Garcia de Mendoza* with a powerful Re-inforcement of Troops to ſuppreſs the *Araucans*, who was ſo fortunate, after ſeveral Encounters with various Succeſs, to make their General *Caupolican* Priſoner, whom he put to death after he had perſuaded him to declare himſelf a Chriſtian. But this was far from putting an End to the War, the *Chileſians* were determined to periſh rather than become Slaves to the *Spaniards*, and raiſing freſh Forces attack'd all their Colonies at once, ſome of which were taken and retaken ſeveral times; and thus the War continued to be carried on with great Obſtinacy and Cruelty for upwards of fifty Years, when it appears, by the *Spaniards* own Relation, that they were driven with great Slaughter from moſt of their Settlements in that Country. *Caupolican* taken and put to death. The *Spaniards* driven out of all *Chili* almoſt.

The royal Hiſtorian, *Garciliaſſo de la Vega*, being then in *Spain*, informs us that he receiv'd the following Relation of the Miſeries of the *Spaniards* there from an intimate Acquaintance in two Letters, one of which was dated from *St. Jago* in *Chili*, in the Month of *March*, *Anno* 1600, in which the Writer acquainted him, That about Break of Day, on *Wedneſday* the 24th of *November*, 1599, five thouſand *Indians*, whereof three thouſand were Horſe and the reſt Foot, ſeventy of them carrying Fire-Arms, and two hundred of them in Armour (they had taken from the *Spaniards*) took the City *Imperial* by Surpriſe, being guided thither by a treacherous Spy, burnt and deſtroy'd *Imperial* taken by the *Chileſe*.

Chili. ſtroy'd the whole Town, killing and taking four hundred *Spaniards*, Men, Women and Children.

And in another Letter from *Chili*, in the Year 1604, the Writer tells us, That of the thirteen Cities which were eſtabliſhed in this Kingdom of *Chili*, the *Indians* had deſtroy'd ſix, namely, *Valdivia*, *Imperial*, *Angol*, *Santa Cruz*, *Caſtro* in *Chiloe*, and *Conception*. They overthrew their Houſes, diſhonour'd and prophan'd the Temples, obſcur'd the Brightneſs of that Faith and Devotion which ſhined in thoſe Parts, and what is worſe (ſays the Writer) this Succeſs hath encouraged and raiſed the Spirits of the *Indians* in that manner, that they are grown bold and confident, omitting no Opportunity or Advantage which may offer to rob or deſtroy our Cities and Monaſteries with Fire and Sword. They have learned alſo many Arts and Stratagems of War; for when they beſieged the City of *Oſorno*, and compelled the *Spaniards* to retire within their Works, they ſo ſtraiten'd them that they could receive no Suſtenance, unleſs it were ſome ſmall Quantities of the Seed of Herbs, and Leaves of Turnips, which too they were fain to fight for and gain with the Point of the Launce. In one of the Sieges of this City they broke the Images of Chriſt and our Lady, and other Saints to the great Diſhonour of God, which none but his infinite Mercy and Patience could have ſuffer'd. In the laſt Siege which the *Indians* laid to this Place they ſurpris'd the *Spaniards* and kill'd the Centinels, and without any Oppoſition entered and poſſeſſed themſelves of the Town, exerciſing ſuch Cruelty as was agreeable to the Barbarity of their Natures; for they butcher'd the Children, and

Six *Spaniſh* Towns taken by them.

Oſorno Siege.

Taken by Storm,

put

put the Women and Nuns in Chains, intending to carry them away into Slavery: But while they were thus busily employ'd in packing up and disposing their Booty, and plundering every-where without Order, the *Spaniards* took Courage, and with that Opportunity fell upon them, and God assisting their Endeavours, they rescued their Wives and Nuns from their violent Hands, and with the Loss of some few forced them to fly, and quit both their Prey and their City. The last Victory which the *Indians* obtained was when they took *Villarica* with great Effusion of *Spanish* Blood: They set fire to the four Quarters of the Town, and killed the Friars of *St. Dominick*, *St. Francis*, and the *Merceds*, with all the Clergy that were there, carrying the Women away Captives, many of which were Ladies of Quality and Condition. And this was the Fate of that City, which was once of Fame and great Renown, and illustrious among the neighbouring Cities of that new World. Thus far proceeds the Relation of *Chili* in the Year 1604.

Chili.

and recover'd again.

Villarica taken and destroy'd.

To which nothing can be said (says *De la Vega*) but that *these were Judgments which God in his secret Providence permits for the Chastisements of Mankind.* Not reflecting that these Calamities were no more than the *Spaniards* richly deserved, who had unjustly invaded this Country, and made Slaves of the Natives without any manner of Colour or Pretence.

Remarks on these Calamities

The *Chilesians* afterwards recovered several other Places from the *Spaniards*, and almost expel'd them their Country, of which the *Hollanders* receiving Intelligence, their *West-India* Company, in the Year 1642, fitted out a Squa-

The *Hollanders* attempt to settle Colonies in *Chili*.

Chili. a Squadron of Men of War under the Command of Captain *Brewer*, and having put some Land Forces on Board, order'd them to sail to the Coast of *Chili*, and settle Colonies there, not doubting to possess themselves of some of the Gold Mines of that Country; for they concluded, that every People which were Enemies to the *Spaniards* would be well received by the *Chilesians*.

The Account the *Dutch* were pleased to publish of this Expedition was of the following Tenour.

That *Brewer* and his Squadron set sail from the *Texel* on the 6th of *November* 1642, and arrived at *Fernambuco*, on the Coast of *Brazil*, in 9— Degrees of South Latitude, on the 22d of *December* following, where having consulted with Count *Maurice* of *Nassau*, General and Commander in chief for the *Dutch* in *Brazil*, he sailed from *Fernambuco* with five Ships well equip'd and provided with Necessaries, on the 15th of *January*, 1642-3, and on the 5th of *March* they came in Sight of the Streights of *La Maire*, as they are call'd, which is only a Passage between a small Island denominated *Slates Island*, and the most easterly Point of *Terra del Fogo*, in 54 Degrees odd Minutes South Latitude. They came to an Anchor in a Bay of *Slates Island*, to the Eastward of the Streights of *La Maire*, where having remain'd till the 25th of *March*, they sail'd round Cape *Horn*, suffering pretty much by stormy Weather, and losing the Company of one of their Ships call'd the *Orange Tree*, and arriv'd with the other four on the Coast of *Chili*, on the 30th of *April*, 1643; and on the 9th of *May* they came to an Anchor in a Bay of the *South-Sea*, in 41 Degrees 30 Minutes

Arrive on the Coast of *Chili*, *April*, 1643.

Minutes South Latitude, to which they gave the Name of *Brewer's-Haven*, being a little to the Southward of the *Spaniſh* Town of *Carelmappa*. Chili.

An Officer being ſent on Shore with a Company of Soldiers, they diſcover'd great Herds of Oxen, Sheep, and Horſes, and ſome Houſes, but the Inhabitants were fled; however, they ſuppoſed that Part of the Country to be in the poſſeſſion of the *Spaniards*, by the large wooden Croſſes they ſaw fix'd at the Entrance of the Houſes; and going on Shore the next Day, they diſcover'd a Party of *Spaniſh* Horſe, and ſome Cannon Shot were fired at their Boat.

A Company of fifty Soldiers being ſent on Shore again, the 20th of *May*, they diſcover'd the Town of *Carelmappa*, and had a ſmart Engagement with a *Spaniſh* Party, conſiſting of ninety Men Horſe and Foot, whom they defeated. Whereupon the *Spaniards* abandon'd the Town of *Carelmappa*, and the *Dutch* took Poſſeſſion of it, where they remain'd till the 25th, and then ſetting fire to the Town, and killing the Horſes they had taken in the Engagement, they retir'd to their Ships. Engage a *Spaniſh* Party.

They afterwards ſailed to the Town of *Caſtro*, on the Iſland of *Chiloè*, where they arrived on the 6th of *June*. There appeared a good Body of *Spaniſh* Horſe and Foot on the Shore, but the *Dutch* no ſooner landed ſome Soldiers than the Inhabitants ſet fire to the Town and abandon'd it, having before carried away every thing that was valuable. They land at *Caſtro*.

They relate that *Caſtro* was heretofore a fine *Spaniſh* Town, repleniſhed with magnificent Buildings, pleaſantly ſituated on a Hill, ſurrounded with fruitful Orchards and Gardens adorned with Fountains, and the Fields beyond well cultivated; and that at the time when

Chili.

the *Dutch* arriv'd there the Fruit then remain'd on many of the Trees, tho' it was in the Beginning of their Winter.

The *Dutch* having taken an hundred Sheep and some Hogs off the Island reimbark'd, and on the 17th of *June* returned to *Brewer's-Harbour*. From hence they proposed to sail to the River *Baldivia*, but the North Wind blowing hard in their teeth, they altered their minds and came before *Carelmappa* again, where landing a Company of Soldiers on the 16th of *July*, they took three *Spanish* Prisoners, who inform'd them, that the Winters on that Coast were usually tempestuous, but that the most stormy Month was past; that there were Gold Mines at *Osorno*, and more at *Baldivia*, but the Mines were not wrought of late; and that at *Castro* there were none to be seen, the *Indians* not having been compelled to work in the Mines since the general Revolt in 1559.

The Condition of the *Spaniards* before the *Indians* revolted.

They learned also from an old *Spanish* Woman they had taken, that before the said general Revolt, the *Spaniards* lived in great Splendour at *Osorno*; that the meanest of them had three hundred *Indian* Vassals at least, who were compel'd to pay their respective Lords a certain weekly Tribute in Gold, and were used so cruelly by the *Spaniards*, that the *Chilesians* rose as one Man, drove them from *Osorno* and other *Spanish* Towns, and they possessed little more in this part of *Chili* than *Carelmappa* and *St. Michael de Calimbuco*. Since which, however, the *Indians* of *Osorno*, *Baldivia*, *Villarica*, *Imperial*, *Tucapel*, *Aurauco* and *Puren*, had lived in a pretty good Intelligence with the *Spaniards* till very lately, when the *Indians* took up Arms again, and they were now actually in a State of War with the *Spaniards*; which was

was confirmed by six *Indian* Caciques, who came on Board the 20th of *July*, and assured the *Dutch* they were extremely rejoic'd that they were come to assist them against their ancient Enemies the *Spaniards*. The *Dutch* answered, they had brought good Store of Arms to exchange with their Countrymen of *Osorno*, *Baldivia*, and other Places, for such Merchandise as *Chili* afforded, that they might be enabled to carry on the War against the *Spaniards*, and were ready to assist them to the utmost of their Power. The *Chilesians* reply'd, they lived very uneasily under the *Spanish* Government of *Carelmappa*, and were contriving how to get to their Friends at *Osorno* and *Baldivia*; but the *Spaniards* had possess'd the Passes, and the Country was so over-flow'd by the Winter Rains, that they found it impracticable to go by Land at present, and therefore desir'd the *Dutch* would carry them to *Valdivia* in their Ships; which the General agreeing to, they returned on Shore to give their Friends an Account of it, and make Preparations for their Voyage. Chili.

The next Day more *Chilesians* went on Board, and one of them brought the Head of a *Spaniard* with them, whom he had kill'd, and declar'd they were determin'd to shake off the *Spanish* Yoke. Whereupon the General made a Present to them of some Spears and Swords, as also Muskets, with Powder and Ball: And the *Chilese* sent some black Cattle on Board in return; but on the 7th of *August* the *Dutch* General *Brewer* died, who had projected the Enterprize, and was best acquainted with the State of that Country, and in what manner the *Indians* were to be treated, whose Death was evidently the Reason the *Dutch* had no better General *Brewer* dies.

Chili. Succeſs in this Expedition. He had ſet his Heart upon this Undertaking, and had a Proſpect of bringing the whole Country of *Chili* under the Dominion of his Maſters the *Dutch*; and tho' Captain *Herckerman*, who ſucceeded him in the Command, might have no leſs Zeal to ſerve his Country, yet he certainly miſcarried for want of a proper Addreſs. He too ſoon diſcover'd to the Natives with what View the *Hollanders* viſited their Coaſt, and created Jealouſies in them which he found it impoſſible afterwards to remove, as will appear hereafter. The late General was ſo confident of the Succeſs of the Enterprize, that he directed his Countrymen to take his Corpſe with them and bury it at *Baldivia*, which he had determin'd to fortify, and appointed the *Chileſians* to rendezvous there and meet the Fleet; not doubting of a general Revolt in their Favour. His great Ambition was to have a Tomb erected in that Place, which might perpetuate the Memory of his being the Author of ſo great a Good to his Country.

But to proceed in the Relation. The *Dutch* having taken four hundred and ſeventy *Chileſe* on Board, who had furniſh'd themſelves with Corn, Cattle, and other Proviſions for the Voyage, ſet ſail for the River *Baldivia* on the 21ſt of *Auguſt*, where they arriv'd the 24th. The River is about a League over at the Mouth, and the *Dutch* having ſail'd half a League up it, they obſerv'd three Channels, of which taking the middlemoſt they run a-ground, and it was two or three Days before they could get all their Ships a-float again; ſo that it was the 28th before they arrived at the Town of *Baldivia*, where they only found the Ruins of the ancient Gates, which were very high and ſtrong-

Chili.

ſtrong-built, but the Place was now over-run with Buſhes and Weeds, and more like a Wilderneſs than a City. Here they found three or four hundred *Chileſians*, Horſe and Foot, armed with Spears eighteen Foot long; ſome of whom came on Board and welcomed them at their Arrival. The *Dutch* General harangu'd them by an Interpreter, and acquainted them, that the *Hollanders* were now in poſſeſſion of *Brazil* upon the ſame Continent, not above two Months ſail from them, and were in a Condition to ſupply them from time to time with Arms and Ammunition, and would aſſiſt them to drive their Enemies the *Spaniards* out of the Country, deſiring they would enter into a League offenſive and defenſive with them. He alſo preſented them with Letters from the Prince of *Orange* of the like Tenour, which were interpreted to the *Indians*. For we muſt remember here, that neither the People of the *Eaſt* or *Weſt-Indies* have any Notion of a Republican Form of Government; and therefore the *Hollanders*, in all their Negotiations with thoſe diſtant Nations, pretend to be authoriz'd to treat with them by the Prince of *Orange*, or ſome ſingle Perſon whom they inſinuate is their Monarch, or Soveraign of their Country.

The Caciques gave the General no other Anſwer to his Propoſitions at preſent, but that they would conſult their Brethren of *Oſorno* and *Coneo*, and then return to *Valdivia* again. Whereupon the *Dutch* proceeded to land their Soldiers on the 2d of *September*, and the General took a View of the Ground in order to erect a Fort.

The

Chili.

The ſame Evening arriv'd above a thouſand *Chileſians* from *Oſorno* and *Coneo* to treat with the *Hollanders*, and the next Day the General, by his Interpreter, made them another Speech, acquainting them, that the chief Motive of their Voyage was to aſſiſt the *Chileſians*, the Fame of whoſe great Actions had reached as far as *Holland*; that the *Dutch* had been at War with theſe ſame *Spaniards* for upwards of fourſcore Years as well as the *Chileſe*, for the Preſervation of their Liberties, and had met with the like Succeſs, extending their Conqueſts as far as *Brazil*: And if the *Chileſe* would now enter into a Confederacy with the *Hollanders*, they were ready to ſupply them with Cannon, Small-Arms, and Ammunition, which they would exchange for the Product of their Country, and the *Chileſians* would be enabled thereby not only to defend themſelves, but to expel the *Spaniards* from their Coaſts. After which, a Letter was deliver'd to every one of the Caciques, as ſent them from the Prince of *Orange*. To which the *Chileſians* anſwer'd, that they thought themſelves extremely fortunate to meet with a Supply of Arms from ſo diſtant a Country as *Holland*, at a Time when the War with the *Spaniards* was revived.

A Treaty between the *Dutch* and the *Chileſians*.

The *Dutch* thereupon enquir'd if the *Chileſe* could ſupply their Fleet with Fleſh and other Proviſions, if they continued on their Coaſt to protect them againſt the *Spaniards*? To which they unanimouſly anſwer'd, they would not fail to bring them all the Proviſions they wanted, for they had Plenty of Corn and Cattle, provided the Fleet did not ſtir from the Coaſt: And they readily entered into a parole Alliance offenſive and defenſive with the *Hollanders* againſt

againſt the *Spaniards*, but would not be perſuaded to ſign written Articles which were offered and interpreted to them, declaring that this was not cuſtomary amongſt them, Promiſes were ever look'd upon as ſacred and of equal Obligation with written Contracts. But I am apt to think they had an Apprehenſion that there was ſome Witchcraft or Charm in Writing, as ſeveral other *Americans* had when the *Europeans* came firſt amongſt them; or perhaps they were ſo politick as not to enter into a written Engagement, leaſt the Articles might fall into the Hands of the *Spaniards*, and be made a Pretence for oppreſſing and tyrannizing over ſuch of the *Indians* as lived under their Government, or were made Priſoners by them. Chili.

The *Dutch* erect a Fort, and diſcover their Thirſt of Gold; which ruins the Enterpriſe.

The *Hollanders* then proceeded to build a Fort at *Baldivia* for their Security, which the Natives did not ſeem to oppoſe; but when the *Dutch* propoſed the trafficking with the *Chileſe*, and exchanging Arms for their Gold, the Caciques immediately appeared jealous of their new Allies, and declar'd they had no Gold Mines, nor was there any ſuch thing as Gold in uſe amongſt them. They remember'd, indeed, that heretofore they had been forced to pay heavy Taxes to the *Spaniards* in Gold on Pain of loſing their Ears and Noſes, as many of them did who could not procure as much as was expected, and this had given them ſuch an Abhorrence of that Metal that they could not bear to hear it nam'd amongſt them. They were very far from valuing or coveting it, as they found all Strangers did.

The General finding the Natives were not ignorant of his Views, reply'd, they were not come to exact any thing of them, as the *Spaniards* had done, but were ready to pay them with

Chili.

with Arms, or whatever Merchandiſe they lik'd beſt, for their Gold. Every one was at liberty to exchange what he pleaſed.

Whereupon the Caciques ſtared at one another without returning one Word of Anſwer; and the *Dutch* relate, they did not think fit to urge them any further on that Head, leaſt they ſhould imagine they intended to ſerve them as the *Spaniards* had done; tho' they had certain Information there were very rich Mines in that Part of the Country.

The *Dutch* General therefore, ſenſible he was now to expect but little Aſſiſtance from the Natives, and that it would be impoſſible to maintain his Ground long againſt the *Spaniards*, and the reſt of the *Chileſians* in Alliance with them, diſpatch'd Captain *Criſpinſon* with two of his Ships to *Fernambuco* in *Brazil*, to give their Friends an Account of the State of their Affairs, and to deſire a further Re-inforcement, and in the mean time continued to fortify the Poſt he had taken at *Baldivia*, where he hoped to defend himſelf till thoſe Supplies arriv'd.

The Account the *Dutch* gave of the State of *Chili* at that time.

In the Letter the *Dutch* General ſent by Captain *Criſpinſon* to *Brazil*, he informs that Government, that the *Spaniards* had not more than fifteen hundred Soldiers, either on the Continent or Iſlands of *Chili*, *viz.* three hundred in *Valpariſo* and *St. Jago* (*This muſt be a little Port call'd* St. Jago *on the Coaſt, and not the capital City of* St. Jago, *that lay far within Land near the Foot of the Mountains of the* Andes, *for that was demoliſh'd by the* Indians, *and lay in Ruins at that time, as I apprehend*) three hundred in the City of *Conception* (at this time the Capital of the *Spaniſh* Settlements in *Chili*) one hundred in *Serena*, or *Coquimbo*, one hundred on the Banks of the River

River *Biobio*, eighty in *Tucupel*, five hundred in the Forts in the Valley of *Arauco*, one hundred and twenty in the Iſland of *Chiloe*, *Carelmappa* and *Calimbuco*. What the Number of the *Spaniſh* Inhabitants were he does not ſay, only that they were more numerous than the Garriſon Soldiers: And it is evident that many of the *Chileſe* profeſſed the Chriſtian Religion, and were intermarried with the *Spaniards* at this time, and therefore were in a manner one People with them; and that ſome Tribes or Clans that were not under the *Spaniſh* Government were in Alliance with them, tho' moſt of them were in a State of War with the *Spaniards*. Chili.

And in theſe Circumſtances the *Dutch* General informs the Government of *Brazil*, that in caſe ten Ships and three Yachts, with eight hundred Soldiers, Seamen, Cannon, and Ammunition in proportion, were ſent to his Aſſiſtance, he did not doubt making himſelf Maſter of all the *Spaniſh* Settlements abovemention'd, and ſhould have no Reaſon to be afraid of all the naval Force the *Spaniards* had, either in *Peru* or *Chili*: And if he could make himſelf Maſter of *Chili* by this Means, it might encourage the Natives of *Peru* to throw off the *Spaniſh* Yoke, thoſe *Indians* having entertain'd an inconceivable Averſion to the *Spaniards*. He informs his Employers alſo, that they had received Advice that the Natives of the neighbouring Province of *La Plata* had roſe upon the Jeſuites (the then Soveraigns, or Uſurpers of that Country) and had murdered many of thoſe Fathers; which was look'd upon as an Indication of a general Revolt againſt the *Spaniards*: And then repeating his Importunities for a ſpeedy and

Chili. effectual Supply, concludes, that it was not improbable, when the War ſhould be once kindled on that Side, it might ſpread over the whole *Spaniſh Weſt-Indies*; and the *Hollanders* might ſupplant them in the *Weſt*, as they had done the *Portugueſe* in the *Eaſt-Indies* and *Brazil*. Such was the Ambition of this *Dutch* Officer to make his Maſters Soveraigns of all *Spaniſh America*, as they actually were of the moſt deſirable and profitable Countries in the *Eaſt*, from whence a little before they expel'd the *Engliſh* as well as the *Portugueſe*.

This Expreſs had not been diſpatch'd a Week, before the *Dutch* General became ſenſible of his Miſtake; and that whatever Miſunderſtandings there might be between the *Chileſians* and the *Spaniards*, the Natives were now much more afraid of the *Hollanders* than of their ancient Enemies; and would probably join with the *Spaniards* to expell him their Country.

For in the next Conference he had with the Caciques, they gave him to underſtand that he muſt expect no Proviſions from them; and endeavour'd to terrify the *Dutch*, by reporting that the *Spaniards* were aſſembling their Forces by Sea and Land to drive them from *Valdivia*. And it is highly probable that the *Dutch* in this Caſe expected no Aſſiſtance from their new Allies, but were rather apprehenſive they would betray them to the *Spaniards*; for he ſoon after demoliſh'd his new-erected Fort, and having re-imbark'd his People, ſet ſail for *Brazil*, on the 28th of *October*, 1643; and having ſurrounded Cape *Horn*, repaſſed the Streights of *La Maire* on the 21ſt of *November*, and on the 28th of *December* arrived at *Fernambuco* in *Brazil*; ſo that they were but juſt two

The *Dutch* abandon *Chili*.

two Months in their Voyage from *Baldivia* to the Northern Part of *Brazil*. Chili.

I shall conclude this Expedition of the *Hollanders* to *Chili* with some Remarks they made on *Brewer's-Haven* and the Port of *Baldivia*, *viz.* That *Brewer's-Haven*, by some call'd the *English* Harbour, was a very convenient Harbour, there being good Anchorage, and an easy Passage into the open Sea; nor did there want Wood or fresh Water on the Land; and there was Plenty of Fish, both in the Harbour and in the Brooks on Shore: That the Country and the neighbouring Islands abounded in Horses, Sheep, Hogs, Goats, and Poultry: That the Soil was fruitful in Wheat, Peas, Beans, Turnips, Potatoes, Flax, and Fruit; but their Fruits were frequently spoil'd by stormy Weather before they were ripe. *Brewer's* Harbour.

That the Mouth of the River *Baldivia* formed a spacious Bay, at the Entrance whereof there was a small Island that would have commanded the Passage, if it had been fortified: That the Country thereabouts abounded in Horses, Oxen, Sheep, Hogs, Goats, and tame Fowl, producing great Quantities of Peas and Beans, and some Wheat, very good Apples, and other *European* Fruits: That the Weapons of the Natives were chiefly Pikes of fifteen Foot long, and they had some Fire-Arms and Armour they had taken from the *Spaniards*: That they were generally good Horsemen, and manag'd their Launces on Horseback with great Dexterity. *Baldivia* Harbour.

The next remarkable Voyage to *Chili* was made by Captain (afterwards Sir *John*) *Narborough*, by the Command of King *Charles* II. in the Year 1669, about thirty Years after the said Attempt of the *Hollanders*. It seems to *Narborough's* Voyage to *Chili*, *An.* 1669.

Chili. have been undertaken upon ſome Intelligence given to the Court of *England* by an old *Spaniard*, uſually call'd *Don Carlos*, who had formerly reſided in *South-America*, importing, That his Countrymen had in a manner abandon'd *Chili*, and that it would not be difficult for the *Engliſh* to cultivate a good Underſtanding with the Natives, and eſtabliſh a very advantageous Traffick there, the principal Returns whereof would be in Gold: And he pointed out *Valdivia*, as the Port where they were moſt likely to ſucceed, it not being imagin'd that the *Spaniards* had re-poſſeſs'd themſelves of that Place, having deſerted it for three or fourſcore Years: For Captain *Narborough* was expreſly commanded not to moleſt the *Spaniards* in any of their Settlements, or to commit any Acts of Hoſtility againſt *Spain*.

Captain *Narborough* having perform'd this Voyage, printed a Narrative of it, of the following Tenour, *viz.*

That having received a Commiſſion to command the Man of War call'd the *Sweep-ſtakes*, of 300 Tun and 36 Guns; man'd with fourſcore Men, and provided with fourteen Months Proviſion: And inſtead of Beer having four half Tuns of Brandy allow'd him, with Guns, Nets, and other Implements for Fiſhing and Fowling, he began this Voyage from *England* in Company with the *Batchelor Pink*, of 70 Tun, four Guns, and man'd with nineteen Men and a Boy, on the 26th of *September*, 1669, carrying with him, at his Majeſty's Coſt, the following Goods to exchange with the Natives, *viz.* Knives, Sciſſars, Looking-glaſſes, Beads, Hatchets, Hoes, Nails, Needles, Pins, Pipes, Bells, Linnen and Woollen

Sept. 26, 1669.

Cloths

Cloths and Stuffs, Tobacco, *&c.* That taking his Departure from the *Lizard* at Noon the ſame Day, he made the Iſland of *Madera* on the 17th of *October*, and on the 23d of the ſame Month he paſſed the Tropick of Cancer, and then thought it proper to have all his Men let Blood, having obſerv'd in former Voyages to *St. Helena* and the Coaſt of *Guinea*, that this tended to the Preſervation of his Men from Calentures, and other Diſtempers in thoſe hot Climates; for he never had one Day's Illneſs in thoſe or any other hot Voyages, which he imputed to his opening a Vein whenever he approach'd the Equinoctial: And the Writer of theſe Sheets well remembers, that Captain *Rains*, with whom he ſail'd to the *Eaſt-Indies*, obſerv'd the ſame Rule when he paſſed the Tropick of Cancer, and had ſcarce a Man ſick the whole Voyage, tho' he had a hundred and fifty Men on Board, and paſſed the Equator twice.

But to proceed. Captain *Narborough* relates, that he made the Cape *Verde* Iſlands (in 15 Degrees North Latitude) on the 28th of *October*, where having taken in Water, Cows, Hogs, and other freſh Proviſions, he ſailed on the 8th of *November* to the Southward, having firſt given Orders to the *Batchelor Pink*, if ſhe was ſeparated from him, to ſail to Port *Deſire* near Cape *Blanco*, on the Coaſt of *Patagonia*, in 47 Degrees odd Minutes South Latitude; and that after he had paſſed the Mouth of the River *Plata*, he ſhould keep along the *American* Coaſt till he made Cape *Blanco* aforeſaid, and look for him at Port *Deſire*; and if he (Captain *Narborough*) ſhould be there before him, he would leave an Inſcription engraven on a Board, and faſtened

Made Cape *Verde* Iſlands *October* 28

to

Chili. to a Tree or Poſt, mentioning the time of his Departure, and the Port he intended to make next; and that he would do the like at *St. Julian*, in 49 Degrees odd Minutes South Latitude, and order'd the *Pink* to do the ſame, and to ſtay two whole Months for the *Sweep-ſtakes*, as ſhe would for the *Pink*, if ſhe arrived firſt at thoſe Ports; and inform'd the *Pink*, that ſhe ſhould touch on the Coaſts of *South-America*, beyond the River *Plata*, to endeavour to eſtabliſh a Commerce with the Natives.

The *Sweep-ſtakes* and the *Pink* kept Company together till they came into *Soundings*, on the Coaſt of *Patagonia*, in 45 Degrees South Latitude; but here the *Sweep-ſtakes* loſt ſight of the *Pink* in foggy Weather, and on the 21ſt of *February* the Captain made Cape *Blanco*, in 47 Degrees odd Minutes South Latitude, having paſt Port *Deſire* in a Fog. Whereupon he ſtood to the Northward again, and came to an Anchor at Port *Deſire*, where he went on Shore and waited ſix Weeks for the *Pink*, but heard nothing of her afterwards.

Cape *Blanco* and Port *Deſire*, *Febru.* 21.

Some Deſcription of this Port of *Patagonia*.

While the *Sweep-ſtakes* remain'd in this Port, the Captain made ſeveral Journies into the Country, where he informs us he met with great Store of wild Peaſe with green Leaves and a blueiſh Bloſſom, ſome ſweet Herbs like Tares, with white and yellow Flowers, and another Herb like Sage, which made very good Sallads, and preſerved his Men from the Scurvy. On the Rocks they found abundance of Muſcles and Limpets, and on a neighbouring Iſland great Numbers of Seal and Water-Fowl, which were excellent Food, and his Ship's Crew lived on them and the Fiſh

Fiſh he caught there a conſiderable time; and here he found two tolerable Springs of freſh Water alſo, with which he repleniſh'd his Caſks. Chili.

That on *Friday*, the 14th of *March*, he went with his Boats and forty Men to an Iſland near Port *Deſire*, where they knock'd down four hundred Seals, and loaded their Boats with them, from whence he gave it the Name of *Seal Iſland*. He obſerv'd the full grown Male Seals were of the Size of a large Calf, or young Heifer, having ſhaggy Necks, Heads and Faces like Lions. The Females alſo reſembled Lioneſſes before, only their Hair was ſmooth like Horſes; whereas the Male was ſmooth only in his Hinder-parts. Both of them were very deformed, the Body growing tapering downwards till it came to a Point, where grew two Fins like Feet, and two Feet more grew out of its Breaſt, ſo that they could climb up the higheſt Rocks and Hills, tho' they delighted chiefly to ſleep near the Shore. The Length of this amphibious Animal was from eight to eighteen Feet, and they were generally as big about as a Barrel at the Shoulders. *Seal*, or *Penguin* Iſland. Seals deſcrib'd.

On *Saturday*, the 5th of *March*, he went eight or ten Miles up into the Country, and met with ſome Herds of *Guanuco's*, or Camel Sheep which are ſo common in *Peru*. He alſo ſaw ſeveral Oſtriches, a Fox and a wild Dog, and five or ſix Hares, of which he killed one with his Greyhound: It reſembled an *Engliſh* Hare, only was much larger, and had a Stump of an Inch long inſtead of a Tail; and he obſerv'd they lived under Ground like Rabbits. They ſaw no Wood, unleſs ſome Buſhes like white Thorn. The Land was a dry gravelly Other Animals. Soil.

Chili. gravelly Soil, moderately hilly, and produc'd Graſs in the Valleys, but ſcarce any thing elſe; no Fruits of any kind.

Finds an Inſcription left by *La Maire.* He found, in a ſmall Iſland near *Port Deſire*, an Inſcription upon a Poſt, ſignifying that *James la Maire* was at that Port in the Month of *January*, 1616 (being written in *Dutch*) and thereupon he call'd it *La Maire's Iſland.*

The Captain being about to depart from *Port Deſire*, formally took poſſeſſion of that Country for his *Britiſh* Majeſty, under an Apprehenſion that it might yield Gold as *Chili*, which lies on the oppoſite Shore, does; but tho' he order'd his People to ſearch diligently in the Brooks and Gullies for Gold Sand, and dug in ſeveral Places, he could diſcover nothing that look'd like a Mineral.

Finds the Longitude by an Eclipſe. On *March* the 26th, 1670, he obſerv'd an Eclipſe of the Moon, which ſhew'd there was four Hours forty Minutes Difference of Time between the Meridian of *London* and the Meridian of Cape *Blanco*, which lies in 47 Degrees 20 Minutes South Latitude, on the South-Eaſt Coaſt of *America*. From *Port Deſire* he ſail'd to Port *St. Julian*, in 49 Degrees 10 Minutes South Latitude, where not finding the *Pink* as he expected, his Men were much diſcouraged, conſidering, they could expect no Relief if they ſhould happen to run a-ground on that unknown Coaſt. But the Hopes he gave them of finding immenſe Riches in *Chili*, and ſetting before them the Example of Captain *Drake*, who ſail'd round the World in one Ship, when Navigation was not brought to ſo great Perfection, they recover'd their Courage. That on the 21ſt of *April*, he caught in this Port, with his Sein-Net, in the Space

Port *St. Julian.* He winters here.

of

of four Hours, five hundred Fiſhes of the Size and Form of Mullets, and ſome of them as big as a Man's Leg, which were a great Relief to his Ship's Company. And now the Winter came on apace; the Snows fell, the Waters froze, and the Wind blew very hard and cold from the South-Weſt; from whence he concluded he ſhould not be able to paſs the Streights of *Magellan* at this time of the Year, and therefore determin'd to winter thereabouts, ordering every one of his Men a Quart of Brandy a Week, and for Meat they had ſalted Seals and Penguins given them, which prov'd very good Food. Chili.

Going on Shore at Port *St. Julian*, on the 22d of *April*, he found a ſalt Pond, or Lake, two Miles in Length, cruſted over with good white Salt two Inches thick, of which he laid two Tuns in. A ſalt Lake.

Having remain'd here till the 6th of *June*, he went on Shore with ſixteen Men, and travelled ten Miles into the Country, but could go no further for the Mountains, which were cover'd with Snow. They yet ſaw no People, but diſcover'd there had been ſome in the Snow, and that they had made Fires, and eaten Guanacoes and Oſtriches by the Remains they found of their Feaſt.

That going on Shore again the 22d of *June*, he ſent Mr. *Wood*, his Lieutenant, to the Weſtward, with three armed Men, who ſaw ſeven *Indians* on a Hill, and three of them advanc'd towards him, with Bows and Arrows in their Hands, looſe Skins about their Shoulders, Furrs on their Heads, and Pieces of Skin wrap'd about their Feet, and all the reſt naked, only ſome Part of their Faces and Bodies were painted with red and white, their natural The Natives of *Patagonia*.

Chili. Colour being olive: They were of a middle Stature, not so tall as the Lieutenant, well limb'd, their Hair black (which they did not wear very long) and spoke in the Throat. They came pretty near, but would not suffer themselves to be touch'd. The Lieutenant threw them a Knife and some other Trifles, which they took up; but when he offered them a Bottle of Brandy they would not drink.

Their Stature, &c.

That some others of his Crew saw two more of the Natives behind a Bush, and would have approach'd them, but they run away, leaving a Bundle and two little Dogs coupled together, which were brought to the Captain; and he found in the Bundle several Bags made of Skins, with red and white Earth in them, used in painting their Bodies and Faces. There were also Flint-Stones, Arrow-heads, Bracelets of Shells, braided Thongs, Armadillo-Shells, and some other Trifles; that the Skins were Guanaco's and Seals, and sewed together with a green Gut in a slit Stick, and near the Bundle were found two Staves of tough Cane, in short Joints, about four Foot long. The Captain saw afterwards a Place where the Natives had made a Fire, and left the Bones of some Guanaco's and Ostriches scatter'd about. He also saw the Skulls of three Men without any Flesh upon them; from whence the Captain conjectures that the Natives were Man-Eaters; and such Evidence as this is frequently produced to prove the *Americans* to be Canibals. The Captain was fully convinc'd by ocular Demonstration that the *Patagonians* were not Giants, as the first Adventurers reported; but still he seems to be in doubt whether they were not Canibals, tho' the Evidence of both is the same; and the *Indians* might as well infer

The Proof of their being Canibals.

infer that the *Europeans* were Canibals, becauſe our Surgeons and Apothecaries have frequently Skulls, and ſometimes Skeletons in their Houſes. But our People, it ſeems, began to be aſham'd of the fabulous Relations of the *American* Giants and Monſters at that Time, tho' they were yet extremely prejudiced in Favour of Canibals; and tho' Captain *Narborough* is admitted to be a Gentleman of good Judgment, yet Allowances muſt be made for the Age and Country every Perſon lives in. At ſome Times, and at ſome particular Places, Magick, Witchcraft, and Apparitions are in great vogue, and not a Week paſſes but our Belief is requir'd to ſome notable Story of this kind, on Pain of being reputed Infidels: While in other Countries, and at other Times, People imagine they may be very good Chriſtians without ſwallowing every incredible Tale that weak or deſigning People have the Confidence to affirm the Truth of, eſpecially when they bring no better Proof of what they relate than the Captain produces to maintain that heavy Charge againſt this Nation of their being Canibals, namely, that three Skulls happen'd to be found in the poſſeſſion of ſome of the People of the Country. Chili.

But to proceed. The fartheſt Journey the Captain made into the Country while he lay at Port *St. Julian*, he ſays, was twenty-five Miles to the North-Weſt, in which he met with Teal and other Fowl, a kind of Herons all over red, great Numbers of Guanaco's and Oſtriches, Hares and Partridges bigger than ours, ſome Snipes and ſmall Birds, Penwrens, Kites, Hawks, Owls, Foxes, Wild-Dogs, Brant, Geeſe and Armadillo's, but no Snake or venemous Creature, or any wild Beaſts, and was of opinion that the Country was very proper Other Animals.

Chili. both for *European* Corn and Cattle, seeming to be a good fruitful Soil.

In the mean time the Captain relates, that twelve of his Men, who did not use much Exercise, fell ill of the Scurvy, and their Legs and Thighs turned perfectly black. Whereupon he thought proper to leave Port *St. Julian* and sail to Port *Desire*, where he took great Numbers of Seals and Penguins, which he distributed to the Sick, with such Sallads as this Part of the Country affords, and they all recover'd in a very short time.

Returns to *Port Desire.*

While the Captain lay on Shore at Port *Desire*, he says, the Natives came in the Night-time to the Place where his Men used to fill their fresh Water, and stole from thence an Iron Pot, and three Suits of Cloaths, with some Linnen; and he saw, in an adjacent Valley, a Model they had made of his Ship with Earth and Sticks, which he imagin'd they did in order to preserve the Memory of that floating Castle, having never seen one before, possibly, on that Coast.

Here the Captain takes an Opportunity to inform us, that the Isle of *Penguins*, which lies at the Entrance of Port *Desire*, affords such Numbers of Penguins and Seals, that at the time he was there, as many of them might have been taken as would have filled three hundred Tuns of Cask, when dress'd and salted, and that the Flesh might be kept sweet and good for four Months, if well cur'd.

Penguins describ'd.

The Penguin, he observes, is of the Bigness of a Brant Goose, weighing usually about eight Pound, and lives upon Fish. Instead of Wings it has flat Stumps, like Fins, and its Feathers are a kind of Down of a blackish Colour, only grey on the Head and white on the Neck and Belly.

Belly. The Legs are ſhort, like thoſe of a Gooſe; and the Bill hooked. They are driven in Flocks to the Boat-ſide, and knock'd on the Head by the Seamen; ſo that Shipping can never be in want of freſh Proviſions at this Port; and he was of opinion there might be found a ſufficient Quantity of Salt alſo here in the Summer to ſalt up their Seals and Penguins, but if not, they would never fail of finding Salt at Port *St. Julian*. Chili.

The Winter being now paſs'd, the Captain ſet ſail from Port *Deſire* on the 13th of *October* 1670, and on the 19th paſſed by the Cape called *Beachy-Head*, and the Hill of *St. Ives*, in 50 Degrees 10 Minutes South Latitude, where the Land forms a Bay, into which the River of *St. Cruce* diſcharges itſelf. And on the 22d of *October* they arriv'd at Cape *Virgin Mary*, at the North Entrance of the Streights of *Magellan*, ſituated in 52 Degrees 26 Minutes South Latitude, which are in ſome Parts three or four Leagues, but in others not half a League broad. Sails from Port *Deſire* *October* 13, 1670. *Magellanick* Streights.

All about the Entrance of the Streights, till he came to the firſt narrow Paſſage, he obſerv'd there was very good Anchorage and not much Tide; but in the Narrow the Tide run ſtronger than in the *Hope* at the *Thames* Mouth, the Flood ſetting into the Streights, and the Ebb out, and kept a conſtant Courſe, as on other Coaſts, *viz.* ſix Hours Flood and — Hours Ebb, and riſes and falls near four Fathoms perpendicular. Tides here.

The Captain having paſſed the ſecond Narrow in the Streights went on Shore on the Iſland *Elizabeth*, and nineteen of the Natives coming down the Hill to him, he exchang'd Knives, Beads, and other Implements with them for their

Chili. their Bows, Arrows, and Coats, which were made of the Skins of Guanaco's, Seals, and Otters: That they were for laying Hands on every thing they ſaw in a very brutiſh Manner, and the more he gave them the more they craved: That ſeveral of his Men danced and ſported with them, and ſhewing them ſome Gold, he intimated by Signs, that if they could bring him any he would purchaſe it of them; but either they did not underſtand him, or knew of none: And he no ſooner left them and went on Board, but they ſet fire to the Graſs.

Natives deſcrib'd again. He relates, that theſe People are of a middle Stature, well-limb'd, with round Faces, low Foreheads, little Noſes, and ſmall black Eyes; their Teeth are ſmooth, even and white, their Hair flaggy and very black, of an indifferent Length, Men and Women alike, they are all full-breaſted, of an olive Colour, and painted all over their Bodies with red Earth and Greaſe, their Faces daubed in Spots with white Clay, and black Streaks made with Smut, their Arms and Feet the like; their Heads are generally ſmall, their Fingers ſhort, and their Bodies very active; their Cloathing is of the Skins of Seals, Guanaco's, and Otters ſewed together; their Garments are in Form of a Carpet five Foot ſquare, which they wrap about them as the *Scotchman* does his Pladding: On their Heads they wear Caps of the Skins of Fowls with the Feathers, and on their Feet Pieces of Skins to keep them from the Ground. They are very hardy, for tho' it was very cold then, they don't wear theſe Skins when they go about any Buſineſs that requires Stirring. They have no Hair on any Part of their Bodies or Faces, nor any thing to cover their Nudities, except that the Women have a Piece of Skin hanging

hanging before them. The Men and Women are cloathed alike, only the Women go without Caps, and wear Bracelets of Shells about their Necks, which the Men have not. The Men are ſomething taller than the Women, and fuller faced; the Men have a harſher Voice and rattle in the Throat, the Women ſomewhat ſhriller; they often repeat the Word *Urſah*, and if they did not like any thing would cry, *Ur*, *ur*. They feed both upon Fiſh and Fleſh, live under no manner of Government, or worſhip any thing. At our Landing, they came to us with a great Noiſe, every one his Bow ready, and two Arrows in his Hand: Their Bows are about an Ell long, and every Arrow eighteen Inches, neatly made of Wood, headed with Flint-Stones curiouſly wrought, broad Arrow Faſhion, and well faſtened to the Arrow, the other End being feather'd with two Feathers, and ty'd on with the Gut of ſome Beaſt while yet green and moiſt, the Bow-ſtring is of twiſted Guts. They have large mungrel Dogs of ſeveral Colours, not unlike *Spaniſh* Dogs. I ſaw no other domeſtick Creatures, nor their Boats, which then lay on the other Side of the Iſland towards the Main, where they waited for fair Weather to catch Penguins, of which there is a vaſt Quantity, as alſo of white-breaſted Divers. Chili.

He ſaw on both Sides of the Streights Woods which ſeemed to be regularly planted, and Timber in them two Foot diameter. The Bark of ſome of theſe Trees is as hot as Pepper, and when dry'd had the Smell of fine Spices, and they uſed it in ſeaſoning their Meat and Soup, to which it gave a fine Flavour, and he believed this Spice to be very wholſome; but he ſaw no Fruit-Trees on the Shores, or Oak, Aſh, Trees in the Streights. A ſpicy Bark.

Chili.

Aſh, Hazel, or any Trees like ours in *England*, the Woods conſiſting chiefly of the Pepper-rind Tree abovemention'd, and another like our Beech. The largeſt Tree he ſaw in the Streights was about two Foot and a half diameter, and thirty or forty Foot high. The Woods were uſually on the Sides of Hills, the Land being very high on both Shores, and the Tops of the Mountains ſcarce ever free from Snow.

Cape *Froward* the moſt Southern Promontory.

He obſerves, that Cape *Froward*, the moſt Southerly Land on the Continent of *South-America* (for Cape *Horn* is upon the Iſland *Del Fogo*) lies in 53 Degrees 52 Minutes South Latitude, 68 Degrees 40 Minutes Weſt of the *Lizard*: And he computed the whole Length of the *Streights* from Cape *Virgin Mary* to Cape *Diſſeada* to be an hundred and ſixteen Leagues: And on the North-Weſt Part of the *Streights*, in the *South-Sea*, lie four little Iſlands near Cape *Victory*, which he denominated *The Iſlands of Direction*, being a Guide to thoſe who enter the *Streights* from the *South-Sea*. From the *Streights* Mouth he ſailed North to *The Iſland of Succour*, in 45 Degrees South Latitude, where he arriv'd the 26th of *November* and took in freſh Water. He ſaw none of the Natives of this Iſland, only one of their Huts, which reſembled thoſe of the Natives on the Continent of *Patagonia*, and were more like Arbours than Houſes, being compoſed of Boughs of Trees.

Length of the *Streights*.

Iſland of Succour, *Nov.* 20, 1670.

Between the *Iſle of Succour* and the Continent, there lies another Iſland, where the Captain went on Shore, and having taken poſſeſſion of it for his Majeſty, gave it the Name of *Narborough Iſland*. Here, he ſays, he found his Men in pretty good Health, and ſeventy-two in Number; ſo that he ſeems to have loſt

Narborough Iſle.

eight

eight in his Paſſage hither. He ſailed from *Narborough Iſland* to the River of *Baldivia*, where he ſet on Shore the *Spaniard*, *Don Carlos*, on the South Side of the Harbour, on the 15th Day of *December*. He carried with him a Sword and a Caſe of Piſtols, a Bag with Beads, Knives, Sciſſars, Looking-Glaſſes, Combs, Rings, Pipes, Bells, and Tobacco, to make himſelf acceptable to the Natives; for the Captain does not ſeem to have been then appriſed that the *Spaniards* had re-poſſeſs'd themſelves of the Town of *Baldivia* and rebuilt it.

Chili.

Baldivia, *Decem.* 15. *Don Carlos* ſet on Shore here.

Don Carlos took the Path by the Sea-ſide, leading to the Mouth of the Harbour, and after a quarter of a Mile's Walk, turned out of ſight behind a Rock. He had directed the Lieutenant who ſet him on Shore to look out for his Fire in the Night-time, but they never ſaw or heard of him more.

The next Morning the Captain ſent one of his Lieutenants with his Boat to make ſome Diſcoveries in the Harbour, and coming near a *Spaniſh* Fort call'd *St. Jago*, the Garriſon wafted a white Flag, and invited them a-ſhore; whereupon the Lieutenant landed in hopes of meeting with *Don Carlos*, whom they had ſeen going along the Path leading directly to this Fort between the Wood and the Sea-ſide; for the Fort ſtands on an Eminence by a Wood on the South Side of the Harbour. The Fort had ſeven Guns mounted, which were defended by a Breaſt-work and ſome ſlight Palliſadoes.

The Lieutenant was received on Shore by about twenty *Spaniards* and *Indians*, who conducted him to the Governor, whom he found ſitting with two other *Spaniſh* Gentlemen under a great Tree. The Governor welcomed him on Shore with a Silver Bowl of Wine, and

The *Spaniſh* Fort of *St. Jago*, and the Garriſon.

Chili. asked which Way they came into these Seas; and the Lieutenant in his Turn enquired whether the *Spaniards* were at War with the *Indians*, to which the Governor answer'd, *Yes*; intimating, that they were Enemies all round the Harbour, and tho' barbarous, were a brave People and good Horsemen: That the *Spaniards* had scarce any Ground belonging to their Fort, nor durst walk out a Musket's Shot from their Pallisadoes without being well arm'd: That the *Indians* had such Plenty of Gold, the Breast-plates of their Armour were of that Metal.

After this Conference, the *Spanish* Governor made the Lieutenant a handsome Entertainment in a Tent; and he obsery'd, that not only the Dishes, but all the Kitchen Utensils were of Silver, as were the Hilts of the common Soldiers Swords, and those of their Officers of Gold, and the Plate at the butt End of their Muskets of the same Metal.

The Account the *Spaniards* give of the State of *Chili*.

When the Lieutenant return'd on Board the *Sweep-stakes*, four *Spanish* Gentlemen came with him, who offer'd to conduct the Ship into the Harbour; but the Captain being well acquainted with the Treachery of the *Spaniards* in those Parts, civilly refused the Favour. These *Spanish* Gentlemen related, that there was a great deal of Gold about *Baldivia*, but that the Natives being a brave People, of a *gigantick Stature*, and able to bring ten thousand Horse into the Field, would not let them come at their Gold: That their Arms were long Launces or Pikes, Bows, Arrows and Swords, and they had some Muskets which they had taken from the *Spaniards*: That the *Indians* were very numerous about *Baldivia*, *Osorno*, and at *Castro* in the Island of *Chiloe*, and would barter their Gold with the *Spaniards* tho' they were not at Peace with them. The

Chili.

The *Spaniards* demanding of the Captain whither he was bound, he anſwered for *China*, and only touched at *Baldivia* to refreſh his Men and take in Proviſions. They reply'd he ſhould have what the Country afforded, and pointed to a Rivulet where he might take in freſh Water, which they ſaid had golden Sands; adding, that the *Spaniards* bought a great deal of Gold of the Natives, which they gathered with Diſhes in the Brooks and Gullies between the Hills and Rocks about thirty Leagues from the Sea; and that between the Sea and thoſe Hills was a fine fruitful Country (abounding in Horſes, Oxen, Sheep and Goats) which the *Indians* had taken from the *Spaniards:* And that there was more Gold in *Chili* than in any Country yet diſcover'd in *America.* But the Captain obſerv'd the *Spaniards* had little Knowledge of the Country to the Southward of *Baldivia*, except of *Oſorno*, and the Iſland of *Caſtro* over-againſt it, which was a fine Iſland fruitful in Wheat; but the *Indians* were ſo numerous there, that they would not ſuffer the *Spaniards* to ſearch for Gold if there were any in the Iſland.

That a Ship loaden with Arms, Ammunition, Wine, Linnen and Woollen Cloth, Tobacco and Sugar, came annually from *Valdivia* and took Gold, Bezoar-Stone, and red Wool of the Guanaco Sheep in Return: That there was a Road from *Baldivia* to the *Spaniſh* Settlements in the North of *Chili*, but they never uſed it, unleſs furniſh'd with a very ſtrong Convoy, for fear of the Natives: That the *Spaniards* repreſented this Country as an earthly Paradiſe, where People lived in the greateſt Delight and Plenty in the World; and indeed the *Spaniſh* Gentlemen who came

Chili. on Board him, and thoſe he ſaw on Shore were corpulent jolly Fellows, and had good roſy Complexions.

Upon this Intelligence, the Captain ſent his Boat and eighteen Men on Shore to view the Harbour and Fortifications, and to endeavour to ſettle a Commerce with the Natives, being of opinion that this Country was loſt for want of a true Knowledge of it. The *Spaniards* bought ſeveral things of the Boat's Crew, for which they gave them *Pieces of Eight*, but would not part with their Gold or their Bread. However, they had a conſiderable Profit by what they ſold them, as for a Fowling-piece, worth twenty Shillings in *England*, they had ſixteen *Pieces of Eight* (or Crowns) for a Caſe of Knives, bought for three Shillings, they had five *Pieces of Eight*; for a Pair of Gloves of Ten-pence, a *Piece of Eight*; and the *Spaniards* appear'd very deſirous of purchaſing Cloaks of Bays, tho' their Under-Garments were very rich, *viz.* Velvet, Silk and Silver Brocades, and they wore fine Linnen, and good *Flanders* Lace: That four of the *Spaniards* Wives came into the Boat, who were born in *Peru* of *Spaniſh* Parents; theſe were dreſs'd after the *Spaniſh* Mode, had large Gold Chains about their Necks, and Pendants of Saphire in their Ears: And the Governor preſented his Lieutentant with ſome Oſtrich Feathers, a Silver-headed Cane, and ſome other Trifles; but the Boat's Crew could find no Opportunity of converſing with the Natives by themſelves; for tho' ſome *Indians* made a Fire by a Wood ſide, and hung out a white Flag, as a Signal they would traffick with them, the *Spaniards* would not permit the *Engliſh* to go to them. Whereupon the Boat return'd on Board, and the

Narborough trafficks with the *Spaniards*,

But is not ſuffer'd to trade with the Natives.

the Governor of *St. Jago* sending Word he had no Orders to permit him to take in Water there, and directing them to go to *St. Peter's* Fort, he sent one of his Lieutenants and three more to the Governor of *St. Peter's* Fort, who receiv'd them with great Civility, but detain'd them Prisoners under Pretence he had receiv'd Orders from *Don Pedro de Montades*, Governor of *Chili*, to keep them Prisoners till the Ship came under the Command of the Fort; which when the Captain understood by the Seamen who return'd with the Boat, he seem'd resolved to attack the Fort and rescue his Lieutenant and his three Companions by Force: But whether upon mature Consideration he did not think this practicable, or remember'd Sir *Walter Raleigh*'s Fate, who lost his Head for attacking the *Spaniards* in *America* when he had no Commission for it, he altered his Resolution, and left his four Men Prisoners at *Baldivia*, whose Names were *Thomas Armiger*, the Lieutenant, *John Fortescu*, Gentleman, *Hugh Coe*, Trumpeter, and *Thomas Highway*, the Interpreter, who was born of *Moorish* Parents in *Barbary*, but a Christian, and lived formerly with an *English* Merchant at *Cadiz*: Captain *Narborough* observ'd they were all healthful People, well qualify'd to make Observations, and he hoped would give a good Account of the Country; but I am afraid they met with worse Usage from the *Spaniards* than he expected, and whether any of them ever return'd to *England* I cannot learn.

Chili.

His Lieutenant and three more made Prisoners by the *Spaniards*.

While Captain *Narborough* lay in the River *Baldivia*, some *Indians* under the *Spanish* Government came on Board him, whom he acquainted that he was come to establish a Trade with them, and desir'd they would communicate this

Chili. this to their Friends in the Country. They seem'd glad of it, and were unwilling to return on Shore, declaring that the *Spaniards* were mere Devils, insulting and abusing those they had in their Power without Mercy, and said, that both the *Spaniards* and the *Indians* had abundance of Gold. He gave them some Knives, Looking-glasses, and other Toys, when they went on Shore, and they promised to acquaint the inland Inhabitants with what he said. But, it seems, these People were of a middle Stature, they were not those Giants the *Spaniards* had represented them.

The Stature of the *Chilesians.*

Remarks on the *Spanish* Accounts of *America*

And here we may observe, that the Accounts we have receiv'd of *America* from the *Spaniards* are not agreeable to Truth, but formed upon the Plan of Interest, Bigottry or Vanity. They furnish'd us with such Relations as might deter other *European* Nations from sending Colonies thither; or such as might seem to justify their Usurpations and Cruelty to that People, and reflect Honour on the *Spanish* Nation, or the *Roman* Catholick Superstition, to which they are known to be more bigotted than any Nation in *Europe*; and we poor credulous Protestants, notwithstanding our Abhorrence of Popery, greedily swallowed the most improbable and incredible Tales they were pleased to frame.

From these Sources we may derive those shocking Relations which obtained so universally on the first Discovery of *America*, of Giants, Monsters, and Canibals, tho' the *Spaniards* carried the Matter so far, and dress'd up their Stories with so many Contradictions and unnatural Circumstances, as one would have thought should have confuted their own Narratives; and indeed now we come to reflect coolly

coolly and deliberately upon them, and discern with what View they were propagated, they need no other Confutation, where the Prejudices of People are not insuperable, and they have an Opportunity of examining them thro'ly. Chili.

The *Spaniards*, we find, inform'd Captain *Narborough*, that tho' there was a great deal of Gold in the Country, yet the Mines were in possession of the Natives, who were a barbarous and gigantick Race, expert in the Exercise of Arms, both *Indian* and *European*, and who could bring ten thousand good Horse into the Field upon a very short Warning; from whence they would have him conclude, that it was in vain for any *European* Nation to attempt to settle Colonies in *Chili*, or expect to come at their Gold. The *Spaniards* themselves had no more than what was found in Rivulets, or on the Surface of the Earth, which they purchased of the Natives; and tho' they had been settled there so long, they had been driven from the Mines, and could not at present penetrate further into the Country than the Pallisadoes of their own Forts.

But Sir *John Narborough* saw with his own Eyes that the Natives were not the Giants they were represented: That their Stature was rather inferiour to that of the *English*, and that the *Spaniards* were so much Masters of the Sea-Coasts thereabouts that the Natives durst not come thither to traffick with his People: He was sensible also, how poor a Fortification that of *Baldivia* then was, and that there was not an hundred *Europeans* in Garrison there. How then was it possible to believe that the *Chilesians* were Giants, or expert Soldiers, and could raise a Body of ten thousand Horse? This was evidently all *Gasconade*, and only fit

to

Chili. to amuſe Women and Children with. Notwithſtanding the *Spaniards* therefore had repreſented the *Chileſians* as ſuch a powerful and barbarous People, and averſe to the entertaining any Commerce with Foreigners, Sir *John* declares it to be his Opinion, that the moſt advantageous Trade in the World might be eſtabliſh'd in thoſe Parts if *England* had the Freedom of the *Spaniſh* Ports there, or if they had not, that a Trade might be carried on in ſpite of all the *Spaniſh* Forces on that Side by a Squadron of four or five Ships of twenty or thirty Guns each; and he did not queſtion but the Natives of the South Parts of *Chili*, about *Caſtro*, *Oſorno*, and *Baldivia*, would be willing to exchange their Gold for Knives, Sciſſars, Looking-glaſſes, Beads, Combs, Hatchets, and other Merchandize of that kind.

But can any one imagine, that a raſcally Garriſon of a hundred *Spaniards*, defended only by ſeven Guns and a poor Breaſt-work, could have kept the brave *Chileſians* in Awe, and prevented their trafficking with Foreigners on the Coaſt, if, according to the *Spaniſh* Account, the *Chileſe* could have brought ten thouſand Men of a gigantick Stature, completely arm'd and vers'd in the Trade of War into the Field? Would not ſuch a Force have been able to toſs the *Spaniards* and their paltry Fort into the Sea, and made their Way to the Coaſt againſt all the Power of *Spain* in *South-America*?

But to get ſome farther Light into the State of *Chili*, and diſcover whether it be yet practicable, or worth the while to ſettle Colonies and eſtabliſh a Trade with that Coaſt, I ſhall conſider ſome other Voyages that have been made with that View to *Patagonia*, to the Streights of *Magellan*, and round Cape *Horn* and the

Terra

Terra Magellenica, to the Coaſt of *Chili*, and to the Iſlands near it: Give me Leave only to obſerve in the firſt place, that Sir *John Narborough* in his Return took his Departure from Cape *Gallery*, the South Point of the Harbour of *Baldivia*, on *Thurſday* the 22d of *December* 1670, ſailing to the Southward along the Weſt Coaſt of *America* till the 6th of *January*, when he made the Iſlands of *Direction*, at the Weſtern Mouth of the Streights of *Magellan*, which he paſs'd, and arriv'd at Cape *Virgin Mary* in the North Sea, on *February* 14, 1670-1; he made Cape *Blanco* on the 23d, and on the 24th anchored in Port *Deſire* Bay, in 47 Degrees odd Minutes South Latitude, from whence ſetting ſail on *February* the 26th, he arriv'd at the *Lizard* in the *Engliſh* Channel on the 10th of *June*, 1671; ſo that he was about a Year and three quarters from home upon this Voyage, but not more than half a Year in his Paſſage from *Valdivia*, in *Chili*, to *England*. So that it appears to be much the ſame in Extent as an *Eaſt-India* Voyage, and poſſibly may be performed in leſs Time now they have found the Way round *Terra del Fogo*, and are not hindered by going through the Streights of *Magellan*, which uſually took up ſix Weeks or two Months of the Voyage.

Chili.

Sir *John Narborough* returns thro' the Streights.

Before the Paſſage round Cape *Horn* was diſcover'd, the *Spaniards* imagining there was no other Way into the *South-Sea* but through the Streights of *Magellan*, built Forts on the narroweſt Part of that Streight, and garriſon'd them with ſeveral hundred Men, in order to exclude all other Nations from the *South-Sea*, and ſecure the Empire of that Ocean and thoſe rich and extenſive Countries bordering upon it to themſelves; but Sir *Thomas Cavendiſh*

Spaniſh Forts on the Streights of *Magellan*.

Chili. passing the Streights of *Magellan* in *January*, 1586, and coming to the first *Spanish* Fort, found no more than twenty-four alive of four hundred that were left there, and these almost starv'd. He arriv'd afterwards at another Fort in the Streight, to which the *Spaniards* had given the Name of Fort *St. Philip*, and found it in Ruins, most of the Garrison whereof perish'd for want of Food; whereupon Sir *Thomas* gave it the Name of Port *Famine*, and proceeding in his Voyage passed happily into the *South-Sea*. Several other Commanders also have passed these Streights successfully, particularly Sir *John Narborough*, already mention'd; but many however have been disappointed, drove back and lost by Tempests; and the Passage was found for the most part so difficult, that it put some enterprising Seamen upon finding a Way round Cape *Horn* further to the Southward, in which both *La Maire* and Admiral *Brewer* succeeded: The first passing through a short and narrow Streight between *Terra del Fogo* and *States-Island* on the East of it, which has since obtain'd the Name of *La Maire's Streight*, and *Brewer* passing through a Streight made by *States-Island*, and another small Island to the Eastward of it, gave that Pass the Name of *Brewer's Streight*; but none of these Streights are used at present; Ships that are bound to the *South-Sea* or Coast of *Chili* now stand away to the South-East till they come into 58 or 60 Degrees, surrounding the *Terra del Fogo*, and all the other Islands in the Neighbourhood of it: Nor do they find any Inconvenience in going thus far South but the meeting with vast pieces of Ice, as our Mariners do in *Greenland*, which are not so numerous however as to interrupt their

Passages found out by *La Maire* and *Brewer*.

The Passage round *Terra del Fogo*, and the other Islands.

their Voyage. Our Countrymen, Captain *Cowley*, Captain *Dampier*, Captain *Rogers*, and Captain *Sharp*, all passed these Seas round Cape *Horn* without any ill Accident, and saved a great deal of time by avoiding the Streights of *Magellan*. Chili.

The Islands of *Patagonia* and *Chili* describ'd.

And here I shall give some further Description of those three considerable Islands on the Coast of *Patagonia* and *Chili*, of which all Seamen, who visit the *Pacifick Ocean*, take so much Notice, *viz.* 1. The Island of *Terra del Fogo*. 2. The Island of *Chiloe*; and 3. The Island of *John Fernando*.

Terra del Fogo. Situation and Extent.

1. The Island of *Terra del Fogo* is bounded by the Streights of *Magellan* on the North, by the *Atlantick Ocean* on the East, and by the great *South-Sea* on the South and West, being of a triangular Figure, the Base whereof is the Streight of *Magellan*, three hundred Miles in Length from East to West, and it is about the same Extent from North to South, *viz.* from the Streights of *Magellan* to Cape *Horn*, the Point or Summit of the Pyramid, which lies in 57 Degrees 30 Minutes South Latitude.

Face of the Country.

This Island, like the Continent over-against it, is mountainous and woody, the Tops of the Mountains almost always cover'd with Snow; but it has several good Bays and Harbours on the Coast to shelter Shipping from the Storms and Tempests that reign in these Seas, and does not want Rivulets of fresh Water.

Natives. their Persons and Habits.

As to the Natives, Travellers differ very widely in the Description of them in some Particulars, tho' they agree pretty well in others. They all agree that they are a brave and hardy People, but not very numerous: That they paint both their Faces and Bodies,

Chili. and have no other Cloaths but a Cloke or Mantle made of raw Hides, or the Skins of Fiſh and Fowls tack'd together with green Guts, only the Men wear a Cap of Feathers. The Women have nothing on their Heads, but wear a Piece of Penguins Skins before their Nudities. They live in Huts, or in Arbours, made of the Boughs of Trees, and eat Seals, Penguins, Veniſon, and other Game they take either by Land or Water. Their Arms are Clubs, Bows and Arrows pointed with ſharp Flints or Bones. Their Boats are Canoes, or hollow Trees, and they make their Nets of Guts and Sinews, the Fibres of the Bark of Trees, or ſuch other Materials as their Country affords.

But ſome Travellers, eſpecially the *Dutch*, related, that the Natives were Giants, ten or eleven Foot high at leaſt: That they tore up Trees by the Roots to encounter their Enemies, and threw Stones at them big enough to ſink their Boats: And they reported alſo, that they were Canibals, tho' it is univerſally acknowledg'd they lived chiefly on the Fleſh of other Animals.

But late Travellers, and even the *Dutch* themſelves, ſince they have diſcover'd the Way round the Iſland by Cape *Horn*, acknowledge the People are of a moderate Stature, not exceeding that of the *Europeans*: And as to their being Canibals, no manner of Proof has ever been brought of it from firſt to laſt; this Fact is ſupported ſolely by the Surmiſes of our wiſe Adventurers, and the Credulity of their Readers.

Probably ſome of the firſt Diſcoverers thought it convenient to give out that the Natives were Giants, to excuſe their running away

away from them; and added, they were Canibals, to render them ſtill more terrible, and to juſtify their murdering theſe naked defenceleſs People with their Artillery and Fire-Arms. Chili.

2. The Iſland of *Chiloe*, ſituated on the Weſt Side of a great Bay of the *South-Sea*, near and over-againſt the Continent of *Chili* (a multitude of leſſer Iſlands (ſome ſay forty) lying in the ſame Bay.) It is a long Iſland, ſtretching from North to South, and extending from 41 Degrees 40 Minutes, to 43 Degrees 30 Minutes South Latitude, computed to be about 140 Miles in Length, and twenty in Breadth. *Chiloe* Iſland. Situation and Extent.

The Face of the Country is various, conſiſting of Mountains, Valleys, Woods, Champaign, Savannah or Meadow and marſhy Grounds, and has in it ſome fine Springs and Rivulets of freſh Water.

The chief, and for ought I can learn, the only Town in it is that of *Caſtro*, built by the *Spaniards*, and already deſcrib'd, which is ſituated in 42 Degrees odd Minutes South Latitude, and 84 Degrees of Weſtern Longitude. The Country, according to *Brewer* and Sir *John Narborough*, abounding in Corn, Cattle and Fruit, both *European* and *Indian*, tho' by *Techo*, and ſome others, ſaid to be barren, and one of the pooreſt of all the *Spaniſh* Settlements; which different Accounts may eaſily be reconcil'd. I don't find any reaſon to doubt the Relations given us by the *Dutch* and Sir *John Narborough*, that it appeared a fruitful Country when they were there, for this was before the *Spaniſh* Plantations were quite ruined. But in the time of *Techo* the Natives ſeem to have recover'd the Country again, and left the *Spaniards* little more than the Town of *Caſtro*, which *Caſtro* Town. A fruitful Country.

Chili. which has been ſo often burnt and plunder'd that it is now reduced to a miſerable Village with a ſmall Fort that defends it: And in theſe Circumſtances no wonder the Lands are uncultivated, and conſequently appear unfruitful. This is the Caſe of many Parts of the World; the Soil ſeems to alter according to the Genius or Circumſtances of the Inhabitants. We are told of theſe very *Chileſians*, that upon the Continent they ſow and plant no more than juſt furniſhes their particular Families with Food, and the *Spaniards* have no Encouragement to improve a Country they are not Maſters of, and where they cannot enjoy the Fruit of their Labours in quiet. Beſides, the *Chileſians* are not now their Slaves to do their Drudgery, as they did formerly; and we are well acquainted with the Pride and Lazineſs of the *Spaniards* even in their own Country, where the *French* frequently cultivate their Lands for them; the Owners will not work or improve their Eſtates, tho' they ſtarve upon them; and this poſſibly is the Caſe of their Countrymen in *Chiloe*, now they have no Slaves to work for them and cultivate the Lands in that Iſland.

Iſland of *John Fernando.*

3. The third and laſt Iſland I propoſed to deſcribe on the Coaſt of *Chili* is that of *Juan*, or *John Fernando*, which obtain'd its Name from the firſt Diſcoverer and Planter. This Iſland is ſituated in 34 Degrees odd Minutes South Latitude, about 400 Miles Weſt of the Coaſt of *Chili*, being thirty-eight or forty Miles in Circumference. Hither it was that Governor *Pullen* adviſed the ſending of a Squadron of Men of War during the laſt War with *France* and *Spain* in the Reign of Queen *Anne*, when the Miniſtry requir'd his Opinion concerning the Feazibleneſs of preventing the Treaſures of

Peru

Chili.

Peru and *Chili* from being brought to *Europe* by the *French* and *Spaniards*, and of excluding the *French* from that Traffick, whereby they were enabled to maintain the War ſo long againſt the Confederates. It was propoſed alſo to the Governor's Conſideration, whether it was not practicable to fix *Britiſh* Colonies in thoſe rich Countries of *Chili* and *Peru*, and thereby come in for a Share in thoſe Treaſures. And becauſe it is very poſſible that this Nation may be in the like Situation again (that is) be at War with *France* and *Spain* again, or at leaſt with the latter, and the ſame Conduct may hereafter become expedient which was adviſeable then; and becauſe we no where meet with a juſter Account of the State of the *Spaniſh Weſt-Indies*, and of *Chili* in particular, the Country I am now treating of, than in the Writings of this ingenious Gentleman, I ſhall take the Liberty to tranſcribe as much from that Eſſay of Mr. *Pullen*'s on the Subject above-mention'd as I apprehend for my preſent Purpoſe.

Propos'd to be planted and fortify'd by *England* by Governor *Pullen*.

I ſhall firſt begin (ſays Mr. *Pullen*) with what is neceſſary to be done *to ruin their Commerce* (that is, of the *French* in the *South-Sea*; for then they were admitted into all the *Spaniſh* Ports in *America*, ſupplied their Towns and Colonies with *European* Goods, for which they received Gold and Silver in return, and were entruſted by the *Spaniards* to bring their Plate to *Europe*) a Commerce the moſt beneficial to them, and conſequently moſt prejudicial to us. To effect which, I propoſe the ſending thither eight fifty and ſixty Gun Ships the next Seaſon; for the manning of which Squadron, I propoſe but half the Complement of Seamen that are allow'd to ſuch Ships by the

Chili. the Rules of the Navy, and that the reſt of the Number ſhould be made up with Soldiers, either Mariners or Detachments out of marching Regiments, as the Government ſhall judge moſt expedient, provided they be Men acquainted with Service; and if they have ſerved ſome Campaigns ſo much the better, becauſe they will be leſs ſubject to Sickneſs, and not ſo ſoon diſcourag'd with Hardſhips as raw Men; for probably they often may have their Patience exercis'd in ſo long and remote a Voyage: And the Reaſon why I propoſe ſo few Seamen is, becauſe moſt of the Soldiers will be made Seamen by the Length of the Voyage, and be much more ſerviceable both for landing, of which there will be frequent Occaſion, as well as for ſmall Shot upon the Decks in an Engagement, at which they are much more expert than our Sailors.

I am concern'd that I am oblig'd here to take Notice of the great Ignorance of our Seamen (generally ſpeaking) in the Uſe of Small-Arms, which, by a great Blindneſs, they have too much neglected of late Days, and endeavour to confirm one another in the Contempt of them, by alledging, that in loading the great Guns with Cartridge-ſhot you perform the ſame thing better; than which nothing is more falſe in Fact, and is one of the chief Reaſons the *French* are ſo bold in boarding our ſeventy and eighty Gun Ships; for they know that our Seamen are ſo unſkillful in the Uſe of the Muſket, that when they are beat from their Artillery, they ſeldom give them much Trouble afterwards, and what Reſiſtance they have found upon our Men of War's Decks of late time, hath moſtly been from our Mariners, who have very juſtly acquir'd a great Reputation,

Reputation, and are certainly a moſt uſeful Body of People, and the Motto which I have ſeen upon ſome of their Caps (*Sine his Nihil*) is now literally true. I affirm, this is one of the principal Reaſons that makes the *French* deſpiſe our Seamen, and hath expoſed us to ſuch Loſs both of Reputation and Shipping as hath not been known but of late Days, and deſerves a very ſerious Conſideration, in order to procure a ſpeedy and effectual Remedy. If I ſhould ſay that the Fire-Arms that are put on Board our Men of War are both too heavy and too ſhort, and the Locks good for nothing, and that the *French* extremely excell us in the Commodiouſneſs of their Fire-Arms in all reſpects, I ſhould advance nothing but Truth. Chili.

The Seaſon of the Year proper to begin their Voyage is from the firſt to the middle of *September*; but I adviſe by all means that they ſhould ſet out by the 15th of *Auguſt*, that they may arrive ſome ſmall time in the *South Seas* before the *French* Trade, that goes the ſame Year. For by this Means one could hardly fail of deſtroying all the Ships bound thither that Seaſon, and perhaps meet with ſome returning home; for they muſt obſerve the ſame time of Year and return by the ſame Rout out of thoſe Seas that they went into them by.

To make this ſtill plainer, it will not be amiſs to ſet down here the Rout they always uſe going thither, which is by or round Cape *Horn*, the Southermoſt Promontory of all *America*; for they never venture through the Streights of *Magellan*, becauſe they find now by Experience, that for one Ship that gets through, three are forced back, and ſo loſe

Chili.

their Voyage that Year, to the Ruin of their Owners: But having ſufficient Sea-room the other Way, they are never expos'd to any ſuch Riſque. After they have doubled Cape *Horn*, they ſteer directly for the Iſle of *Juan Fernando*, to refreſh their Men, who by the time they get thither want ſufficiently, and likewiſe to take in freſh Water, for their firſt Stock can't fail of being near expir'd before they reach this Place. I have taken a great deal of Pains to inform myſelf of this Matter from ſeveral *French* Sailors that have perform'd the Voyage, who all agreed that they never miſs'd that Iſland if they could help it, becauſe their Men are almoſt all in the Scurvy by that time, and it would infallibly occaſion a Mutiny, if the Captain ſhould refuſe touching there.

Governor *Pullen*'s Deſcription of the Iſland of *John Fernando*.

It ſeems neceſſary, having mention'd this Iſland, that I ſhould give you a Deſcription of it, the rather becauſe of the Advantages I propoſe from the planting of it. The Iſle of *Juan*, or *John Fernando*, lies in the Latitude 34 Degrees 45 Minutes, its Circuit may be about thirty-eight or forty *Engliſh* Miles, and its Diſtance from the Continent of *South-America* four hundred. Its Soil is indifferent upon the Hills, but its Valleys are fine, fruitful and pleaſant, interſperſed with Savannahs, as they are uſually call'd here, that is, natural Meadows which are common in the *Weſt-Indies*, and which I have mention'd ellewhere in the Deſcription of *Buenos Ayres*. Theſe Valleys therefore are doubtleſs capable of great Improvement, ſince there need be no Queſtion of their producing every thing which is agreeable to this Climate; and tho', as I have ſaid, the Hills are in their Soil unfruitful, yet I would not be underſtood by that to exclude Trees,

of

Chili.

of which there are many, and ſome which might be of great Uſe; but what principally induc'd me to mention the ſettling of it was the breeding Cattle and raiſing Fruits of the Earth, and by Tillage; by means whereof great Advantage might accrue to the Inhabitants, ſince the Ships which paſs the Streights of *Magellan*, or by Cape *Horn*, conſtantly touch here, by reaſon that their Crew having by this time contracted an *Epidemick Scurvy*, the Captain's miſſing the Iſland might, as I have ſaid, occaſion a Mutiny. I foreſee one Objection which would be made to this Propoſal, and that is, the Difficulty there would be in maintaining ſuch a Settlement at ſuch a Diſtance from *Britain* and from any *Britiſh* Colonies: But to this I anſwer, *That never any Iſland was more capable of being fortified ſo as to reſiſt any Enemy who could attack it in that Part of the World.* There are in it but two Bays capable of receiving Ships, which are both at the Eaſt End, and a ſmall Charge would ſoon build ſuch Works as would render it impracticable for any to land there againſt the Will of its Inhabitants. The Weſt End, which is the higheſt, rockieſt, and by far the moſt barren Part of the Iſland, hath yet this Advantage, that it is of ſuch natural Strength that a ſmall Body of Men might defend it, even againſt the greateſt Force that could be brought againſt it.

Seals are found here in the greateſt Plenty of any Part of the World, and their Skins are of an extraordinary Value from the Fineneſs of the Furs: Their Fat makes very good Train Oil, and much better ſtill is made of what is call'd the Sea-Lion, which is a Creature much bigger than the Seal, tho' amphibious like them, yet without a Fur. The Number

Chili. of theſe Creatures, which is frequently ſo great as entirely to cover the Shore, ſufficiently demonſtrates the Plenty of Fiſh which muſt be on its Coaſts, thoſe amphibious Animals living on little elſe; and indeed there are here as fine, and in as great Quantity, as could be wiſh'd. To theſe Advantages may be added the great Abundance of Goats, which have been produc'd by three or four which were left here by its firſt Diſcoverer. All which, put together, would render it no diſagreeable Place for thoſe who in the Voyage I propoſe have no other View than ſettling ſome-where in the World, to plant themſelves here, where they would be ſure of finding moſt of the Neceſſaries of Life ready to their Hands; the Graſs of the Savannahs in this Iſland not being like thoſe throughout the reſt of *America* long and flaggy, but thick and ſhort, extremely fit for grazing, inſomuch that a very competent Judge avers, he has not carry'd his Calculation too high in averring, that theſe Savannahs are now capable of maintaining a thouſand Head of Cattle, beſides Goats, who grow fatteſt on the moſt barren Part of the Iſland.

John Fernando diſcover'd this Iſle in the Voyage he was making from *Lima* to *Baldivia*, and being exceedingly pleaſed with its Situation, Soil and Climate, reſolv'd to ſettle it, judging that its Produce might very well ſupport four or five hundred Families. On his Return to *Lima* he endeavour'd to procure a Patent for that Purpoſe. In his firſt Inſtance he was favourably receiv'd, but whether it claſhed in any Degree with the private Intereſt of the *Spaniſh* Viceroy, or whether it be a Maxim in the *Spaniſh* Policy not to ſettle in any Place in *America* in which are no Mines, I ſhall not

not pretend to determine, but ſhall only add, that it has continued uninhabited ever ſince, except now and then ſome body who has been left when the Ships watered there, and who have found a Way to ſubſiſt tolerably till they have been taken in again by ſome other Ship that came on the ſame Errand. Chili.

But I have dwelt long enough on this Subject of planting it. Let us next obſerve of what Uſe in its preſent State it might be to our Squadron. And in the firſt place it is evident, that while our Ships remain'd here it would be next to an Impoſſibility for them to miſs thoſe for whom they waited. But beſides, we ſhould not loſe a Moment's time here by ſuch a View more than is neceſſary to all Ships that come on the ſame Deſign; and we ſhould likewiſe have an Opportunity of fitting up our ſmall Craft, deſign'd for landing of Men, in order to the ſurprizing ſuch Places as it ſhould be reſolv'd to attempt. Nor can there be a more proper Conjuncture than while the Fleet lies here, to concert the Scheme of Action while they remain in the *South-Seas*.

The Squadron having done this ought to ſail for *Arica*, on the Coaſt of *Peru*, and by ſending a nimble Sailor a-head endeavour to learn, by taking ſome Priſoners, whether the Plate be yet there which is brought from the Mines of *Potoſi* to this Place; for *Arica* is the Barcadeer or Port to *Potoſi*, thither the King's Galleons come once a Year to fetch it up in the firſt place to *Callao*, and from thence, after ſome Stay, to *Panama*, from whence it is ſent over Land to *Porto Bello*, where it is put on Board of the Galleons, which convey it to *Spain*.

Now

Chili. Now if it ſhould happen that the Plate be there (as 'tis odds but it is) I adviſe without more ado to land and attack the Place, and 'twill be a Miracle to me if you can fail taking it: For Captain *Sharpe* took this Place with no more than eighty Men, tho' the whole Force the Country could raiſe was there to defend it. But there was a little paltry Fort at the End of the Town, that while his ſmall Force was attacking it, the People whom he had juſt before beat out of the Town return'd and charg'd him at his Back: And tho' he beat them out again four or five times, his ſmall Number ſo diminiſh'd by theſe repeated Attacks, that he was forced to make his Retreat, tho' he ſaw, and was in poſſeſſion of for ſome time, more Silver than would have loaded four or five ſuch Ships as his was. You may ſee an Account of this whole Matter in Mr. *Ringroſe*'s Journal, who was one of Captain *Sharpe*'s Crew at that time, and is printed under the Name of *The Hiſtory of the Buccanneers*. But if nothing is to be done at this time here, then ſail immediately to Cape *Paſſo*, under the Equinoctial Line, where you can hardly fail of taking every Ship that comes from the Coaſt of *Peru* to *Panama*; for the whole Trade of the *South-Seas* conſiſts in going and coming from this laſt Port to *Peru*, as 'tis well known to every one that knows any thing of theſe Seas.

In this Cruize you will meet with the Proviſions that muſt ſupport you in theſe Parts; for the City of *Panama* is wholly ſuſtain'd by the Proviſions ſent from the ſeveral Ports of *Peru*, as Wheat, Flower from *Guanchaco*, Wine, Bacon, and Marmalade from *Piſco*, and Chocolate from *Guiaquil*, Sugar and Oil from

from *Hillo*. In my Opinion these foregoing Articles may afford a comfortable Subsistance for our People, during their Stay there, and what they need never fear meeting with in sufficient Quantities, if their Commanders understand the proper Methods for intercepting it. Chili.

The Provisions the *Spaniards* are forced to send for the Support of this great City was the Reason they could never hinder the Buccaneers subsisting in these Seas, which they endeavour'd by all means within their Power: And I am of opinion, that they might probably effect it were it not for the continual Supplies they are oblig'd to send to *Panama*, which can never be dispensed with; for if they should take such a Resolution, that great City would certainly be famish'd. I have dwelt longer upon this Article than otherwise I design'd, to convince People that a Squadron need neither perish by Hunger, or be driven by it out of these Seas, if they know how to take the proper Means to prevent it. But I shall say more upon this Head when I come to answer the Objections against the Impracticableness of this Voyage, which I propose to do in the Sequel of this Discourse.

After the Squadron hath made what Stay they find convenient in this last Station, they ought to proceed to the Bay of *Panama*, where there are several small Islands that abound with Refreshments and Water, and very good Anchoring, in several Places. Here they will intercept all Ships bound for this Port, and likewise a great Number of small Barks from *Natta*, *La Velia*, and *Puebla Nova*, which are loaden with Fowls, Hogs, Manatee, and *Indian* Corn for the Use of *Panama*, and you may attack

Chili. attack *Panama* itſelf, or the golden Mines of *St. Maria*, or both, according to the Information you receive from the Priſoners you take; and indeed if you ſtaid long here, the City of *Panama* would infallibly be ſtarved.

At this Place, in my Opinion, they ſhould divide the Squadron, after they have perform'd all the Service they can here, and ſend four Ships to cruize on the Coaſt of *New-Spain*, in order to take the *Acapulco* Ship; two of theſe Ships muſt cruize off the Mouth of *Acapulco* Harbour, or rather to the Northward of it, and the other two muſt take their Station near Cape *St. Lucar*, in *Callifornia*, which is always the firſt Land the *Manillia* Ship makes coming home, except ſhe hath Reaſon to fear an Enemy there, and then ſhe endeavours to make the Land as near the Harbour's Mouth as ſhe can, for which Reaſon I have placed two Ships in each Station. The time ſhe arrives never exceeds ten Days before or after *Chriſtmas*, which makes it almoſt impoſſible to miſs of her, if the Diſpoſition I have here laid down be follow'd. They will likewiſe have a Chance to take the outward-bound *Acapulco* Ship, if they take care not to be diſcover'd from the Coaſt, for ſhe never fails to begin her Voyage betwixt the 10th of *December* and the 10th of *February*, and is moſt prodigious rich in *Pieces of Eight*.

Now to return to the four Ships which we left in the Bay of *Panama*, I think they ought to take this Opportunity to go over to the *Galleppagos* (under the Equator) where they will find both great Store of excellent Refreſhments for their ſick Men, and Ports where they may carreen and refit their Ships, with all manner of Security; therefore the four Ships

ſent

sent to look out for the *Acapulco* Ship must be appointed to rendezvous here after their Cruize is out. Now I have pointed at all the principal things that can be undertaken at Sea in these Parts, but have omitted a great many Enterprizes that might be formed against the rich Towns upon the Coast of *Peru*, because I would not swell this Discourse to too great a Bulk. Chili.

First, 'Tis objected, and with a great deal of seeming Reason, that having no Ports there where the Squadron can either revictual or refit upon any Occasion, that therefore they would run the greatest Risque imaginable of starving, or having the Ships in a little time render'd unserviceable.

To which I answer, That if they please to make use of the following Advice they need neither fear the one or the other, *viz.* To send all such Ships as you take in your Cruize between *Peru* and *Panama* (loaden with Provisions) over to the *Galleppagos* with one of your Frigates, with Orders to chuse out the best Harbour, and where there is the greatest Plenty of Refreshments, and there unrig your Prizes you think fit to send, and form a Magazine, which indeed the Place itself invites you to, for you need never fear the *Spaniards* disturbing you, for two Reasons, *first*, Because they have no naval Force, tho' join'd by the *French*, capable to dispute the Sea with you. *Secondly*, Because they know hardly any thing of these Islands but the Name, dreading them extremely, and telling strange romantick Stories of Whirlpools and Currents that have destroy'd several of their Ships that had the Imprudence to come too near them in their Voyages [you may see more of this in Mr. *Ringrose*'s

Chili. Journal] and indeed here is ſo many of them, that it would not be an eaſy matter to find that out which we ſhould pitch upon except by Chance. The Ignorance of the *Spaniards* in theſe Parts is hardly credible.

I ſay, hither they muſt ſend all the Ships they take loaden with Proviſions, Timber, or any other Stores that may prove uſeful to them whilſt they ſtay here; and the very Ships themſelves may ſerve for Hulks to clean by, and ſuch of their Maſts and Yards as are large enough be preſerved for the Uſe of our own Ships. The only Reaſon why the Privateers never did this, in my Opinion, was becauſe no-body had Authority enough to make part of the Men ſtay here to look after the Stores; for there might indeed happen among that unruly ſort of People forty Accidents that might occaſion their being left there for ever. But that they made other very good Uſes of them is very plain to them that know any thing of Captain *Davis*'s Voyage, or Captain *Sharpe*'s, or indeed of any of the Rovers that ever enter'd thoſe Seas for thirty Years laſt paſt.

And 'tis worth conſidering, that Captain *Davis* ſtaid in theſe Seas three Years, and twice took the very Ships equip'd out to fight him, which had the very beſt Men they were able to pick out of all *Peru*, and after ſurpriſing ſeveral of their rich Towns, return'd to theſe very uninhabited Iſlands, where he fitted and victualled his Ship for his Return home, which he happily perform'd, tho' he uſed none of the Precautions I have here recommended. Captain *Sharpe* did yet much more in a Ship of leſs Force, for after having made a good Voyage (as they call it) he ſail'd to *Nicoya*, a ſmall Village that conſiſts all of Carpenters,

penters, and surprised it, and made the very *Spanish* Carpenters take down his Ship's Poop, and alter his Main-deck to make her fitter for the Sea: And tho' the *Spaniards* could not but know of it, they durst never give him any Interruption; and when his Work was done to his Mind he very generously rewarded his *Spaniards* and dismiss'd them, and afterwards successfully perform'd his intended Voyage to the *West-Indies*. Chili.

Thus I could name several others that have carry'd their Point, in spite of all the Opposition the *Spaniards* could make; and if it be objected, that they were only in small Numbers, therefore could better subsist: I answer, they perfectly mistake the matter; for the Force I propose could upon occasion ravage the best and most plentiful Country in these Parts in the Face of the Sun. But things may easily be kept from coming to these Extremities.

The second Objection is, that the *Spaniards* or *French* could not fail of being inform'd by their good Friends here of the intended Expedition, and so render it useless and unsuccessful. To this I answer, that if it was to be carry'd on in a Method I could propose, they could never know of it, except it was betray'd by them that only have the Power to put it in execution: But suppose it was, I can tell you, they could ward against very few of the intended Blows; for in the first place, they could send no Silver from *Peru* to *Panama*, and so the Galleons would come empty; and pray consider the Consequence of that. In the next place, you must of necessity ruin the *French* Trade during the time you staid there; neither could they prevent with all their Knowledge your taking their Sea-port Towns, or the homeward

Chili. ward bound *Acapulco* Ship. In my Opinion, it could only hinder your taking the Galleons going between *Arica* and *Panama*, or the *Spaniards* bringing their Silver to *Arica* from the Mines; and as to the *French* ſending a ſuperior Squadron after us, 'tis not ſo eaſily done as ſuppoſed, for Reaſons too long to inſert here, but ſuch as I ſhall be very ready to produce when deſir'd. In my poor Opinion, theſe foregoing Objections are the only ones of Weight that can be brought againſt this Propoſal.

The Governor propoſes ſettling Colonies in *Chili*.

I have yet left untouch'd a moſt noble Deſign that may be formed upon *Chili*, a Country that the *Spaniards* have but hold on by the Border. King *Charles* the Second ſeem'd to aim at ſomething of this kind by his ſending Sir *John Narborough* thither in the *Sweepſtakes* to diſcover it; but the *Spaniſh* Don who went with him in the Nature of a Pilot, and without doubt put the King upon the Enterprize, after his being put on Shore in the Man of War's Boat where he deſir'd, never appear'd more; upon which, and upon ſome other Diſaſters, Sir *John* return'd home. But 'tis certain this is one of the beſt and richeſt Countries in *America*, where if we could ſettle ourſelves, we ſhould prodigiouſly enrich our native Country; and for my part, I don't think it impoſſible to be done.

In my Opinion, the proper Time to undertake this will be in returning home; for if the Deſign does not ſucceed, it will not put you a League out of the Way. But I adviſe by all means to attack the City of *Coquimbo*, which is ſituated upon the very Confines of *Chili*, becauſe you will certainly find here ſeveral *Chilean* Slaves, who, if manag'd dexterouſly, will prove

prove exceeding ſerviceable; and likewiſe you can't fail of being inform'd of the preſent Poſture of Affairs in that Country, and if it prove impracticable at this time to proſecute the Project any further, the Squadron may take in their Stores of freſh Water and other excellent Proviſions for their Voyage home; for there is not a better Port for that Purpoſe in all theſe Seas. Captain *Sharpe* took this Place with ninety Men, and tho' diſcover'd before he landed met with very little Reſiſtance. Chili.

To make what I here advance more intelligible, it will be neceſſary to give a ſhort Account of the *Spaniſh* Affairs in *Chili*. This noble Country, which all the *Spaniſh* Authors that have wrote concerning it compare, both for Temperature of Air and Productions of the Earth, to *France*, was firſt ſearch'd into by *Pedro Baldivia*, ſome conſiderable time after the Conqueſt of *Peru*; and the principal City, if not the only one the *Spaniards* have at this time in that Country, is call'd after his Name. He found the Country to abound with the fineſt Gold in the World, which cauſed a great many People from *Peru* to join themſelves with him. By this Means three conſiderable Cities were built and fortify'd in a very ſmall time in that Country, *viz.* *Baldivia*, *Oſorno*, and *Caſtro*.

After the *Spaniards* had ſettled themſelves ſecurely, as they thought, from any Attempts of the *Indians*, according to their uſual Cuſtom, they began to treat the Natives of the Country in a moſt inhuman manner, but they preſently found themſelves miſtaken, and were convinc'd they had to do with a People the braveſt and moſt martial of any in all *America*; for they gave the *Spaniards* ſeveral Battles, and always routed

Chili. routed them, and at last took their very Cities and utterly expel'd them the Country. In one of the Battles, wherein they not only defeated the *Spaniards*, but likewise took *Baldivia* their General Prisoner, and served him as the *Parthians* did *Crœsus*, pouring melted Gold down his Throat, and telling him, At last they had found a Way to satisfy his Avarice.

In this Interim the *Dutch* made a Voyage to the *South-Sea* with four Ships from *Brazil*, which was then almost all in their Possession, and touched at *Baldivia*, which at that time was not re-settled by the *Spaniards*. The Natives flock'd down to them in very great Numbers, perceiving they were not *Spaniards* by their Complexions and Hair, and were overjoy'd when they understood that they were at War with them, and would assist them against their common Enemy upon all Occasions. This good Understanding lasted several Days, with abundance of interchangeable good Offices, till unluckily the *Dutch* began to be very inquisitive after Gold, which as soon as the *Chilesians* perceiv'd, they immediately abandoned the Port, and would never afterwards converse with them, notwithstanding all the Endeavours the *Dutch* could use.

After this imprudent Negotiation, perceiving they could never retrieve the Blunder they had made, they set sail and return'd to *Brazil*, being only four Months and some Days upon the whole Voyage, which is a Remark worth taking notice of. The *Spaniards*, some time after this Voyage was made, re-settled *Baldivia*, not being able to support the Thoughts of losing so rich and pleasant a Country entirely, or perhaps fearing the *Dutch* might find Means

Means to seize upon it, being then in open War with them, who besides depriving them of the vast Quantity of Gold they used formerly to draw from this Country, would prove troublesome Neighbours to *Peru*.

These and the like Considerations made the *Spaniards* resolve to re-establish a new Colony at *Baldivia* at all Hazards, and without doubt it was done with great Trouble and Expence; for by all the Relations I ever could procure (and I have been very inquisitive) I can't find the *Spaniards* have any other Settlements in the whole Country. But this I am sure of, that the War continues between the *Spaniards* and the Natives as fierce and bloody as ever. And Mr. *Funnel* says, in the Year 1704 they durst not touch at the Island *La Moucha*, which is on the Coast of *Chili* close to the main Land, because, says he, we should run great danger of being murder'd by the Inhabitants, who are always at War with the *Spaniards*, and think all white Men to be such: But grant they do, there may be found Means out to undeceive them; but I think the Voyage I have quoted sufficiently refutes that Opinion.

I shall only mention a Particular or two more of the *Chilesians*, and then come to what I propose concerning them. Amongst the several Nations that inhabit this Province, and are at War with the *Spaniards*, there is one call'd the *Araucans*, who, the *Spaniards* say, are so valiant that they attack them whenever they meet with them, tho' inferiour sometimes considerably in Number, and know not, at least have not the Use of Fire-Arms; and notwithstanding these Disadvantages, generally are successful, insomuch that the *Spaniards* stand in great fear of them; and add, that they

Chili. they are so good at Imitation in what relates to War, that they learn to camp and decamp, and intrench themselves in Places of Advantage to make a handsome Retreat or an Assault, with having but once seen them practis'd; and sometimes make Improvements upon their Teachers to their great Cost, who heartily curse them for their Docility. A famous *Spanish* Poet, during the time he served in the *Chilean* War, composed a Poem much esteemed by those of his Nation, call'd *H. Araucano.*

Now I propose, that the Commander of this Squadron should have Instructions to endeavour by all possible Means to get a Conference with the Natives of this Province, which if he can bring about, the Business will be done to his Hand; for as soon as they perceive he is an Enemy to the *Spaniards*, he will want no Assistance they can give him, if he gives Orders that neither Gold nor Silver be mention'd in any Discourse held with them. After this, he may either attack *Baldivia* in Conjunction with them, or seize on any other Port he finds convenient, where he may repair to in case of Need, either for Victuals, which this Country abounds with, or for other Occasions. But if he takes *Baldivia*, which I recommend if practicable (for I believe it is in a good Posture of Defence, because they have an Enemy at their very Gates, who they stand in great dread of) in such a Case it would be requisite to leave a Garrison, a small one would serve the Turn, whilst the Squadron cruized in those Seas, because the *Spaniards* can't go thither by Land, and durst not peep by Sea during the time it stay'd in those Parts.

But

But when it was thought convenient to return home, it ought to be provided with a very good Garriſon, for this Country is well worth the keeping poſſeſſion of, and would mightily enrich our native Country, and take off a great Quantity of our Woollen Manufacture, becauſe here is a ſevere Winter of four Months: And I am verily perſuaded, if a prudent Man ſhould be left Governor, who cultivated a good Correſpondence with the Natives, that the *Spaniards*, tho' aſſiſted by the *French*, would never dare to ſtir a Foot to retake it; or if they did, would be unſucceſsful, they would be ſo harraſs'd and plagu'd by the *Indians*, their implacable Enemies, who, if they had Fire-Arms, would certainly be too hard for them on all Occaſions. Indeed 'tis requiſite this Acquiſition (if made) ſhould be encourag'd from *England* as a thing of the greateſt Importance, and a ſufficient Number of Men, with all other Neceſſaries, be ſent away by the firſt Opportunity. For

Beſides the Riches of this Country, you would infallibly in time of Peace have a ſtol'n Trade with *Peru* for all ſorts of Woollen Goods, as we formerly had from *Jamaica* with the *Spaniards* inhabiting the Ports of the North Seas; and the *Indians* in a ſhort time would be brought to ſupply you with Gold when they ſaw you paid them for it in Goods they wanted and valued, as Cloaths, Arms, and Toys. Theſe *Indians* muſt always be treated as a free People, and all manner of Satisfaction given them upon all Occaſions that's reaſonable. I ſhould imagine this following Way to be a good Method to begin a Friendſhip with them.

Chili. Upon taking any Towns upon the Coaſt of *Peru*, to enquire narrowly if there be any *Chilean* Slaves; and if you meet with any ſuch, as you certainly will, to ſend them aboard, and treat them with all imaginable good Uſage, and carry them to their native Country and ſet them aſhore, having firſt engag'd them to ſettle a Correſpondence betwixt you and their Countrymen, which without doubt they will readily undertake, and be as joyfully accepted of. And theſe Slaves, ſpeaking the *Spaniſh* Language, will be of as great Uſe as Interpreters. I am mightily miſtaken if Mr. *Ringroſe* does not ſay, in ſome Place, the *Spaniards* remov'd their *Chilean* Slaves from the Sea-ports, for fear of their joining with the Buccaneers when they made Deſcents upon the Coaſt of *Peru* to ſurpriſe any Place they had an Intention to plunder. I ſhall now diſmiſs this Head, tho' there may be much more ſaid of it; but I think it will not be amiſs to take notice that 'tis ſituated betwixt the 25th and 45th Degrees of South Latitude, and is the firſt Country that is inhabited by any *Spaniards*, as you come into thoſe Seas round Cape *Horn*.

I have been more conciſe in the ſeveral Points treated on in this ſhort Work than otherwiſe I ſhould have been, becauſe I intended at the ſame time that I publiſh'd theſe Papers of my own to accompany them into the World with a ſmall Treatiſe of Captain *Lewis Pain*'s, a very underſtanding honeſt Gentleman, who was taken by the *Spaniards* in *Europe*, and ſent over in 1707 to *America*, where he was kept in Chains ſeveral Years, being made uſe of as an Engineer, by which Means he had Paper, Pen and Ink allow'd him; and in

those Intervals he had of Leisure compos'd the following short Memoir of the State of the *Spaniards* there. At last he found a Way, by Means of a *Mesteze* Woman, to escape to *Jamaica*, but dy'd three Weeks after his Arrival. I purchas'd all his Manuscripts for ten *Pistoles*, and amongst them found this, with which I now present my Readers, containing a more exact and intelligible Draught of those truly *Terra Incognita*, the in-land *Spanish* Plantations, than any that (I at least) have any where met with. Chili.

The Love of my native Country prevail'd on me to enter on this Work, which I hope will afford at least Hints to some worthy Persons to improve the naval Strength of *Britain*, extend her Commerce, enrich her Inhabitants, employ her Hands, and exalt her Glory: Which are the utmost Wish of the Author of these Pages, and have been equally the End of his Endeavours, as they were the farthest Aim of his Ambition.

Thus far Governor Pullen. *I shall, in the next place, exhibit such Passages out of Captain* Pain's *Papers, which fell into the Governor's Hands, as may enable us to form a just Idea of the State of the* Spanish *Colonies in general, and of this Province of* Chili *in particular, and then proceed to make Remarks on the Governor's Scheme of sending a Squadron of Men of War into the* South-Seas *in case of a War with* Spain, *and the endeavouring to settle Colonies upon the Coast of* Chili.

Captain *Pain*'s Observations on the present State of *Spanish America*.

The Empire of the Catholick King in *America* (Captain *Pain* observes) is a sufficient Demonstration that Projects, how surprising soever in their Extent, are not always Chimera's. *Columbus*, when he first form'd that which

Chili.

with ſo much Glory he executed, offer'd it with all its Advantages to his Countrymen the *Genoeſe*. Thoſe in the Government of the publick Affairs examin'd it, and being ſatisfy'd with the Reaſons, were for encouraging the Propoſal; but Signior *Lucio Bernerdi* repreſenting to them the Condition of the State, and that any Conqueſts attained in this new-diſcover'd World would be almoſt impoſſible to be preſerv'd, and would ſerve but to open the Way to more powerful Princes, it was thereupon rejected, perhaps not without Cauſe. Then it was by *Bartholomew Columbo* offer'd to King *Henry* the Seventh of *England*, next to the King of *Portugal*, a great Encourager of Navigation, and laſtly, to *Ferdinand* and *Iſabella*, or rather to her only, for it ſeems agreed amongſt the *Spaniſh* Hiſtorians, that Queen claim'd a ſole and peculiar Right thereto, ſuffering none other but her own Subjects, the *Caſtilians*, to paſs over thither; which *Ferdinand* at her Deceaſe altered, and left all *Spaniards* as much Freedom in this reſpect one as another. Several brave Captains and well-appointed Ships of War ſoon after were tranſported thither; which quickly ſubdu'd not only the Iſlands *Columbus* had diſcover'd, but alſo conquer'd a great Part of the Continent, erecting two noble Governments on the Ruins of two vaſt Empires, *viz. Mexico* and *Peru*. Each of theſe hath its Viceroy, who has many great Officers under him, with ſome Places within the Bounds of theſe two general Diviſions, which yet are independent, and ſubject only to the Council in *Spain*; but the Form, the Maxims, and the End of their Policy, being throughout the vaſt Extent of their *American* Dominions the ſame, I ſhall,

for

for the ſake of being at once conciſe and perſpicuous, firſt deſcribe their Method of ruling, and then give a particular Deſcription of the ſeveral Provinces which are at preſent under their Dominion. Chili.

The only eſſential Maxim which runs through the whole political Œconomy of the *Spaniards*, in reſpect of their Territories here, is the keeping them in an abſolute Dependance upon *Spain*. All things therefore relating to their *American* Empire receive their firſt Form, and all Diſputes, all Projects, and all Deſigns of extending or improving their Dominions are conſider'd in their dernier Reſort by the Council for the *Indies* in *Spain*, compoſed of ſuch who both from Theory and Experience have attained a perfect Knowledge of theſe Countries. As to *America* itſelf, it is, as I have ſaid, divided into two large Governments, *Mexico*, called alſo *New-Spain*, and *Peru*, each of which hath its Viceroy, who is honour'd with a very extenſive Commiſſion. He hath for his Aſſiſtance a Council, and under him, in the large Provinces of his Government, ſeveral ſubordinate Officers, who wear the Titles of Preſidents, Alcaids, *&c.* appointed at the Will of the Viceroy, who, notwithſtanding ſome outward Forms and Shew of Limitations from his Council, is for all that abſolute; making by Preſents, Perquiſites and Traffick, an immenſe Wealth by large Sums, out of which he procures himſelf to be continu'd another five Years (his firſt and uſual Term) in his Government, and ſometimes more. The two chief Points which theſe Viceroys have committed to their Care is, the conſerving, and if it be any way practicable, the increaſing the King's Revenues in Plate, *&c.* which yearly

is

Chili. is carry'd from *Porto Bello* to *Spain*, and th keeping the Natives, *Criolio's*, *Meſteze* and *Indians* in Subjection, which is executed with the utmoſt Rigour, and is the Source of all the Evils that are felt here: And ſince the chief Knowledge that can be acquir'd of the true Situation of theſe Affairs is deriv'd from hence, it ſeems reaſonable I ſhould explain it a little farther.

The natural-born *Spaniards* are ſolely veſted with Command throughout all the *Spaniſh Indies*; they only enjoy Poſts of Honour, Profit and Truſt; and this it is which occaſions thoſe Draughts which have ſo drain'd and weaken'd their Dominions in *Europe*; for putting no Confidence even in the very firſt Generation of their Deſcendants, and abſolutely prohibiting all Strangers from going thither in their Service, a Neceſſity follows of ſending thither continually large Supplies, that they may be ſtill in a Condition to hold the Reins with equal Tightneſs. This Form of Government creates an irreconcileable Antipathy between the *European Spaniards* and the *Criolio's*, *i. e.* thoſe born of *Spaniſh* Parents in the *Weſt-Indies*. Theſe latter ſee with Indignation themſelves equally ſhut out from all conſiderable Preferment either in Church or State, the moſt palpable Partiality ſhewn in all judicial Deciſions between them and *Spaniards*, and in a word, the whole Policy of their Governors bent to diſtreſs and to deject 'em. The *Spaniards*, on the other hand, no ways ignorant of their Sentiments, and moreover continually jealous of their Deſire to throw off the *Spaniſh* Yoke, entirely exert their utmoſt Arts to enfeeble and enſlave them: They diſcourage, as far as they are able, all ſorts of Manufactures, of which

which being unprovided, they must of course purchase such as are sent from *Spain*; they also endeavour to hinder Plantations (except Estantians, or Beef Farms) that they may not have it in their Power to possess rich and improv'd Settlements, the Cause why those noble Countries are so little cultivated, and lastly, they make it their Aim to increase Luxury, Idleness, and Pusillanimity amongst them, that they more easily may be kept in Obedience; whence it apparently follows, Buccaneers and such like in small Numbers are able to do the utmost Mischief. And thus throughout all these vast rich and noble Provinces, the Inhabitants seem inspir'd with a Spirit of Dissention, which renders them continually restless and uneasy, making almost useless those Blessings indulgent Providence has confer'd upon them. Chili.

As to the Religion of the *Spanish Americans* it is universally Popish; and if there be any Degree in Bigotry amongst them, it is among the Natives, who almost adore the Priests, and are severely fleec'd by them, paying them out of all they have much more than the Tyth. Amongst the Clergy there are great Divisions, occasion'd chiefly by the national Quarrels between the *Criolio's* and the *Spaniards*, which have subsisted long, and seem rather to increase than diminish. The several Orders of Friars, as in *Europe*, are exceedingly jealous of one another, tho' they all find Ways to gain so much upon the Minds of the People, that there is not perhaps in the World finer and more costly Monasteries and religious Houses than are here, the Power, Riches, and Grandeur of the Church rising no where higher.

The

Chili. The Inhabitants of these Countries are, 1. Natural-born *Spaniards*. 2. *Criolio's*, of *Spanish* Parents, born in *America*. 3. *Mesteze*, born of *Indian* and *Spanish* Parents. 4. *Indians*, properly Natives. 5. *Negroes*, brought hither from *Africk*. As for the *Spaniards*, they differ little from those in *Europe*, except that they are more high and lofty than in *Spain*, as they are Lords here, possessing every thing, and living on the Labour of others. The *Criolio's* fall not a bit short of them in Vanity and Haughtiness; but, as I have said, are kept much under, never allow'd any considerable Preferment, and are even worse us'd than the *Indians* themselves; they are ignorant, lazy, and pusillanimous in general, tho' here and there, especially amongst the Church-men, some deserve a better Character. The *Indians* are a simple well-natur'd industrious People, much lessen'd in their Numbers by the excessive Cruelty us'd at first by their Conquerors; they are yet sufficiently press'd by the Yoke of Bondage, but whereever they are allow'd a Relaxation, they build convenient Cities, and so make themselves rich and flourishing. The *Negroes* here as elsewhere are made use of as Slaves.

As to the Commodities of this Country, I shall speak more particularly under the Description I shall give of its several Parts. In respect of its Trade, it is wholly domestick, except what is carry'd on with *Spain* in a yearly Ship from *Acapulco* to the *East-Indies*, and the prohibited Commerce they us'd to carry on with the *English*. The *Spaniards*, who, as I have said, own no other Maxim in their *Indian* Politicks, than to keep the *Americans* in absolute Subjection, are in nothing more careful than what relates to Traffick, having taken

taken every Precaution they were able to hinder their Intercourſe with other Nations both by heavy Fines and ſevere Puniſhments, which ſometimes have extended even to Death itſelf, and by maintaining Veſſels of Force in Pay, under the Name of *Guard de Coſta's*, in order to cruize about, and make Prize of whatever Ship they find within the Limits of their Seas. They likewiſe ſuppreſs ſome and carefully diſcourage all Manufactures from being carried on there, tho' for all that, ſome very tolerable Cloth is made in *Quitto*; for it is here as in ſome other polite Countries, a handſome Preſent to thoſe in the Adminiſtration is a certain Method to ſtrike Juſtice, or at leaſt the Miniſters of Juſtice, both blind and dumb. The Shipping here are neither numerous nor convenient, what there are continually paſs to and fro between the two vaſt Diviſions of this Empire; which as they were before the only Parts of the World known to the *Indians*, ſo they are now the only Places which have any Commerce together under the Government of the *Spaniards*: But as all is of late fallen under the Direction of the *French*, * it is highly probable they ſoon may be alter'd. Chili.

Chili lies next to the Province of *Peru*, and is abſolutely the fineſt Country and richeſt in all *America*, whether North or South. The Inhabitants are a hardy, valiant, and ſtubborn People, who having been ill uſed by the *Spaniards*, drove them out of their Country, killed their Governor, and are their inveterate Enemies to this Day: However, the *Spaniards* have now recover'd *Baldivia* and ſome other Places on the Sea-coaſt. *Paraguay*, or rather Captain *Pain*'s Remarks on *Chili*.

* This was wrote during the Wars in Queen *Anne*'s Reign.

Chili.

La Plata, is at the Back of *Chili*, in which the Catholick King hath the valuable Settlement of *Buenos Ayres*, one of the fineſt in *America*; the true *Paraguay* is entirely ſubject to and formed by the Jeſuites. *Terra Magellenica* is the laſt *Spaniſh* Settlement I have to mention, and to ſay Truth is difficult enough to determine whether it be ſettled or no; however, they claim it, and as they reckon it Part of their Poſſeſſion ſo ſhall I.

The Author's Remarks on Governor *Pullen*'s Project of ſettling Colonies in *Chili*.

I come in the laſt place to give my own Thoughts on Mr. *Pullen*'s Project, in caſe we ſhould ever have another War with *Spain*; and muſt agree with the Governor that nothing could more ſenſibly affect the Enemy than the interrupting their Trade with *Peru* and *Chili*, and that a Squadron might be well employ'd in the *South-Sea* for that end; but I ſhould rather chuſe the Iſland of *Chiloe* for a Station for our Ships than that of *John Fernando*'s, becauſe the latter lies four hundred Miles from the Coaſt, and the other in ſight of it, within three or four Leagues of the Continent in many Places; beſides, the Iſland of *Chiloe* is ten times larger, already well ſtock'd with Cattle, has many good Harbours in and near it, and is known to be well watered and fruitful where it is cultivated. And if any thing ſhould be wanting for the Fleet or Land-Forces, Proviſions might eaſily be procur'd from the neighbouring Continent, which is in view of it. Beſides, *Chiloe* is known to have Gold Mines in it, which might be wrought by our *Negroe* Slaves; and were we once fix'd here, we ſhould command the whole Coaſt of *Chili*, if not that of *Peru*. It would not be poſſible for the *Spaniards*, tho' aſſiſted by the Natives, to expell us from that important Iſland of *Chiloe*; and

as

as it lies between the Latitudes of 41 and 44 the Climate is not disagreeable to *British* Constitutions in point of Health and Convenience. All manner of *European* Grain and Fruits grow here, our Cattle multiply and improve to a Miracle, and it might be stock'd with them in a few Hours from the adjacent Continent if they were not to be met with there already. Chili.

But further. The Town of *Baldivia*, near which are the richest Gold Mines of *America*, lies almost in sight of the Island of *Chiloe*, and would infallibly fall into the Hands of the *English* if they were possess'd of that Island, there being no naval Power in those Seas that could protect that Port against us. And tho' I don't suppose the *Chilese* would willingly suffer us to open those Mines at first, yet were we once establish'd on the Continent, and supported by the Garrisons I propose to leave in *Chiloe*, and a Squadron of Men of War, we might traffick with the Natives, as the *Spaniards* do for the Gold they pick up, and possibly in time, by one Means or other, procure the Mines to be opened and wrought by our own *Negroes*; for the great Objection the Natives have against working them is, lest they should be put to that Drudgery themselves, as they formerly were by the *Spaniards*.

Objections to the settling Colonies on the Coast of *Chili* consider'd.

But I must confess there are some very considerable Objections against our attempting to plant Colonies on the Coast of *Peru* or *Chili*. As first, That it is a very long and hazardous Voyage of five or six Months, and if any Misfortune should happen by Tempests, or the Sickness of our Men, it would probably be defeated: That the *Dutch* actually attempted this, and fix'd themselves at *Baldivia*, and yet

Chili. were forced to relinquish it again: Nor have they ever thought fit to attempt it a second time, tho' they have frequently been at War with *Spain*.

It may be objected further, That neither the *French* or *Dutch* would sit still and see the *English* in possession of the Gold and Silver Mines of *America*, but would assist both the *Spaniards* and Natives in expelling us from thence.

As to the first, I do not think the Hazard so great as to deter us from attempting an Enterprize that would enrich the Nation to so great a Degree, and weaken our Enemies (as this Scheme supposes the *Spaniards* to be.) And as to the Miscarriage of the *Dutch* in the like Attempt, it is evident their Squadron and Land-Forces were too weak for such an Enterprize; and their losing their General, who projected it, was another great Disadvantage to them. But their principal Misfortune was his being succeeded by a Person that wanted Address, and gave the Natives such Jealousies of their Design to enslave them, as made them his Enemies. But what discourag'd the *Dutch* most from pursuing this Design, and making another Attempt, was a Suspicion very well founded, that neither the *French* or *English* would sit still and see them in possession of the Treasures of *Peru* and *Chili*.

And this is indeed the grand Objection against our attempting to fix Colonies there, and getting possession of the Gold and Silver Mines of *Peru* and *Chili*. The *French* and *Dutch* would no more permit us to be Masters of them than we should suffer either of those Nations to monopolize that Treasure: We are all agreed that they are much better in the Hands of the indolent

indolent unactive *Spaniard*, who makes but little use of them to the Prejudice of his Neighbours. Nay, most of the Plate he brings from *America* is employ'd in paying for the Merchandize of *Britain*, *France*, *Holland*, *Italy*, *&c.* which Countries perhaps have this way had as great a Profit, or a greater (at least some of them) than they could expect if they were Masters of the Mines. We should but send the same Goods to the *Spanish West-Indies* directly which we now send by the *Spanish* Flota: And had *Britain* as great a Share in that Traffick now as formerly, she would have no Reason to covet those Treasures; but unhappily for us, ever since the *French* used those Seas, and have had so good an Understanding with *Spain*, they have supplanted us, and we are now in a manner beaten out of that most valuable Branch of our Commerce, where for our Woollen Manufactures, which were dispersed all over *Spain* and *Spanish America*, we received chiefly Bullion in return: This Traffick is now in a manner lost to us, as we too sensibly feel at this Day. Chili.

And since we have lost the Affections and Trade of *Spain* in a great measure, and are never likely to recover them again by fair Means, the next best thing we can do is to render ourselves as formidable to the *Spaniards* as possible. It is certainly our Wisdom at this Day, if they persist to quarrel with us and insult our Merchants, to possess ourselves of some Port Towns, either on the Islands or Continent of *America*, that they may fear us, and be compel'd to admit us into a good Share of that Trade again, on Pain of seeing their own Commerce with *Mexico* and *Peru* interrupted and ruined; which I am apt to think might

Chili.

The Advantage of erecting Forts on the *Iſthmus of Darien.*

might be more effectually done by planting Colonies and erecting Forts on the *Iſthmus of Darien* than by any Settlements on the Coaſts of the *South-Sea*; for the firſt would give us the Command both of the *North* and the *South-Seas*, and make us Maſters of the Trade and Navigation both of *Mexico* and *Peru*. Not a *Spaniſh* Ship could ſtir either way if we had once fix'd ourſelves on the *Iſthmus of Darien*. We might then preſcribe to the *Spaniards* what Goods they ſhould take of us, and upon what Terms we pleaſed, which would be more to our Purpoſe than poſſeſſing the Mines of *Spaniſh America*, if that was feazible; for by this Means all our Handicrafts and Mechanicks would have full Employment, our Woollen Manufactures would be diſpoſed of to the beſt Advantage, and the Commerce of our Neighbours with the *Spaniſh Weſt-Indies* leſſen'd in Proportion to the Increaſe of ours.

Another Reaſon for planting Colonies on the *Iſthmus of Darien* rather than on the Coaſts of the *South-Sea* is, that the Voyage to *Darien* is but ſhort, not above ſix Weeks or two Months, whereas that into the *South-Sea* is a Voyage of five or ſix Months, and in caſe of a Misfortune we have no friendly Port to ſuſtain or refreſh our People.

We have alſo the Iſland of *Jamaica* a little Diſtance from *Darien*, from whence our Garriſons might be ſupply'd with Arms, Ammunition and Proviſions from time to time, and even with Men inur'd to the ſame Climate, and conſequently not ſo ſubject to the Diſeaſes of hot Countries as our Northern People are. Tho' it appears, that there are ſome Situations even upon the *Iſthmus of Darien* that are agreeable to *Europeans*. The *Scots* actually found

ſuch

such a one when they erected their Fort of *New-Edinburgh*, which was naturally so strong that with a very small Force they could have maintain'd it against all the Power of *Spain*, if we had not inhumanly and impolitickly deny'd them Provisions at *Jamaica* and other *English* Settlements. Chili.

I know every one will be apt to object the Misfortunes of Admiral *Hosier* and his Squadron to this Scheme. But that was a very different Case. They were oblig'd to lie before *Porto Bello*, the most unhealthful Place in *Spanish America*, for an unreasonable time, without going on Shore, or receiving any Refreshments from thence. The *Scots* fared much better, who pitch'd upon a Place, for aught appears, as healthful as any in *England*, and why we should not plant the same, or find out another as good, in case of a Rupture, I can't see. Nay, why we should not immediately endeavour it, since great Part of this Country is not under the Dominion of the *Spaniards*, I can see no manner of Reason. It would make them cautious how they disturbed our Trade by their *Guard de Costa's*, and readier to make us Satisfaction for their repeated Depredations.

THE

THE PRESENT STATE OF *LA PLATA*, OR *PARAGUA*.

CHAP. I.

Of the Name, Situation, and Extent of La Plata, *and of the Face of the Country.*

La Plata.

Plata, the Name.

THE Province of *La Plata* (ſometimes call'd *Paragua*) receiv'd its Name from the River *Plata*, which riſing near the City of that Name in *Peru*, runs to the South-Eaſt through this Country.

Its Situation and Extent.

It is bounded by the Country of *Amazons* on the North, by *Brazil* on the Eaſt, by *Patagonia*

Patagonia on the South, and by *Peru* and *Chili* on the Weſt, lying between the 12th and 37th Degrees of South Latitude, and between the 50th and 75th Degrees of Weſtern Longitude, being about 550 in Length, from North to South, and near as many Leagues broad in the middle of it; but towards the North, where it is bounded by *Brazil* on the Eaſt, and by *Peru* on the Weſt, it is not 200 Leagues broad. La Plata.

That Part of this Country which lies Weſt of the great River *Paragua* conſiſts of large Plains extending two or three hundred Leagues in Length, without any Trees, at leaſt any thing that looks like Timber, and ſcarce a Hill or a Stone to be ſeen in them; but in the Country to the Eaſtward of that River which borders on *Brazil*, there is a Variety of Hills and Valleys, Woods and Champaign. Face of the Country.

CHAP. II.

Of the Seas, Lakes, Springs, Rivers, and Seasons of La Plata.

La Plata, Seas.

THIS is for the most part an in-land Country, and only borders upon the *Atlantick Ocean* on the South Side of the Mouth of the River *La Plata*, near which the City of *Buenos Ayres* is situated.

Lakes.

Lakes they have in great Abundance, and some of them very large, particularly that of *Xarayes*, which our Geographers place in 15 Degrees South Latitude, and out of which the great River *Paragua* is said to rise.

There is another call'd the Lake of *Venoras*, in 31 Degrees South Latitude, about eighty Miles West of the River *Paragua*; and a third call'd *Caracaroes*, in 30 Degrees, 20 Leagues East of the River *Paragua*, which is an hundred Miles in Length and upwards; but there are not many Springs in the flat Country.

Rivers.

The Sources of their Rivers are some of them in the Mountains of *Andes*: those that rise there run to the South-East, and fall into the great River *Paragua*: Others rise in the Hills which separate this Province from *Brazil*, and running South-West, fall into the same River *Paragua*, which rises, as has been said, out of the Lake *Xarayes*, in 15 Degrees, and running almost directly South, unites its Waters with the *Uragua*, in 34 Degrees; after which

Paragua River.

which it is call'd the River of *Plata* till it reaches the *Atlantick Ocean*. La Plata.

2. As to that which is properly call'd the River of *Plata*, it rises, as has been observ'd, near the Town of *La Plata* in *Peru*, and running to the South-East, falls into the River *Paragua*, in 28 Degrees South Latitude, after which it loses the Name of *Plata*, and the united Stream is call'd *The Paragua* till it meets with the River *Uragua*, and then it resumes the Name of *Plata* again till it discharges itself into the Ocean. *Plata* River.

This River is said to have obtain'd its Name of *Plata* upon a double Account, 1. Because it rises near the Town of *La Plata*; and, 2. Because the Plate is sometimes brought down this Stream from *Peru* to *Buenos Ayres*.

3. The third considerable River is that of *Uragua*, which rising in the Mountains that divide *Brazil* from this Province, runs almost due South till it unites its Waters with the *Paragua*, in 34 Degrees South Latitude, and is almost as large as that River, being navigable for Ships several hundred Miles. *Uragua* River.

4. Out of the same Mountains to the Northward rises the River *Parana*, another very large Stream, which running almost parallel to the former, falls into the *Paragua* in 28 Degrees South Latitude. *Parana* River.

5. The fifth River I shall mention is the River *Salado*, so named from the Saltness of its Waters. This River rises in the *Andes*, and running to the South-East falls into the *Paragua* in 33 Degrees South Latitude. *Salado* River.

6. The River *Tercero*, which rises in the Mountains of *Andes*, and running almost due East, falls into the *Paragua* in 34 Degrees, not far from the Town of *Spirito Sancto*. *Tercero* River.

La Plata.

There are a multitude of other Rivers both on the Eaſt and Weſt of this Province which fall into the great River *Paragua*, and ſo fertilize the Plains that they abound in good Meadow and Paſture Grounds, which feed innumerable Herds of *European* Cattle, *viz.* Horſes, Cows, Sheep and Goats, which, from a few of each Species that were carry'd thither by the *Spaniards* two hundred Years ago, are multiply'd to Admiration.

Seaſons.

As to the Seaſons, the North Part of this Country, which lies within the Tropick of Capricorn, has in *November* and *December* annually, when the Sun is vertical, very heavy Rains, Storms and Tempeſts, as other Countries which lie in the ſame Latitude within the Southern Tropick have: And at this time all the flat Country is over-flow'd, their Ciſterns and Reſervoirs of Water are repleniſh'd, which ſerve them the reſt of the Year till the Rains return: Their Lands are moiſten'd and made capable of Tillage, and whenever theſe Rains fail it occaſions a Famine amongſt them: The Beginning of the rainy Seaſon is the time of ſowing and planting, and the fair Seaſon, which follows upon the Retreat of the Sun to the Northward, is their Harveſt.

Periodical Storms and Floods

But directly contrary, in that Part of the Country which lies South of the Tropick of Capricorn, it is their Summer (their fair Seaſon, when the Sun is neareſt them, *viz.*) in *November*, *December*, and *January*: And thoſe Rivers which riſe within the Tropicks, particularly *La Plata*, *Paragua*, and *Parana*, after the Rains are fallen within the Tropicks, ſwell and overflow their Banks as they paſs through the South Part of this Country, rendering it as fruitful as the *Nile* does *Egypt*; and indeed

indeed this is the Case in almost every Part of the World where their Rivers rise within the Tropicks; the periodical Rains swell them, and occasion them to over-flow their Banks, so that the flat Country near their Mouths appears like a Sea, and as the Water goes off the Husbandman begins to sow and plant his Lands, which are render'd exceeding fruitful by the Inundation; whereas without this it would be impossible for him to raise a Crop in many Places. Their Plains are so exceeding hot and dry, and there falls so little Rain in the Countries which lie just without the Tropicks, as this and *Egypt* does, that they would produce scarce any thing if they wanted these annual Floods: And I am apt to think it is when these are at the height, that the Mouth of the River of *Plata* appears to be two or three hundred Miles broad; for the same thing happens annually near the Mouth of the River *Niger* in *Africa*, near the Mouth of the *Ganges* in the *East-Indies*, and at the Mouth of every River almost that has its Source within the Tropicks, where the Rain falls in vast Quantities whenever the Sun is vertical. La Plata.

CHAP.

CHAP. III.

Of the Provinces, chief Towns, and Buildings of La Plata.

La Plata. Provinces.

La Plata may be thrown into two grand Diviſions almoſt equal in Extent, *viz.* 1. The Provinces on the Eaſt Side of the River *Paragua*; and 2. Thoſe that lie Weſt of the ſaid River. The Provinces on the Eaſt Side of the *Paragua* are thoſe of, 1. *Paragua Proper.* 2. *Guayra.* 3. *Parana.* 4. *Uragua.* Thoſe on the Weſt Side of the *Paragua* are, 5. *Tucuman*; and 6. *La Plata Proper.*

Paragua Province.

1. *Paragua Proper* is bounded by the Country of the *Amazons* on the North, by *Brazil* on the Eaſt, by *Guayra* on the South, and by the River *Paragua*, which ſeparates it from *Tucuman* and *Peru*, on the Weſt; at leaſt theſe are the Boundaries aſſign'd by Geographers. But it muſt be acknowledg'd that *Paragua Proper* is a perfect *Terra Incognita.* I meet with no Author or Traveller that pretends to give any Deſcription of it, or to know the Extent of it: And our Map-makers are ſo ingenious as not to incumber their Maps with the Name of one Town in all the Country.

Guayra Province and Town.

2. *Guayra* is bounded by *Paragua Proper* on the North, by *Brazil* on the Eaſt, by *Parana* on the South, and by the River *Paragua* on the Weſt. The chief Towns whereof are, 1*ſt*, *Guayra*,

1*ſt*, *Guayra*, ſituate on the River *Parana*, in 24 Degrees South Latitude. La Plata.

2*dly*, *St. Xavier*, ſituate on the Confines of *Brazil*, about an hundred Leagues to the Eaſtward of *Guayra*. *St. Xavier* Town.

3*dly*, *Conception*, ſituate on a River about an hundred Leagues South-Weſt of *St. Xavier*. *Conception* Town.

3. The Province of *Parana* is bounded by that of *Guayra* on the North, by *Brazil* on the Eaſt, by the Province of *Uragua* on the South, and by *La Plata Proper* on the Weſt. The chief Towns whereof are, *Parana* Province.

1*ſt*, *Acarai*, ſituated in 26 Degrees South Latitude, at the Mouth of a ſmall River which falls into the *Parana*. *Acarai* Town.

2*dly*, *Ignatio*, ſituated on the South Side of the River *Parana*, in 30 Degrees 30 Minutes South Latitude. *Ignatio* Town.

3*dly*, *Itapoa*, ſituated to the Northward of the River *Parana*, in 27 Degrees South Latitude. *Itapoa* Town.

4. The Province of *Uragua*, bounded by the Province of *Guayra* on the North, by *Brazil* on the Eaſt, by the River *Plata* and *Paragua* on the South and Weſt. The chief Towns whereof are, *Uragua* Province.

1*ſt*, *Purification*, ſituate on the River *Uragua*, in 29 Degrees South Latitude. *Purification* Town.

2*dly*, *La Capia*, or *Tapia*, ſituate on the Eaſt Side of the River *Paragua*, in 32 Degrees odd Minutes South Latitude. *Tapia* Town.

5. The Province of *Tucuman* (in which I include that of *Charco*) bounded by *Peru* on the North, by the River *Paragua* and *La Plata Proper* on the Eaſt, by *La Plata Proper* on the South, and by *Chili* on the Weſt. The chief Towns whereof are, *Tucuman* Province.

1*ſt*, *St.*

La Plata.

St. Jago Town.

1*ſt*, *St. Jago de Iſtero*, ſituate almoſt in the middle of the Province in 29 Degrees South Latitude, being a Biſhop's See and Univerſity, the Capital of *Tucuman*, and lies in the midway between the Mines of *Potoſi* and *Buenos Ayres*, being about 250 Leagues from each. The Plate is brought from *Potoſi* hither on the Backs of Mules, the Country of the *Charcas*, which lies to the Northward of this Province, being very mountainous; but from *St. Jago* to *Buenos Ayres* the Plate is carry'd in Waggons over one continued Plain, in which there are neither Woods or Hills to be ſeen.

Cordua.

2*dly*, *Cordua*, or *Corduba*, is ſituated about an hundred Leagues South of *St. Jago*, on the Road to *Buenos Ayres*. It is a Biſhop's See, and Univerſity, and has ſeveral fine Convents in it, but the Jeſuites infinitely excells all the reſt. As the Inhabitants trade chiefly to *Peru* and *Chili*, and take Gold and Silver in Return for their Merchandize, they are vaſtly rich, and the Clergy ſtill richer than the Laity: Their Churches and Monaſteries are magnificently built and adorned.

Salta.

3*dly*, *Salta* is ſituated on the Road from *St. Jago* to *Potoſi*, almoſt in the midway.

La Plata Proper.

6. The Province of *La Plata Proper* is bounded by the River *Plata* towards the North, by the River *Paragua* and the *Atlantick Ocean* on the Eaſt, by *Patagonia* on the South, and by *Chili* and *Tucuman* on the Weſt. The chief Towns whereof are,

Buenos Ayres.

1*ſt*, *Buenos Ayres*, ſaid to be ſo named from its healthful Situation. It ſtands on the South Side of the River *La Plata*, 50 Leagues from the Mouth of it, in 36 Degrees South Latitude, and in 60 Degrees of Weſtern Longitude, the River

River *La Plata* being seven Leagues broad at this Town, and navigable for Ships twenty Miles higher, but there they meet with a Cateract that spoils the Navigation. *Buenos Ayres* is a Bishop's See; there are in it five Churches besides the Cathedral, and several Convents, and it is defended by a Castle regularly fortify'd with upwards of forty Guns mounted on the Walls. It is a very great Mart, for hither all *European* Merchandize is brought, and sent from hence to *Peru* and *Chili*; and hither great Numbers of *Negroes* also are brought and sold to *Peru* and *Chili*, which Traffick the *English* have the Advantage of at present by virtue of the *Assiento Contract*, and Lands are assign'd them to keep their *Negroes* upon till they meet with a Sale. From *Buenos Ayres* are exported to *Europe* Part of the Gold and Silver of *Peru*, with vast Quantities of Hides and Tallow, and such other Merchandize as this Part of *America* affords. La Plata.

2*dly*, *Santa Fe*, or *St. Faith*, a well-built Town, situate in 32 Degrees odd Minutes South Latitude, at the Conflux of the Rivers *Salado* and *Paragua*, being almost surrounded with their Waters, and lies between two and three hundred Miles North-West from *Buenos Ayres* on the Road to *Peru*. *Santa Fe*.

3*dly*, *Assumption*, situate in 25 Degrees odd Minutes, at the Conflux of the Rivers *La Plata* and *Paragua*, between four or five hundred Miles North of *Santa Fe*. It is said to be a well-built populous Town, and the See of a Bishop Suffragan to the Archbishop of *La Plata* in *Peru*. As to the Natives, before the *Spaniards* came amongst them, they lived in Tents or slight Hutts, wandering from Place to Place like the wild *Arabs*. But this is to *Assumption* Town.

La Plata. be underſtood of thoſe that inhabited the Plains on the Weſt Side of the great River *Uragua*. Thoſe that dwelt on the Eaſt Side of the River lived in Woods or Caves; but neither the one or the other had any thing like a Town amongſt them till the *Spaniards* taught, or rather compel'd them to alter their Way of Life.

The Jeſuites, who are now in a manner Soveraigns of that Part of the Country which lies between *Brazil* on the Eaſt, and the great River *Paragua* on the Weſt, boaſt of their having reduced theſe ſavage Nations to Civility, and made Chriſtians of them purely by their Preaching. Certain it is, they govern them abſolutely both in Spirituals and Temporals. There is no Place in the World where the People expreſs a more profound Submiſſion to their Superiors. Among other things the Jeſuites relate, that they have prevail'd on them to abandon their brutiſh and vagrant way of Life, and dwell in Towns and Cantons, as the Miſſionaries call them, the Situation whereof is always choſen and aſſign'd them by theſe Fathers. And as the flat Country near the Rivers is annually over-flow'd (as has been related already) and yet in the dry Seaſon it is abſolutely neceſſary to have their Habitation near ſome Water, as well on account of their Plantations and Huſbandry, there being the greateſt Increaſe where the Inundation has been, as alſo for the Conveniency of Water Carriage, and an eaſy Communication with the ſeveral Cantons: For theſe and many other Reaſons, the Fathers pitch upon ſome fair Emminence on the Side of a Lake or River where they have Plenty of Wood, and here they lay out a Town after the *Spaniſh* Model, that is, they firſt form a Square, on the Side of which uſually

The *Indian* Towns.

usually stands a handsome Church, their Schools, the Father's House, who presides in the Canton, and the Halls and Offices of their Courts of Justice, and from the Square run broad handsome Streets of a great Length, having other Streets crossing them where the Canton is large. La Plata.

Father *Sepp* informs us, that they have twenty-six of these Cantons on the Banks of the Rivers *Uragua* and *Parana*, each of them containing eight hundred or a thousand Houses, and seven or eight thousand Souls, under the Government of two Missionaries. The Church of each Canton is usually built of Brick or Stone, and has a lofty Steeple, containing four or five Bells. It is as richly furnish'd and adorn'd with Plate, Vestments, and Utensils as the *Spanish* Churches in *Europe*: And besides the High-altar, they have frequently several Side-altars and Chappels. They have also Organs, Trumpets, Hautboys, Violins, and other instrumental Musick, and some exceeding good Voices; so that few Cathedrals are better accommodated than the Churches of these Cantons. Buildings.

The Father further relates, that the Station allotted him was the Canton of *Japegu*, the first of the twenty-six converted Cantons, situated on an Emminence near the River *Uragua*, in 29 Degrees South Latitude, in a Place formed for Pleasure and Delight; for to the Eastward of it runs that noble River, the Banks whereof are planted with large Timber Trees for several hundred Leagues, and there are some Islands in it lying in view of the Canton, which he describes as a perfect Paradise. On this River and the Islands in it, says the Father, I frequently take the Air,

La Plata. attended by my Disciples and a numerous Band of Musick. On the South-West and North the Canton is surrounded with the most fruitful Pastures in the World, of a vast Extent, and stock'd with incredible Numbers of *European* Cattle; Venison also is in great Plenty, such as Deer, wild Goats, and *Indian* Sheep; and they do not want Patridges, Pidgeons, and other Fowls wild and tame. They have also Shoals of excellent Fish in their Rivers.

But notwithstanding the pleasant and advantageous Situation of these *Indian* Towns thus laid out by the Jesuites, the Buildings were generally mean at first. A Brick and Tiled House was very rare. The Materials were usually Thatch and Clay, and one Room serv'd the whole Family: Here they lay promiscuosly, some on the Skins of Beasts on the Furniture. Floor, and others in Hammocks of Net-work; their Kitchen Utensils being only some few Pots, Pans, and Calabashes, with Wooden Spits, and Gridirons, on which they dry'd rather than broil'd their Meat.

But the Father tells us they begin to improve both in their Buildings and Furniture since the Jesuites have taught them to make Tiles, and instructed them in other mechanick Arts. He had in his Canton particularly six long Streets, the Houses whereof were cover'd with Tiles.

CHAP.

CHAP. IV.

Of the Perſons and Habits of the Inhabitants of La Plata ; *their Genius and Temper, Food, Exerciſes, and Diverſions ; and of their Mechanick Arts.*

IN this Country, as in every other Part of *South-America* almoſt, the firſt Diſcoverers were pleas'd to affirm the Natives were Giants and Canibals, tho' we meet with neither of them here at this Day. Father *Sepp* is perfectly ſilent in the Article of Canibals ; tho' he lived long amongſt them, and mentions the reſt of the Food they eat : And as to their Perſons he relates, that they are ſo far from being of a gigantick Stature, that they are not ſo tall as the *Europeans*. However, he deſcribes them to be big boned, ſtrong, well-ſet Men, and their Legs uſually pretty thick : That their Faces are Flat, and rather round than oval, and their Complexion olive : That they have black Hair as ſtrong as Horſe-hair, which they wear very long before they are converted, but then the Fathers oblige them to cut it ſhorter : That thoſe who have not yet conformed to the *Spaniſh* Cuſtoms, wear only the Skin of ſome Beaſt about the middle of their Bodies ; and the better Sort have another Skin which ſerves for a Cloak or Mantle ; the ordinary Women have their

La Plata.

Perſons.

Habits.

La Plata. their Arms, Shoulders and Breasts bare, and no Covering on their Heads but their Hair, which they wear of an immoderate Length. Their Ornaments are glittering Fish Bones, which they wear in their Ears and about their Necks and Arms in Chains, and their Chiefs have a kind of tripple Crowns upon their Heads. Boys and Girls go perfectly naked.

Genius and Temper. They seem to be a brave People, having defeated several considerable Bodies of *Spaniards* when they first invaded their Country. It was a great many Years before the *Spaniards* could fix themselves even in the Plains: But in the Woods and Mountains, to the Eastward of the River *Uragua*, the Natives defended themselves so well that they were never subdued, till the Jesuites found Means in the last Century to insinuate themselves into their good Opinion, and in a manner wheedled them into a Submission without making use of Force.

Food. The same Father *Sepp* informs us, that their principal Food is *Turky* or *Indian* Corn, which they beat to Flower in a Mortar and boil with Flesh, or make Cakes of it on the Hearth: That they eat all manner of Fish, Flesh, and Fowl, and are the greatest Gluttons in the World: That they are extreme lazy and indolent, and dull at Invention, but will imitate almost any thing you give them a Pattern of: That several of them are lately become such excellent Mechanicks that they make Organs and other musical Instruments as good as those that are brought from *Europe*; others are Watch-makers, Painters and Musicians, in all which Arts they have been instructed by the Jesuite Missionaries, who are taught the mechanick as well as liberal Arts before they are sent abroad, that they may have an Opportunity of

Excellent Mechanicks.

rendering

rendering themſelves uſeful and agreeable to every Claſs of Men, and without which they could never have propagated their Superſtition with that Succeſs in every Kingdom almoſt upon the Face of the Earth. But this they have done no where with ſuch Succeſs as here where the Country is their Property, and may juſtly be ſtil'd *The Jeſuites earthly Paradiſe.* La Plata.

The Exerciſes and Diverſions of theſe People are at preſent either rural Sports, ſuch as Hunting, Fiſhing and Fowling, or Dancing and Feaſting, as in other Countries: But their principal Diverſion, or rather Buſineſs, before the *Spaniards* brought them to remain in fix'd Habitations, was to rove about the Country from Place to Place, and view new Scenes every Day they lived. Exerciſes and Diverſions.

CHAP.

CHAP. V.

Of their Husbandry, Plants, Animals, and Minerals.

La Plata.

Husbandry.

THEY have a wooden Plow which does not enter the Ground above three Inches deep, and yet they have usually a very plentiful Crop however of *Turky* or *Indian* Corn.

Corn.

The Missionary of every Canton has commonly forty or fifty Acres sown with *European* Wheat, and frequently gives his *Indian* Disciples enough to sow their Grounds and make Provision for their Families; but instead of putting it to that Use, they usually devour it as soon as they have it. The Father adds, It may truly be said of these *Indians*, that they follow our SAVIOUR's Rule, *Not to be concerned for the next Day*; for if I happen to allot a Cow to a Family enough to serve them three or four Days (says he) they will often eat her in one and come the next Morning for more; so that we are forc'd to give to the Father, Mother, Son, and Daughter, and to the young Children to each his Piece of Flesh of five, six, seven, nay eight Pound, and that twice a Day; for if they had it at once they would eat it all at Noon, and want more by Night; for they are so voracious that the Mother will snatch the Meat from her Child, and eat all that comes in sight of them: For which Reason each Missionary has a great Barn, into which he

he forces them to lay up a certain Proportion of Corn, which he gives them back at Seed-time: Notwithstanding which they sometimes deceive the Missionary, or rather themselves. It is to be observ'd, that their Seed-time is in *June* or *July*, when the Missionary allots each *Indian* two or three Oxen to plow withal. One of these *Indians*, after a quarter of an Hour's Plowing, began to grow weary of the Sport, and finding himself and his Wife very hungry, they agreed to kill one of the Oxen, which they did accordingly, and having quarter'd the Ox (as they usually do) they put the Flesh on a wooden Spit, and (for want of other Fuel) made a good Fire with the Plow, throwing into it some of the Suet to increase the Flame: And thus they roasted and eat it. The Missionary perceiving the Smoak in the Field, began shrewdly to suspect the Truth, and making the best of his way to the Field, he soon saw by the Bones that he had not been mistaken in his Guess. He fell to chiding the *Indian*, who gave no other Answer, but that he being both tir'd and hungry he had made bold with the Ox, begging the good Father to give him another, which he was oblig'd to do, unless he would see him and his Family want Bread all the Year after. Such things often happen to the Missionaries, these *Indians* being naturally so lazy, that often (unless compel'd thereunto by Blows) they will not carry-in their *Turky* Wheat when it is ripe. La Plata.

You wonder, perhaps, which way they can be compel'd by Blows: This is done in the same Manner as we do our Children, only that instead of Birch they make use of a Scourge: This is perform'd by some *Indian* or other, who gives the Delinquent twenty-four or more

La Plata. Strokes, according to the Miſſionary's Order. This Correction they take very patiently, without any curſing or ſwearing, nay, without making the leaſt Noiſe; and if they happen to make any Exclamations, it is by the Name of *Jeſu Maria*. The Correction being over, they kiſs the Miſſionary's Hand, and return him Thanks into the Bargain, their Love and Reſpect being ſuch towards their Miſſionaries, that they take every thing without the leaſt Regret at their hands; which being imprinted in them from their tender Age, they can never ſhake off afterwards.

Fruits. As to their Fruits and Kitchen Gardens, Father *Sepp* gives us the beſt Account of them I meet with, in the Deſcription of his own Gardens in the Canton of *Japega*. Next to my Apartment, ſays that Father, I have a Garden divided into ſeveral Partitions, one whereof is my Flower-Garden, another my Phyſick-Garden (for they know not what a Phyſician or Apothecary means) another my Kitchen-Garden, beſides an Orchard and Vineyard. In the Kitchen-Garden grow all the Year round divers ſorts of Sallad, Herbs, Endive curl'd and not curl'd, Cichory-Roots, Parſnips, Turnips, Spinage, Radiſhes, Cabbages, Carrots, Beet-Roots, Parſly, Aniſeed, Fennel-ſeed, Coriander-ſeed, Melons, Cucumbers, and divers ſorts of *Indian* Roots. In my Phyſick-Garden I have Mint, Rue, Roſemary, Pimpernel, ſweet Marjoram, *&c.* My Flower-Garden produces white Lillies, *Indian* Lillies, yellow and blue Violets, Poppies, and many ſorts of *Indian* Flowers.

In my Orchard I have Apple and Pear Trees and Hazel-nut Trees; but theſe two laſt will bear no Fruit here, tho' they grow very lofty;

Peaches,

Peaches, Pomegranates, ſweet and ſower Lemons, ſweet and ſower Citrons, Vaninceys, and divers other *Indian* Fruits. La Plata.

My Vineyard has ſo many Vines, that ſometimes it may produce five hundred large Caſks of Wine in one Year, but this Year I have ſcarce had Grapes enough for my Table; the Reaſon is the vaſt Number of Piſmires, Waſps, wild Pidgeons, and other Birds, which have devoured all, tho' I have conſtantly kept eight *Indian* Boys on purpoſe to cleanſe them of the Piſmires: Add to this the North Wind, which has blown continually all this Year. A ſlender Recompence for the Pains I have taken in pruning, ſhaving, and attending the Vines; but Patience.

However, theſe frequent Miſcarriages of the Vines make Wine here a dear Commodity, a Caſk being ſold ſometimes for twenty or thirty Crowns, a great Price for ſuch an unwholſome Wine as this, which is not to be preſerv'd without a great deal of Lime, without which it would turn to Vinegar in a little time. This makes us uſe the Wine very ſparingly, and ſometimes we have ſcarce any in ſix Months, it being ſo ſcarce that we ſhall not have enough for the Communion Table.

He relates alſo, that in the Plains on the Weſt Side of the River *Uragua*, and particularly between the City of *Buenos Ayres* and *St. Jago*, there is not a Tree to be ſeen fit for Timber or Fuel of the natural Growth of the Country; but that the *Spaniards* have of late Years planted ſuch Abundance of Peaches, Almonds and Figs, that there are now vaſt Woods of them, which ſerve for Fuel at *Buenos Ayres* and other *Spaniſh* Towns: On the contrary, that the Country to the Eaſtward of the River

No Wood in the Plains.

Woods in the hilly Country.

La Plata. River *Paragua*, has large Woods and Foreſts well repleniſh'd with Timber, extending ſeveral hundred Leagues on both Sides the River *Uragua*, and that they have the fineſt Paſtures and Meadows in the World, both in the Eaſt and Weſtern Parts of *La Plata*; however, there is no mowing of Graſs, or making of Hay here, becauſe their Cattle feed all the Year up to the Knees in Graſs.

They have alſo whole Fields of Cotton, but no Hemp or Flax growing in the Country, which makes Linnen exceſſive dear.

Beaſts. They had no great Stock of Cattle before the *Spaniards* imported *European* Animals; the principal were their *Indian* Sheep, Goats, Swine, and Deer, already deſcrib'd, with a ſort of Hares, Armadillo's, and other *American* Animals, already deſcrib'd in treating of *Mexico* and *Peru*; but the *European* Cattle are ſo vaſtly increaſed of late Years in *La Plata*, that there is ſcarce a Canton which has leſs than three or four thouſand Horſes and Mules, with black Cattle in Proportion, and thirty or forty thouſand *European* Sheep in ſome of them: They abound alſo in Hogs, Goats, and Poultry, and have Plenty of Fiſh in their Rivers.

The ſame Father aſſures us, that they ſee ſometimes fourteen or fifteen thouſand Oxen feeding together that have no particular Owner, but any one ſends and takes what he pleaſes: And that the Jeſuites at *Buenos Ayres* ſold at one time, to the Shipping that came thither, twenty thouſand tall Oxen for twelve thouſand Crowns, which were valued only for their Hides, their Carcaſes being devour'd by wild Dogs or Birds of Prey.

In another Place the Father relates, that his Canton ſent out a Party of *Indians* two Days Journey

Journey into the Country, who within two Months brought in fifty thousand Cows, which were to serve for Provisions for the Canton the following Year; for they eat Cows Flesh altogether, and kill the Bulls only for their Skins, there being no Oxen properly so call'd in that Country. He adds, that the three Ships he went over with carry'd back to *Spain* thirty thousand Bulls Hides, without any Cows Skins amongst them: And these they had for little or nothing; tho' every Skin would make six Crowns in *Spain*, so prodigiously are *European* Cattle multiply'd in *La Plata*: And 'tis observ'd, that one Sheep is more valued there than three Horses, on account of their Wool; for a good Horse may be purchas'd for a Knife of the Value of Six-pence, and a Bridle is of more Value than three Horses, and a Horse-shoe is worth six Horses; but they seldom shoe their Horses here on account of the Scarcity of Iron, nor do they much need it, the Turf or Surface of the Ground being very soft, and few Stones in the Country. La Plata.

As to Minerals, it is certain there are few or none in the Plains or flat Country, and tho' 'tis reported the Jesuites have discover'd some Gold Mines in the Mountains that divide *La Plata* from *Brazil*, those Fathers do not acknowledge there are any. Minerals.

CHAP.

CHAP. VI.

Contains an Abſtract of the Hiſtory of La Plata, *and treats of the Religion of its ancient and modern Inhabitants, and of their Marriages.*

La Plata. Hiſtory.

AS the Natives of *La Plata* were divided into a multitude of Tribes commanded by their reſpective Chiefs, they knew nothing of the general Hiſtory or State of their Country when the *Spaniards* arriv'd: And what they receiv'd by Tradition relating to their particular Clans could be very little relied on as they were not acquainted with Letters, and had no way of recording the Actions of their Anceſtors. All that we know of their Hiſtory is, that thoſe on the Weſt Side of the River *Paragua* lived a wandering Life like the *Arabs*, and thoſe on the Eaſt Side of that River in Caves: That the *Spaniards* and *Portugueſe* made ſeveral Attempts in vain to ſubdue the Inhabitants of the Plains from *Brazil* and the Mouth of the River *La Plata*, in which they met with very great Oppoſition and Loſſes till the *Spaniſh* Governors of *Peru* and *Chili* attack'd them from the Weſt, and then they made a complete Conqueſt of that Country.

The firſt Adventurer that penetrated into this Country was *Alexius Garcia*, a *Portugueſe*, who

who was sent upon that Enterprize by the Governor of *Brazil*, in the Year 1524. He march'd quite cross *La Plata*, as far as the Borders of *Peru*, where having amass'd a vast Quantity of Plate, he was cut off in his Return with most part of his Men; and *George Sedenho*, with sixty *Portuguese*, having been sent out to support him before the Death of *Garcia* was known, was also cut in pieces by the *Indians* with all his Party. La Plata.

In the Year 1526, *Sebastian Cabot* being employ'd to make a further Discovery of *South-America* by the Emperor *Charles* V. enter'd the Mouth of the River *La Plata* (first discover'd by *John Diaz de Solis*, in the Year 1515) and sailing up that River as far as the Place where *Garcia* was kill'd, there met with the Plate he had got on the Confines of *Peru*, which he purchas'd of the Natives, who did not know the Value of it, for a Trifle, and imagining it to be the Product of that Country, concluded he had made a very important Discovery. Whereupon he erected a Fort on the North Side of the River, near the Place where the Town of *Assumption* now stands; he also detach'd *Alvaro Ramon* with one of his Ships to sail up the River *Uragua*, and get further Intelligence of the Mines he supposed were to be found near the Banks of it; but *Ramon* having proceeded three Days in that Voyage, his Ship run a-ground, and he and all his People were cut off by the Natives. After which Accident, *Cabot* remov'd from that Shore, and built another Fort on the South Side of the River of *Plata*, where the Town of *Spirito Sancto* now stands, and leaving a Garrison of one hundred and twenty Men in it, he return'd to *Spain* for a Re-inforcement of Troops

La Plata. Troops to profecute his Difcoveries: But the Natives furpris'd the Fort foon after he was gone, and put the Garrifon to the Sword.

However, *Cabot* repreſenting to the Court of *Spain* that *Plata* was one of the richeſt Countries in the World, and bringing ſo much Plate and Treaſure along with him as ſufficiently confirm'd his Report in the Opinion of the *Spaniards*, ſeveral of the beſt Families of that Kingdom made Intereſt to be ſent on an Expedition thither. Whereupon a Body of two and twenty hundred Landmen, beſides Mariners, were embark'd for the River of *Plata*, among whom, it is ſaid, there were thirty Heirs of noble Families, the whole being commanded by *Don Peter de Mendoza*, the Emperor's Sewer, who arriving at the Mouth of the River *La Plata*, founded the Town of *Buenos Ayres*, in the Year 1535, but not without great Oppoſition from the Natives, for they attack'd a Body of three hundred *Spaniards*, commanded by *James Mendoza*, the Governor's Brother, and kill'd him with two hundred and fifty of his Men upon the ſpot; and Proviſions growing very ſcarce at the ſame time, the Governor thought fit to return to *Spain*, leaving *Oyola* his Deputy Governor behind him with Part of the Troops. But *Oyola* thought fit to abandon *Buenos Ayres*, and built the Fort of *Aſſumption*, on the North Side of the River *Plata*, whither he remov'd with his half-ſtarv'd Garriſon. The Governor *Alvaro Nunez Cabeza de Vaca* afterwards made further Diſcoveries, planting Colonies as far as the North of *Tucuman*, and he and his Succeſſor rebuilt *Buenos Ayres* and ſome other Towns near the Mouth of the River *La Plata*: And in 1553, *Francis de Aquire* being detach'd from *Chili* with two hundred

hundred Men by *Valdivia*, built the City of *St. Jago*, the Metropolis of *La Plata*; and two Years afterwards *John Gomez Zarita* was sent from *Chili* to *La Plata* with another Body of Troops, who built the Town of *Cordua*, and made an entire Conquest of all the Country as far as the River *Paragua*; but the Provinces to the Eastward of that River were never conquer'd by Force, but reduc'd, as has been said, by the Address of the Jesuites under the Dominion of the Crown of *Spain*; and that Court, in return for this Service, confer'd the Property of that Country on those Fathers. If it be demanded how the Jesuites were able to effect this, I have already intimated, that they are instructed in every Art and Science when they are sent upon these Missions. They don't only understand Physick and the Mathematicks, but almost every mechanick Art, by which Means they become exceeding useful where they reside. Their administring Physick *gratis* infinitely obliges the People, and by their Skill in Mathematicks they surprise the ignorant Natives, who are ready to adore them as Gods, and readily resign their Understandings and Consciences to their Direction. But what prevail'd still more on these People to submit to the Jesuites was, the Protection they gave them against the *Spanish* Officers and Soldiers, and preventing their imposing on them those rigorous Services they did on other *Indians* under their Government. They even furnish'd the Natives with Arms and Ammunition, and instructed them in the Art of War, whereby they were enabled to repell the Attacks both of the *Spaniards* from the West, and of the *Portuguese* from *Brazil* on the East, who harrass'd their Country for several Years till they

La Plata.

Qualifications of the Jesuite Missionaries.

La Plata. found they had ſo formidable an Enemy to deal with that they loſt more than they got by their Incurſions into *La Plata*; and the Jeſuites and their Subjects who inhabit one of the fineſt Countries in the World between the River *Paragua* and *Brazil*, have of late Years enjoy'd an uninterrupted Peace in the greateſt Affluence and Plenty imaginable.

Religion of the Natives, according to *Techo*. As to the Religion of the Natives of *La Plata*, if we are to credit *Techo* the Jeſuite, he relates, that they worſhipped the Sun, Moon, and Stars, and Thunder and Lightning, as the *Peruvians* did, and had Temples dedicated to the Sun; which is not at all improbable, ſince this Country is contiguous to *Peru*, and Part of it was under the Dominion of their *Inca's*; and in ſome Parts of the Country, the Jeſuites relate, they worſhip'd Trees, Stones, Rivers, Animals, and almoſt every thing animate and inanimate; which likewiſe may be true, becauſe other Nations in *South-America* have done the like. But as to the great Serpent the Fathers tell us of, that was as big about as an Ox, and one of the Objects of their Adoration, we may without Offence ſuſpend our Belief of ſuch Relations till we find it prov'd that there ever were any ſuch Monſters on the Face of the Earth.

But whatever the ancient Religion of *La Plata* was, the People are now in general as good Catholicks as the Jeſuites can make them, and the moſt obedient Vaſſals of that Order.

Marriages according to Father *Sepp*. As to the Marriages of theſe *Indians*, anciently they allow'd both of Poligamy and Concubinage, and the greateſt Objection they have to Chriſtianity the Fathers inform us is, their confining them to one Woman. At preſent the Jeſuites have the entire Direction of this Matter: And Father *Sepp* tells us, when

a Virgin is fourteen and a Lad sixteen, they do not suffer them to remain longer unmarry'd for fear of worse Consequences, having found by Experience, that when the Maidens and young Men continue in a single State for any considerable time, they have found Means to pair themselves. The Objection which in other Places is made against such young Marriages takes no place here, where there is no Dispute about Dowry or Settlements, or which way they will maintain themselves; all this they leave to God Almighty and our Care (says this Father) never applying themselves to any Trade or Profession unless we oblige them to it, and upon the Marriage it is the Missionary that provides the Hutt, it is he that provides the Wedding-Cloaths, *viz.* five Yards of coarse Woollen Stuff for each; a Bed they never want, Bull-Hides being cheap enough; and the Wedding Dinner is made with a fat Cow, which is likewise presented by the Missionary. La Plata.

Their Marriage Agreement consists only in two Articles, *viz.* The Woman promises to fetch what Water the Husband wants from the River, in lieu of which he engages to furnish the Kitchen with Fuel. We allow them no Musick nor Dancing at their Weddings, but so soon as they are marry'd and have heard Mass, the Bridegroom goes his way and the Bride her's: And if the Missionary has presented them with a fat Cow, a little Salt, and a few Loaves, they invite their Parents to Dinner, and so make the best Cheer they can. There is one thing peculiar in their Marriages, *viz.* that here the Man does not woe the Woman, but on the contrary the Woman the Man: In this Case the Maid comes to the Missionary

La Plata. and ſays, *Pay*, *i. e.* Father (for ſo they call us) I have an Inclination to marry ſuch or ſuch a one, if you will be pleaſed to give your Conſent. Whereupon the Miſſionary ſending for the Perſon, ſays, My Son (for ſo we call them) ſuch or ſuch a one is deſirous to be marry'd to you, are you contented ſhe ſhould? unto which if he replies *Yes* (as they ſeldom do otherwiſe) then the Match is made, and wants nothing but the Prieſt's Bleſſing.

THE

THE PRESENT STATE OF THE *AMAZONS.*

THE Country of the *Amazons* obtain'd its Name from a supposed Nation of Female Warriours that were said to inhabit the Banks of one of the greatest Rivers in the World, which runs through this Country from West to East. There is not a Circumstance related by the Ancients of the *Asiatick Amazons* which has not been applied to these by the Moderns, tho' all the Ground there was for these Fictions seems to have been, that there were seen some Women mingled with the Men that came to gaze on the *Spaniards* when they first invaded their Country.

Amazons.

Name of the Country.

And here it is not easy to avoid reflecting how exactly the first *Spanish* Adventurers copied

Amazons. copied after the romantick Writers among the Ancients.

In one Part of *America* they furniſh us with Giants, in another with Monſters, in a third with Canibals, and here with a Race of *Amazons*. They ſeem to have been a little dull of Invention, that they ſtruck out no new Whimſeys or Monſters in Nature, but barely tranſcrib'd or imitated the fabulous Relations they met with in the ancient Poets and other Writers, who intended no more perhaps than beautiful Allegories, or to diſplay their Talents at Invention, never dreaming that After-ages would look upon ſuch Flights of Fancy as hiſtorical Facts. But to proceed in the deſcribing the Situation of this Country, which has obtain'd the Name of the *Amazons*. It is bounded by the Equator, which ſeparates it from *Terra-Firma* on the North, by *Brazil* and the *Atlantick Ocean* on the Eaſt, by *Brazil* and *La Plata* towards the South, and by *Peru* on the South-Weſt, lying between the Equator and the 15th Degree of South Latitude, and between 50 and 75 Degrees of Weſtern Longitude.

The Situation and Extent.

As we have no other Accounts of this Country than what we have receiv'd from thoſe who have been ſent by the *Spaniards* and *Portugueſe* to make Diſcoveries either up or down the River *Amazon*, I ſhall give an Abſtract of the ſeveral Adventures of this kind, and then collect from them the State of the Country.

The River *Amazon* diſcover'd by *Gonzalo Pizarro*.

Gonzalo Pizarro, Brother to the Marquis (Conqueror of *Peru*) was the firſt that accidentally diſcover'd this mighty River, in the Year 1540, when he was Governor of *Quitto*, the moſt Northern Province of *Peru*. Some *Indians* had aſſur'd him, that to the Eaſtward of

Quitto,

Quitto, on the other Side the Mountains of *Andes*, were Countries that abounded not only in Cinamon but in Gold, more than any Countries the *Spaniards* had hitherto discover'd, tho' they were exceeding difficult of Access on account of the Rocks and Precipices they must first pass, and the Woods and Morasses on the other side of them, and the little Provisions they must expect to meet with in a desart and uninhabited Country; and what would render their March extremely troublesome were the heavy Rains that fall under and near the Equator for the greatest part of the Year. But nothing could deter *Pizarro* from an Expedition wherein he expected to meet with Mountains of Gold in a literal Sense. He made extraordinary Preparations therefore for this difficult and hazardous Undertaking, assembled three hundred and forty veteran *Spaniards*, of whom one hundred and fifty were Horse, and took with him four thousand able-body'd *Indians*, some of them Soldiers, but most of them employ'd in carrying his Ammunition, Provisions and Baggage, and driving some thousands of *Indian* Sheep and Hogs before them, which he propos'd to kill by the way. And thus provided, he set out from the City of *Quitto* at *Christmas*, in the Year 1539. Amazons.

An Account of which Expedition we find thus related by *De la Vega*, in his *Royal Commentaries of Peru*. The General (says the royal Historian) having continued his March some few Days, there happen'd so terrible an Earthquake that many Houses in the Villages where they then were fell to the Ground; the Earth opened in many Places, and so terrible were the Lightnings and Thunder, and so very quick, The Difficulties of the first Discoverers.

Amazons. quick, almoſt without Intermiſſion, and ſo fierce were the Rains, which pour'd down like Buckets of Water, that the *Spaniards* much admir'd at the Nature of that Climate, ſo different from any thing they had ever ſeen in the Northern Parts of *Peru*.

After this Storm was over, which continued forty or fifty Days, they prepar'd to paſs the *Andes*, or ſnowy Mountains, for which tho' they had made good Proviſion, yet the Climate was ſo extremely cold by the great Quantities of Snow which fell, that many *Indians* who went thin in their Cloathing periſh'd. The *Spaniards*, that they might make haſte out of the Snow and Cold, left their Cattle and Proviſions behind them, expecting to find ſufficient Supplies of all things at the next Place where the *Indians* inhabited. But the matter ſucceeded otherwiſe; for having paſs'd the Mountains, they enter'd into a Country ſo barren that it was void of all Inhabitants, wherefore doubling their Journies to get out of it, they came at length to a Province and People call'd *Cumaco*, ſituated at the Foot of a Vulcano, where they found Plenty of Proviſions; but the Country was ſo wet, that for the Space of two Months they remain'd there it never ceas'd one Day from raining.

In this Province, call'd *Cumaco*, or *Canela*, which is ſituate under the Equinoctial, or very near it, grow the Cinamon Trees, as they call them, which they went in ſearch of as well as Gold. Theſe Trees are lofty, bearing a Leaf as big as the Laurel, with a ſmall ſort of Fruit which grows in Cluſters like the Acorn: Some grow wild in the Mountains, and produce Fruit, but not ſo good as that which is gather'd from the Trees which the *Indians* plant

plant and cultivate in their own Grounds. Amazons.

The *Spaniards* found that in *Cumaco* and the adjacent Countries the *Indians* went naked, without any Cloaths, only the Women, for Modesty sake, wore a little Flap before them: The Climate is so excessively hot that they need no Cloaths (says *De la Vega*) and is so subject to Rains, that they would become rotten in a short time if they had them.

Gonzalo Pizarro leaving the greatest Part of his People in *Cumaco*, took with him a small Party of such as he esteem'd most active, to search for some Pass leading out of the Country; for as yet the Way for an hundred Leagues together had been nothing but Mountains, Desarts and Woods, which they were forced to lay open by the Hatchet and Strength of their Arms; and sometimes the *Indians*, who were their Guides, deceiv'd them, carrying them out of the Way by Mountains and Desarts and difficult Passages (where they sustain'd Hunger and Cold, without any other Sustenance than Herbs and Roots, and wild Fruit) and conducting them through By-ways, to avoid the Country of their Friends and Confederates.

With such Labours and Sufferings as these, which may rather be fancy'd than describ'd, they came at length to a Province called *Cuca*, which was more populous than any they had formerly passed. Here Provisions were plentiful, and the Cacique, or King of the Country, came in a peaceable manner to welcome them, and brought them Provisions.

In these Parts they remain'd two Months, in expectation of the Coming of those *Spaniards* whom they had left in *Cumaco*, and had directed to follow them by such Traces and Marks as they should find of the Way they

Amazons. had taken before them. Their Companions being come up and refreſh'd after their Journey, they march'd by the Banks of a great River for the Space of fifty Leagues, in all which Way they neither found Bridge nor Ford.

At length they came to a Place where the whole River falls from the Top of a Rock above two hundred Fathom high, which Cataract, or Falling of the Waters, makes a Noiſe that is heard above ſix Leagues from the Place, at which, tho' the *Spaniards* were amazed, yet it was much more wonderful to ſee, above forty or fifty Leagues lower, that immenſe Quantity of Water contracted and ſtraitened within a Channel made by one great Rock. This Channel is ſo narrow, that from one Side to the other it is not above twenty Foot wide; but ſo high, that from the Top, where the *Spaniards* made their Bridge, was two hundred Fathom from the Water. *Gonzalo Pizarro* and his Captains conſidering there was no other Paſſage to be found over the River, and that it was neceſſary to paſs to the other Side, becauſe the Country was barren on that Side where they then were, agreed to make a Bridge over the Top of the Rock.

The *Indians* on the oppoſite Side, tho' few in Number, ſtoutly defended the Paſs, but were driven from it by the Fire of the Muſkets; and the Paſs being now clear, the *Spaniards* fell to work on the Bridge of Timber, which coſt much Labour before the firſt Beam could be paſſed over to the oppoſite Rock, by the Help of which a ſecond was more eaſily laid, and then other Pieces of Timber, ſo that by degrees they formed a Bridge, over which both Men and Horſe ſecurely paſſed: After which they march'd by the Side of the River

over

over Mountains so thick with Wood, that they were forced to open their Way again with the Hatchet. Through these Difficulties they came at length to a Country call'd *Guema*, where the *Spaniards* and their *Indian* Servants were forced again to sustain themselves with Herbs and Roots, and with the tender Sprouts of Trees. Thus with Famine and the perpetual Rains many of the *Spaniards* fell sick and dy'd. They arriv'd afterwards at a Country where the Natives were more civiliz'd than the former; for they eat Maiz or *Indian* Corn, and clothed themselves with Garments of Cotton; but still the Climate was subject to violent Rains. Amazons.

Whilst they stay'd in this Place they sent Parties out every Way to see if they could discover a better Country; but they all return'd with the same News, that they met with nothing but wild Mountains full of Bogs, Lakes and mooriſh Grounds, over which was no Passage. Hereupon they resolv'd to build a Brigantine or Vessel to ferry over from one Side of the River to the other, which now was become two Leagues broad. In order whereunto, the first thing to be done was to set up a Smith's Forge for Nails and Iron-work, which they made of the Horses Shoes they had kill'd for Food, and some Iron Bars they had carry'd with them; but Iron was now become more scarce than Gold. They build a Brigantine

Gonzalo Pizarro, tho' chief Commander, was the first that laid his Hand on the Ax to hew down the Timber, and to make the Charcoal which was requisite to forge the Iron, and was always the most forward in every Office, tho' never so mean, that so giving a good Example, none might excuse himself.

Amazons. self. The Rosin which issued from certain Trees served them instead of Pitch, and their old Shirts and Rags were made use of instead of Ockam to caulk the Seams of their Vessel, which being in this manner finish'd, they launched into the Water with great Joy and Triumph, imagining that herewith they should quickly escape out of all their Dangers and Difficulties. But it proved otherwise; for a few Days shewed the contrary, and gave them Cause to repent that they had ever made it.

They embark their Gold and Baggage. All the Gold they had gather'd, which amounted to above the Value of one hundred thousand *Pieces of Eight*, with abundance of Emeralds, some of which were of great Value, as also their Iron and Iron-work, and whatsoever was of any Esteem, they laded on their Vessel; and such as were weak and sick and not able to travel were also put on Board. And now after a Journey almost of two hundred Leagues they departed from this Place, taking their Course down the Stream, some by Water and others by Land, keeping such a convenient Distance each from the other, that at Night they always join'd and lodg'd together; which Journey was perform'd with great Difficulty, for those on the Land were forced to open a great Part of their Way with Hatchet and Bill, and those on the Water were put to hard Labour to keep the Vessel from being forcibly carry'd down by the Current from the Company on Shore, when at any time their Passage was interrupted by some Mountain; so that they could not keep near the River: They then ferried to the other Side by Help of their Vessel and four Canoes they had made; but this was a great Hindrance to them, and very grievous to Men starving and perishing with Hunger. Having

Amazons.

Having in this manner travelled for the Space of two Months, they at length met with certain *Indians*, who by Signs, and by some Words which were understood by their *Indian* Servants, gave them Intelligence that about ten Days Journey from thence they would find a Country well peopled, plentiful of Provisions, and abounding with Gold and other Riches of which they were in pursuit; and farther signified to them, that this Country was situated on the Banks of another great River which join'd and fell into that wherein they now were. The *Spaniards* being encourag'd with this News, *Gonzalo Pizarro* made *Francisco de Orellana* Captain of his Brigantine or Vessel, and thereon put fifty Soldiers a-board, giving them Orders to pass down the Stream to that Place where the two Rivers met, and that there leaving the Goods he had then on Board, he should lade his Vessel with Provisions, and return towards them with all the Speed imaginable to relieve them in that great Distress, many of the *Spaniards* being already dead, and more *Indians*, who from four thousand were now reduc'd to half the Number.

Francisco de Orellana with fifty Soldiers embarks on Board the Brigantine.

According to these Orders, *Francisco de Orellana* enter'd on the Voyage, and in the Space of three Days, without Oars or Sail, only by Force of the Current, was carry'd to the Confluence of the two Rivers mention'd by the *Indians*, but found no Provisions there; whereupon *Orellana* pretending it was impossible to return to *Pizarro* against the Stream, resolved to set up for himself, and accordingly casting off all Care and Regard for *Pizarro* and his Companions then in Distress, he resolved to continue his Voyage to the Mouth of the River, and then go over into *Spain* and obtain

He runs away with the Vessel.

Amazons. obtain the Government of thoſe Countries for himſelf: But this cruel Reſolution was oppoſed by many of thoſe who were then with him, who told him plainly, that he was not to exceed the Orders of his Captain-General, and that it was inhuman to forſake his Companions in their great Diſtreſs, knowing how uſeful and neceſſary that Brigantine was to them. In this Point none were more zealous than Friar *Gaſpar Carvajal*, and a young Gentleman Native of *Badajoz*, named *Hernando Sanchez de Vargas*, whom thoſe of the contrary Opinion made their Chief, and were ſo warm in their Debates on this Subject, that the Quarrel had come to Blows had not *Orellana* with fair Words appeaſed the Tumult: However, he manag'd ſo artfully afterwards with thoſe who had oppos'd his Intention, that he entic'd them all over to his Party, and then rudely treated the poor Friar whom he had expos'd to the ſame Famine and Miſery (had it not been for Reſpect to his Habit and Profeſſion) as he did *Sanchez de Vargas*, whom he left in that Deſart encompaſſed with high Mountains on the one Side and a great River on the other to periſh by Famine.

Franciſco de Orellana afterwards found ſome Proviſions amongſt the Nations on the River below; but becauſe the Women came out at firſt with their Huſbands to oppoſe his Landing, he gave it the Name of the River of *Amazons*.

Proceeding yet farther down this River, they found theſe *Indians* more civil than the other, who receiv'd them amicably, admiring the Brigantine and Men ſo ſtrangely habited. Theſe treated the *Spaniards* hoſpitably, and furniſh'd them with as much Proviſion as they had

had occasion for. *Orellana* remain'd here therefore several Weeks, and built another Brigantine, for they were very much straitned for Room in the first, and having fitted it up as well as they were able, they adventur'd out to Sea, sailing along the Coast of *Caribiana*, about two hundred Leagues to the Northward, till they arriv'd at the Island of the *Holy Trinity*, having escap'd such Dangers that they often gave themselves over for lost. At this Island *Orellana* bought a Ship, with which he sail'd into *Spain*, where he requested his Majesty's Commission for the Conquest and Government of the Country of the *Amazons*, as he was pleas'd to stile it. To make this Enterprize appear the more desirable, he alledg'd that it was a Country abounding with Gold, Silver, and precious Stones, and in Testimony thereof produc'd the Riches which he had brought with him; whereupon his Majesty granted the Request he made for the Government of what he should conquer there, and *Orellana* was join'd by five hundred Volunteers, the greatest Part of them brisk young Gentlemen, and Persons of Honour, with whom he embark'd at *St. Lucar* for the River *Amazon*, in the Year 1554, but he lost one of his Ships in his Voyage thither, and met with so many Difficulties and Misfortunes before he had sail'd an hundred Leagues up the River, that he abandon'd the Enterprize, and dy'd in his Return home.

Amazons.

Orellana comes into the *Atlantick Ocean*.

Sails to *Spain* and obtains the Government of the *Amazon* Country.

Dies in an Attempt to subdue it.

And now let us return to *Gonzalo Pizarro*, whom we left in such Distress after *Francisco de Orellana* was run away with the Brigantine: And first he built ten or twelve Canoes and other Floats to pass from one Side the River to the other, as often as his March was interrupted

Amazons. rupted by impaſſable Mountains or Moraſſes, and proceeded in that manner down the River in hopes to meet the Brigantine they had diſpatch'd for Proviſions. At the End of two Months they arriv'd at the Point where the two Rivers met; but inſtead of their Brigantine and the Proviſions they expected to meet with, they found only the honeſt *Hernan de Vargas*, who with Conſtancy of Mind, like a Man of Honour, had endur'd with great Reſolution Famine and all the Miſeries to which he was expoſed in that Solitude; and from him they receiv'd a particular Account of the Villany of the perfidious *Orellana*, which *Pizarro* could ſcarce credit, having hitherto entertain'd an entire Confidence in the Man.

Pizarro's Diſtreſs. The General, however, putting a good Face upon the Matter, chear'd up his Men, and encourag'd them with Hopes of better Fortune, telling them, that they ought, like *Spaniards*, to bear with Equality of Mind theſe Labours and Diſappointments, and yet greater if any ſuch could be: That the more Danger the more Honour, and the greater would their Renown be in Hiſtory, which would tranſmit the Fame of their Adventures down to future Ages. The Soldiers obſerving the Chearfulneſs of their General, who had moſt Cauſe to reſent *Orellana*'s Uſage of him, took heart, and continued their March by the Banks of the River, ſometimes on one Side and ſometimes on the other.

But the Difficulty of carrying the Horſes over upon Floats (for there ſtill remain'd about fifty of their Number) cannot be expreſs'd, any more than the Famine they were expos'd to: However, the *Indians* who remain'd alive ſerved their Maſters with great Faithfulneſs

and

and Affection in these Extremities, bringing them Herbs, Roots, wild Fruit, Snakes, and other Vermin they found in those Mountains, all which went down with the *Spaniards*; nor could they have subsisted without such kind of Food. Amazons.

And now *Gonzalo Pizarro* being resolved to return to *Peru*, left the River and took his Way more to the Northward, which proved shorter by an hundred Leagues than the Way they came, but no less difficult, being forced to cut their Way frequently through the Woods, and for Want of other Provisions they now eat up all their remaining Horses and Dogs; for the four thousand *Indians*, who used to purvey for them, all dy'd in this Expedition; and there were but fourscore *Spaniards* who return'd to *Quitto* alive, and these almost without Cloaths, and so sun-burnt and emaciated with the Fatigue and Want of Food, that their nearest Friends scarce knew them. *Pizarro* returns to *Quitto*.

With such insupportable Hardships and Hazards did the first *Spanish* Adventurers struggle in search of Gold, even when they had before acquir'd enough one would have thought to have satisfy'd the most boundless Avarice. I question whether *Gonzalo Pizarro*, who was one of the Proprietors of the Mines of *Potosi*, had not amass'd more than a Million of Crowns before he enter'd upon this Expedition.

Peter de Orsua, who afterwards obtain'd a Commission from the Governor of *Peru*, in the Year 1550, to subdue the Provinces bordering on the River *Amazon*, embark'd on the River *Xauxa* in *Peru* with seven hundred armed *Spaniards* and two thousand *Indians*, and sail'd down the Stream two or three hundred Leagues till he came to the Confluence of the *Peter de Orsua* attempts to discover this Country.

Amazons. two Rivers *Amazon* and *Xauxa*, and continuing his Voyage afterwards two hundred Leagues further, was kill'd in a Mutiny of his Men, which put a Period to that Enterprize.

Several other Adventurers made the like Attempts afterwards, but moſt of them prov'd unfortunate, till two Monks and ſome Soldiers, who ſet out with *John de Palacios* from *Quitto* in *Peru*, in the Year 1635, and embarking on the River *Amazon*, where it firſt becomes navigable, ſail'd the whole Length of it till they arriv'd at *Paria* in *Brazil*, which lies on the South Side of the Mouth of this great River: But their Captain, *John Palacios*, was kill'd in a Skirmiſh with the Natives in their Paſſage.

Two Friars ſucceſsful in diſcovering it.

The Friars having given an Account of their Voyage to the Governor of *Brazil*, he order'd Sloops and Boats to be provided, on which he embark'd ſeventy *Portugueſe* and two thouſand *Indians*, and in *October*, 1637, order'd them to ſail up the River, under the Command of *Texeira*, a Mariner of great Skill and Experience, who by the Help of the Eaſterly Wind, which generally blows here, ſail'd up againſt the Current till he arriv'd at *Les Reyes*, a Town of *Quitto* in *Peru*; and the River not being navigable higher for his Veſſels, he left them there and went by Land to the City of *Quitto*, where he was kindly receiv'd by the *Spaniſh* Governor, and furniſh'd with whatever he wanted to facilitate his Return to *Brazil*: And the Governor ſent Father *De Acuna* and another *Spaniſh* Jeſuite down the River with him, ordering them to embark for *Spain* when they arriv'd at *Brazil*, and communicate the Obſervations they ſhould make in this Voyage to his Catholick Majeſty;

Texeira ſails up the River to *Peru*.

and

and *Texeira* embarking again at *Les Reyes*, on the River *Amazon*, with the two Jesuites, in the Month of *February*, 1638-9, arriv'd at *Paria* in *Brazil* the *December* following; from whence *De Acuna* and his Companion went over to *Spain*, and publish'd a Relation of their Voyage in 1640, which is the best Account of this River and the Countries bordering upon it that is extant. Amazons.

From these several Relations we learn that the Head of the River *Amazon* rises in *Quitto*, almost under the Equator, in 76 Degrees of Western Longitude, and running South-East till it unites its Waters with the River *Xauxa*, continues its Course almost due East in the Latitude of 4 Degrees for 26 Degrees of Longitude, and then returning to the North, by many Mouths discharges itself into the *Atlantick Ocean*, almost under the Equator. They compute, that with all its Turnings and Windings it does not run less than 1800 Leagues; and observe that it is ordinarily 2 or 3 Leagues broad; but in the rainy Season over-flows the flat Country on the right and left, and at the Mouth of it is fifty or sixty Leagues broad; that from the River *Negro*, which falls into it about five hundred Leagues from the Mouth, it is generally thirty or forty Fathom deep, and up higher from eight Fathom to twenty; that there is one Streight where it is not above a quarter of a Mile over, and that there are near two hundred Rivers which fall into it from the North to South. The Sources of the River *Amazon*. Its Course and magnitude.

The Adventurers in general agree that the Air is cooler than could be expected so near the Equator, which proceeds from the heavy Rains that occasion the numerous Rivers to over-flow their Banks one half of the Year; The Air. Weather.

Amazons. from the cloudy Weather, from the Shortneſs of the Days, which are never more than twelve Winds. Hours long, and from a briſk Eaſterly Wind that blows frequently from the *Atlantick Ocean* quite through the Country ſo ſtrong that Veſſels are enabled thereby to ſail againſt the Stream, and perform the Voyage almoſt as ſoon up the River *Amazon* as down it, which I perceive is a Voyage of eight or ten Months, where no ill Accident interrupts the Paſſage. Travellers alſo obſerve, that they have moſt Thunder. terrible Thunder and Lightning great Part of the Year; but this is no more than what is uſual in other Countries that lie under the Equinoctial: And it may properly be ſaid they Seaſons. have two Summers and two Winters every Year; that is, fair Weather when the Sun is at the greateſt Diſtance from them in either Tropick; and foul when it is vertical, as it is at the vernal and autumnal Equinox.

Trees and Fruits. The Trees here are Ever-greens, and they have Fruits, Flowers and Herbage all the Year round. Their Fruits are Cocoa-nuts, Anana's, or Pine-apples, Guava's, Banana's, and ſuch other Fruits as are uſually found between the Tropicks. Their Foreſt and Timber Trees are Cedar, *Brazil* Wood, Oak, Ebony, Log-wood, Iron-wood, ſo call'd from its Weight and Hardneſs, the Canela, or Cinamon, as it is call'd from its ſpicy Bark, and ſeveral ſorts of dying Wood.

Corn, Roots, and Plants. They have alſo *Indian* Corn and the Caſſavi Root, of which they make Flower and Bread, Tobacco, Cotton, Sugar, Yams, Potatoes, Sarſaparilla, and other Roots. They have alſo Animals. Plenty of Veniſon, Fiſh and Fowl, among which they mention Deer, *Indian* Sheep, and Goats, Guano's, Manatee, Armadillo's, Tortoiſe, and

and vaſt Flocks of Parrots of all Colours, which ſerve them for Food, and their Feathers for Ornament. Amazons.

The Natives are of the ordinary Stature of Men: They have good Features, long black Hair, and black Eyes, and their Complexion is a Copper Colour, whereas the Natives of *Africa* in the ſame Latitude, on the oppoſite Side of the *Atlantick Ocean*, are all *Negroes*. Perſons of the Natives.

As to the Nation of *Amazons*, which were ſaid to give Name to this River and Country, they are now no where to be found, any more than the Giants and Canibals the firſt Adventurers mention'd. The People are generally acknowledg'd now to have as much Humanity or more than the *Europeans* who invaded them, and to have a Genius for Painting and ſome mechanick Arts, particularly they make good Joyners Work, tho' they have no other Tools than ſuch as are edg'd with ſharp Stones. They alſo ſpin and weave themſelves Cotton Garments, and are pretty decently cloath'd: Their Earthen-Ware alſo is much admir'd; but I don't perceive they have learnt to make Bricks, or build with Stone, the Materials of their Houſes being of Wood, Thatch and Clay, but one Floor, and built uſually on ſome Emminence near the River Side to avoid the Inundation. The Stories of *Amazons*, &c. fictitious. Genius. Habits.

The Banks of every River, as they relate, are inhabited by a diſtinct People, commanded by their reſpective Caciques or Soveraigns, who are diſtinguiſh'd from their Subjects by Coronets of beautiful Feathers: Their Arms are Bows, Arrows, and Spears, and they make War on each other by Water as well as Land, but have no other Boats than Canoes, which are great Trees made hollow: Whatever their Government. Wars.

Amazons. their Pretenſions are for War their principal End in it is to make Slaves; however, 'tis ſaid they uſe their Slaves with great Humanity, and never ſell them to Foreigners.

Religion. They worſhip Images, and carry them with them in their Expeditions; but I don't find they have Temples dedicated to any God, or any Order of Prieſts. They countenance both Poligamy and Concubinage. As to the Gold and Silver Mines the *Spaniards* went in ſearch of when they firſt diſcover'd the River of *Amazon*, I can't learn they have yet met with any here, tho' they find ſome Gold in the Rivulets that fall into the River *Amazon* near its Sources in *Peru*. After the River is ſwoln to any Magnitude there is no more Gold to be found; and this I don't doubt is the Reaſon that neither the *Spaniards* or *Portugueſe* have planted any Colonies in the lower Part of it. The *Spaniards* made great Efforts from *Peru* to ſubdue this Country while they had a Notion it abounded in Gold, but ſeem to have neglected the Diſcovery ever ſince they were undeceiv'd in this Particular; and indeed they have a larger Dominion already in *America* than they can defend, which is a ſufficient Reaſon for their ſlighting ſuch Countries as do not produce Gold or Silver.

No Gold in this Country.

THE

THE PRESENT STATE OF THE *Spaniſh Iſlands.*

CHAP. I.

Of the Iſland of Cuba.

THE three principal *Spaniſh* Iſlands that remain to be deſcrib'd are thoſe of *Cuba*, *Hiſpaniola*, and *Porto Rico*. Spaniſh Iſlands.

The Iſland of *Cuba* is ſituated between the 20th Degree of Northern Latitude and the Tropick of Cancer, and between the 74th and 87th Degrees of Weſtern Longitude, 30 Leagues North of *Jamaica*, and about as many South of Cape *Florida*, being 300 Leagues in Length, and generally between 20 and 30 Leagues broad. Situation and Extent.

The Natives had given it the Name of *Cuba* before *Columbus* arriv'd there, who at firſt call'd it *Juanna*, 'tis ſaid, and afterwards *Ferdinandino*, from King *Ferdinand*, who was King of *Spain* when Name.

Spaniſh Iſlands.

when this Iſland was diſcover'd; but it ſoon recover'd its *American* Name of *Cuba*, which it retains to this Day.

Face of the Country.

A Ridge of Mountains run almoſt through the Iſland from Eaſt to Weſt, well repleniſh'd with Timber and other Trees, but the Land near the Shore is generally a plain champaign Country.

Rivers.

There are abundance of Rivulets which run from the Mountains North and South, but none of them large, falling into the Sea after a very ſhort Courſe, and no Place in the World has better Harbours, the chief of which are

Harbours.

St. Jago, at the Bottom of a large Bay at the Eaſt End of the Iſland, and that of the *Havana*, on the North-Weſt, which is one of the ſtrongeſt and moſt commodious Havens in *America*.

Seaſons.

They have no Winters here, but great Rains and Tempeſts uſually when the Sun is vertical in *July* and *Auguſt*, which cools the Air however, and renders the Climate tolerable. The faireſt Seaſon is when the Sun is at the greateſt Diſtance from them, and then the Morning is much the hotteſt Part of the Day; for towards Noon the Sea Breeze begins to blow pretty briſkly, and continues to do ſo till the Evening. From *October* to *April* they have briſk North or North-Weſt Winds in theſe Seas at the Full and Change of the Moon, and in *December* and *January* they frequently increaſe into Storms, tho' this be their fair Seaſon: And *Dampier* obſerves of the *Iſle of Pines*, ſituated near the South-Weſt Coaſt of *Cuba*, that it rains there when it is fair every where elſe; and if we may credit our Mariners, they ſcarce ever have a fair Day on the *Iſle of Pines*. The Trade-Wind in theſe Seas blows from the North-Eaſt.

I don't

Spaniſh Iſlands.

I don't find the Iſland of *Cuba* divided into Provinces, tho' ſome relate that the Eaſt Part of it is ſubject to the Governor of *St. Jago*, and the Weſt to the Governor of the *Havana*. Provinces.

The chief Towns in the Iſland are, 1. *St. Jago*. 2. The *Havana*. 3. *Baracoa*. 4. *Porto del Principe*. 5. *Santa Cruz*. 6. *Trinidad*; and 7. *Spirito Sancto*. Chief Towns.

1. *St. Jago* is ſituated (as has been already obſerv'd) at the Bottom of a fine Bay in the South-Eaſt Part of the Iſland, which, with ſome ſmall Iſlands in the Bay, form a very commodious Harbour: It was built by General *James Velaſquez*, who reduc'd this Iſland under the Dominion of the *Spaniards* about the Year 1514: And it may ſtill be ſtil'd the Capital of *Cuba*, being the only Biſhop's See in it, but is very much upon the decline at preſent, both the Biſhop and civil Governor reſiding at the *Havana*, for the moſt part. *St. Jago.*

2. The *Havana*, ſituate at the North-Weſt Part of the Iſland, about five hundred Miles to the Weſtward of *St. Jago*, of which that celebrated Traveller *Gemelli Carreri*, who was at the *Havana* in the Year 1698, gives us the following Deſcription, together with ſome other Particulars relating to the Country, and the Voyage of the Galleons from thence to *Spain*, which I am confident will be acceptable to my Readers. The *Havana.*

The *Havana* (ſays *Gemelli*) is a little City half a League in Compaſs, ſeated in a Plain, and in the Latitude of 23 Degrees 20 Minutes. It is almoſt round, inclos'd with poor low Walls on the Land Side, and defended on the other Part by Water. The Inhabitants are about four thouſand Souls, *Spaniards*, *Mulatto's*, and *Blacks*, who live moſt of them

Spaniſh Iſlands.

Some Deſcription of the People.

in low Houſes. The Women are beautiful, and the Men ingenious. The Governor hath the Title of Captain-General of the Iſland, and adminiſters Juſtice with the Aſſiſtance of an Aſſeſſor, call'd a Lieutenant, who is appointed by the Council of the *Indies*.

It is very dear living there; for three Ounces of Bread coſt fifteen Grains of *Naples* Money, that is, about Three-pence *Engliſh*, and half a Pound of Meat the ſame Price. A Hen is worth a Noble, and Fruit and other Things proportionably; ſo that a Man can ſcarcely live under two *Pieces of Eight* a Day, eſpecially when the Galleons are there: Tho' the Climate is temperate, Wheat has not throve there for ſome Years, and the Reaſon is not known; ſo that what comes from abroad to the Bakers is dearly paid for: But this Want is in ſome meaſure ſupply'd by a Root call'd Yuca, (the Caſſavi Root) whereof they make Bread, boiling and then preſſing it to get out a venemous Juice there is in it. They bake it upon little Earthen Stoves, and this Bread ſerves not only the Poor but the better Sort who have large Families. This Root produces neither Leaves nor Seed, but they ſet Bits of it in the Ground to grow again.

The Iſland is three hundred Leagues in Length from Eaſt to Weſt, and about thirty in Breadth. The Inhabitants are poor, having no Trade but Tobacco and Sugar; and all the Labour falls upon the *Blacks*, of whom their Maſters exact four *Royals* (two Shillings) a Day, and ſix when the Fleet is there, and at leaſt three of the Women: Now what can a miſerable Black do who has two Maſters, as it often happens? In *Peru* the Maſters Avarice is greater; for they ſend the black Women to be

be got with Child, like Cows, and if they prove barren they sell them. Spanish Islands.

The City *Havana* is encompass'd on two Sides by its safe Harbour, which is so deep that the Ships anchor within a few Steps of the Shore. It is defended by three Castles, the chief of them call'd *Del Morro*, on the Left-hand of the Mouth of it; the second *De la Punta*, or *Of the Point*, on the Right; and the third call'd only *The Fort*, on the Right of the last: We shall speak of them at large hereafter. Fortifications of the *Havana*.

Friday the 3d I saw the little but neat Church call'd *Santo Christo del Buen Viage*, serv'd by secular Priests. Next Day that of the *Recolets*, seated on the best Ground in the City, and in it twelve beautiful Chappels, and in the Monastery Cells for fifty Fathers. Churches.

The Weather, which had continu'd serene and warm as Summer, on *Thursday* the 9th, chang'd so cold with Rain, that I believe the like has scarce ever been felt in a Place lying in 23 Degrees and 20 Minutes of Latitude. Weather.

Wednesday the 15th I heard Mass in the Church of *St. Clare*, which has seven Altars well adorn'd. The Monastery will contain an hundred religious Women and Servants, who are there cloath'd in blue.

Thursday the 16th the Chests of *Pieces of Eight* (Crowns) began to be put on Board the Galleons, the King's held three thousand each, and the rest two thousand, in all amounting to thirty Millions, as well belonging to the King as Merchants, for Goods sold at the Fair of *Porto Bello*, carry'd on between the Traders of *Seville* and those of *Lima*. The great Faith these Traders repose in one another is very remarkable; for when once agreed about the Price, they interchangeably deliver one another Treasure of the Galleons.

Spaniſh Iſlands.

the Bales of Goods and Cheſts of *Pieces of Eight* without ſeeing any thing of the Contents, but giving entire Credit to the written Particulars they deliver to one another; for afterwards the Bales and Cheſts are opened in the Preſence of publick Notaries, and if they find any thing amiſs, the Companies of *Seville* and *Lima* are to make all good. This Year the Company of *Lima Traders* paid five thouſand *Pieces of Eight* for Goods found over and above in the Bales at the foregoing Fair. The ſame is practiſed at *Acapulco* when the Galleon comes from *Manila*.

A rich Pearl.

There was alſo deliver'd to the Maſter of Plate (which is an Officer on Board the Galleons, who had Charge of all the Plate and Jewels) a-board the Admiral, a Pearl weighing ſixty Grains, ſhaped like a Pear, by *F. Francis de la Fuente* a Jeſuite, to be deliver'd to the King. This Pearl was taken at *Panama*, in the *King's Iſland*, by a Black belonging to a Prieſt, who being rich would not ſell it to the Preſident of *Panama* for fifty thouſand *Pieces of Eight*, nor to the Viceroy of *Peru* for ſeventy thouſand, both of them being to ſend it to the King, but ſaid, *He would carry it to his Majeſty himſelf.* Being come to *Porto Bello* with the Pearl, which he call'd *La Perſeguida*, or the perſecuted, he there dy'd before he went a-board, and therefore committed it to the Care of the aforeſaid *F. Fuente*, who told me that it was larger than that call'd *La Peregrina*, but ſomewhat duller. The Black had his Liberty for his Reward.

Peruvians rich.

There went on Board the Galleons twenty Doctors of *Peru*, being the Sons of *Spaniards* and *Indian* Women going to Court for Preferment, and the leaſt that every one of them carry'd

carry'd was thirty thouſand *Pieces of Eight*. Spaniſh Iſlands.

Monday the 20th, going abroad a ſhooting, I kill'd a great many of thoſe Birds they call Cotorrera's; ſome of them have black and green Feathers, and others blue, others black and green Wings, their Breaſts red, and half the Head white. They are not amiſs to eat. Returning home I kill'd two Guacamaija's, which tho' they do not talk, are ſo finely colour'd that the beſt Pencil can ſcarce equal them. The Country is very delightful, being full of little Houſes with Gardens and Farms where there is no want of *Indian* Fruit. I found a ſort of Snails, very large like the Sea Snails. Birds.

Friday the 24th, I ſaw the Church and Monaſtery of the *Auguſtinians*, the firſt has thirteen little Altars, the latter very poor Dormitories. Churches.

Sunday the 26th, I was at the Mother Church of the City, where the Biſhop officiates with the Clergy belonging to it, his Reſidence being at *Havana*, tho' the Cathedral is at *St. Jago* where the Canons reſide.

Tueſday the 28th, I heard Maſs in the Church of *St. John de Dios*, which is ſmall and has nine Altars. The Monaſtery is alſo ſmall, and the Hoſpital is for Soldiers; its Revenue is twelve thouſand *Pieces of Eight per Annum.*

On *Saturday*, the 1ſt of *February*, arriv'd the long-wiſh'd-for Veſſel with Proviſions for the Fleet, being ſeventeen hundred Quintals, or a hundred Weight of Biſcuit, ſix hundred Load of Meal, Fiſh and other Neceſſaries for the Galleons.

Tueſday the 4th I went to the Hermitage of *St. James*, a Church built by the Biſhop within

Spaniſh Iſlands. within the Walls of the City for his own particular Devotion, well adorned, and with an Apartment for him to retire to ſometimes.

Wedneſday the 5th I ſaw the Caſtle of the *Point*, which is very ſmall, and has four Baſtions.

Forts. *Monday* the 10th, going to viſit the Caſtellan *D. Antony de Roxas*, I had the Opportunity of ſeeing the Caſtle they call *The Fort*: Its Compaſs is ſmall, but it has four good Baſtions, and a Platform towards the Mouth of the Port, well furniſh'd with Braſs Cannon.

Fruits. There are two particular ſorts of Fruit at *Havana*, which do not grow elſewhere. One is like a Heart, call'd *Guanavana*, green without, and has ſome thorny Prickles within, made up of white Morſels of an unpleaſant Taſte, between ſweet and ſour, with ſome Stones. The Tree is as big as that which bears the Anana's, or Pine-apple; the other is exactly like an Orange on the Out-ſide, and within has a white and red Pulp of a ſweet Taſte. The Tree is as tall as a Pear-tree; the Leaf on the one Side is green, and on the other of a Cinnamon Colour. Of *European* Fruit there grow Quinces, Oranges, Lemons, Pomgranates, and other Sorts.

Cattle. The Mountains are full of wild Hogs, Cows, Horſes and Mules. Of Birds there

Birds. are abundance, eſpecially Parrots and Patridges, with blue Heads, and as for thoſe that are fit for the Cage, there is great Plenty of thoſe they call Chambergos.

Forts. *Monday* the 3d of *March* I ſaw the Caſtle *Del Morro*, built upon a Rock on the left of the Mouth of the Harbour, which it defends with a Platform of twelve Pieces of Cannon, call'd *the Apoſtles*, which lie level with the Water,

Water. There are in all about fifty-five Guns in the Caſtle. The Ditch about it is cut out of the Rock and filled by the Sea. Abundance of the Birds call'd Cardinals are brought over from *Florida*; I ſaw the People belonging to the Galleons give ten *Pieces of Eight* a piece for ſome of them, and ſix for the worſt. Upon Computation, they ſaid, there had been eighteen thouſand *Pieces of Eight* laid out upon thoſe fooliſh Birds, notwithſtanding the deplorable Loſs of *Cartagena*, and the expenſive Delay of keeping the Fleet three Years in *America*. Spaniſh Iſlands.

Saturday the 8th Proclamation was made forbidding any that belong'd to the Fleet to ſtay in *Havana* upon Pain of Death, and in the Evening a Cannon was fir'd to warn all abroad.

To return to the Deſcription of the Towns;

3. *Baracoa* is ſituated at the North-Eaſt Part of the Iſland, upon a good Harbour for ſmall Veſſels, but is not capable of receiving large Ships. *Baracoa.*

4. *Porto del Principe*, ſituated on the North Side of the Iſland, about three hundred Miles to the Eaſtward of the *Havana*. *Porto del Principe.*

5. *Santa Cruz*, ſituated alſo on the North Side of the Iſland, thirty Miles Eaſt of the *Havana*, upon a very good Harbour. *Santa Cruz.*

6. *Trinidad*, ſituate at the Bottom of a Bay on the South Side of the Iſland; and *Trinidad.*

7. *Spirito Sancto*, ſituate alſo on the South Side of the Iſland, about thirty Miles South-Eaſt of *Trinidad*. *Spirito Sancto.*

This Iſland produces the ſame Animals as the neighbouring Continent; but there is no Place where the Seas and Rivers abound more with Crocodiles, from whence ſeveral ſmall Animals. Crocodiles

Iſlands

Spaniſh Iſlands. Iſlands upon this Coaſt have obtain'd the Name of *Caymans*, or *The Crocodile Iſlands*. Tortoiſes and Manatee are alſo exceeding plentiful here, and the *European* Cattle the *Spaniards* brought hither are ſo vaſtly increas'd that they run wild, and are kill'd chiefly for their Hides and Tallow, and their Horſes are ſaid to be the beſt bred in *America*. Their Timber Trees are Cedar, Cotton, Oaks, Pines, Palms, Cocoa-nut Trees, and ſuch others as are uſually found between the Tropicks. Their Fruits Plantains, Banana's, Anana's, Guava's, Oranges, Lemons, Grapes, and other Fruits introduc'd by the *Spaniards*; but their Wine turns ſower and will not keep, as is the Caſe in other Countries ſituate in hot Climates. They have alſo Ginger, Caſſia, Fiſtula, Aloes, and long Pepper; but as to Cinamon, which our Voyage Writers talk of, and other fine Spices, they are only to be found in the *Eaſt-Indies*.

Tortoiſes. Manatee. Cattle.

Trees and Fruits.

Bitumen. There are a kind of bituminous Fountains in the Iſland, which produce a Subſtance that ſerves inſtead of Pitch: And there is a Stone Quarry we are told where vaſt Quantities of Flints are found of the Shape and Size of Cannon Balls.

Stones.

Mines. Travellers mention alſo Gold Mines in this Iſland; but if there were any they are exhauſted, tho' there are ſome of Copper not far from *St. Jago*.

Hiſtory. *Columbus* firſt diſcover'd this Iſland in the Year 1492, as related in the Introduction; but in all the Voyages he made to *America*, he never found that it was an Iſland, and the *Spaniards* fixing firſt at *Hiſpaniola* on account of the Gold Mines there, this Iſland of *Cuba* was not entirely conquer'd till the Year 1512 or 1514, *Don James Velaſquez* having the Honour

Spaniſh Iſlands.

Honour of reducing it. The *Spaniards* have frequently been diſturb'd in the Poſſeſſion of it by their Enemies and the Buccaneers, particularly Captain *Cliff* took the capital City of *St. Jago* in the Year 1601, and Captain *Morgan* the Town of *Porto del Principe*, in the Year 1669; for the reſt I muſt refer to the Introduction.

CHAP. II.

Of the Iſland of Hiſpaniola.

Spaniſh Iſlands.

Situation.

THE Iſland of *Hiſpaniola* is ſituated between 18 and 20 Degrees of North Latitude, and between 66 and 75 Degrees of Weſtern Longitude, being about eighty Leagues in Length, and generally about forty Leagues broad, and lies fifteen Leagues to the Eaſtward of *Cuba*, twenty Leagues Eaſt of *Jamaica*, and upwards of an hundred Leagues North of *Terra-Firma*.

Name.

The Name the *Indians* gave it anciently was *Bohio*, but *Columbus* call'd it *Hiſpaniola*, or *Little Spain*, probably in Honour to the Crown of *Spain*, which employ'd him in this Diſcovery; and it was frequently call'd *Dominica*, or *Domingo*, from its Capital.

Face of the Country.

As to the Face of the Country, there are Mountains in the middle of it well planted with Foreſt Trees, and other Mountains more barren, in which formerly were Gold Mines, that ſeem to be entirely exhauſted at this Day. On the North and South are fine fruitful Plains, watered with abundance of pleaſant Rivers which fall from the Mountains, of which thoſe on the South Side of the Iſland are the largeſt. There are alſo ſeveral Woods and Groves of Timber and Fruit Trees: And no Iſland hath more ſecure and commodious Ports. The Air

Air and Seasons are much the same here as in the Island of *Cuba*. The Island may be thrown into two grand Divisions, *viz.* The South-East Part, which is subject to the *Spaniards*, and the North-West now subject to the *French*. Spanish Islands. Division.

The chief Towns under the Dominion of the *Spaniards* are, 1. *St. Domingo*, or *Dominica*. 2. *Higuey*. 3. *Zibo*. 4. *Cotuy*. 5. *Aso*, or *Azua*; and 6. *Conception*. Chief Towns of the *Spaniards*.

1. The City of *St. Domingo*, situated on a commodious Harbour on the South Side of the Island, near the Mouth of the River *Hayna*, in 18 Degrees 20 Minutes South Latitude and in 70 Degrees of Western Longitude. This Town is built after the *Spanish* Model, having a large Square in the middle of it, about which are the Cathedral and other publick Buildings; and from this Square run the principal Streets in a direct Line, being cross'd by others at right Angles; so that the Form of the Town is almost square. It is most delightfully situated, having a fine fruitful Country on the North and East, a large navigable River on the West, and the Ocean on the South, and is the See of an Archbishop, to whom the Bishop of *St. Jago* in *Cuba* and several others on the Continent of *Honduras* and *Terra-Firma* are Suffragans. It is also a royal Audience, the most ancient in *America*, and the Seat of the Governor of the Island. There are in it several fine Churches and Monasteries, and it is so well fortify'd that it defended itself in the Year 1654 against one of the most formidable Fleets and Armies that ever was sent to *America* by the *English*. The Inhabitants are *Spaniards*, *Mestices*, *Mulatto's*, and *Albatraces*, a sixth Part of which may be *Spaniards:* And in its flourishing State, when *Domingo*.

Spaniſh Iſlands.

its Audience receiv'd Appeals from every Province of *Spaniſh America*, it might contain about two thouſand Houſes; but is very much declin'd of late Years. It was founded by *Bartholomew Columbus*, Brother to the Admiral, in the Year 1594, who gave it the Name of *Domingo*, or *Dominick*, in Honour of their Father who was of that Name.

Higuey. 2. The Town of *Higuey*, ſituated 30 Leagues to the Eaſtward of *Domingo*, moſt conſiderable for its Sugar-works.

Zibo. 3. *Zibo*, 20 Leagues Eaſt of *Domingo*.

Cotuy. 4. *Cotuy*, ſituated near the Eaſt End of the Iſland, formerly a rich Town when there were Gold Mines in its Neighbourhood, but now an inconſiderable Place.

Aſo. 5. *Azua*, or *Aſo*, a good Port Town at the Bottom of a Bay on the South Side of the Iſland, eight Leagues Weſt of *Domingo*.

Conception. 6. The City of *Conception de la Vega*, ſituate 25 Leagues North of *St. Domingo*, in which is a Cathedral and ſeveral parochial Churches, and others belonging to Convents, being heretofore a Biſhops See, founded by *Columbus*, who from this Town had the Title of Duke *De la Vega* confer'd on him by his Catholick Majeſty.

Towns ſubject to the *French*.

The Towns ſubject to the *French* are, 1. *Petit Guaves*. 2. *Logane*. 3. *Port Lewis*; and 4. *Cape St. Francis*.

Petit Guaves. 1. *Petit Guaves* is a Port Town ſituated in a great Bay at the Weſt End of the Iſland, the principal Settlement the *French* have upon it.

Logane. 2. *Logane*, another Port belonging to the *French* in the ſame Bay.

Port Lewis. 3. *Port Lewis*, a good Harbour on the South-Weſt Part of the Iſland.

4. *Cape*

Spaniſh Iſlands.

4. *Cape St. Francis*, the moſt Eaſterly Settlement the *French* have on the North Side of the Iſland, near which they have the Fort *De Paix*. Beſides theſe there are at this Day a great many more thriving *French* Colonies on the North and Weſt Part of the Iſland.

Cape St. Francis.

Port *Paix.*

Inhabitants.

As to the Inhabitants, it has been already hinted that the South-Eaſt Part is under the Dominion of the *Spaniards*, and the North-Weſt ſubject to the *French*, and conſequently the *Spaniards* and *French* are Lords of their reſpective Diſtricts; but theſe are not a fifth Part of the People upon the Iſland; the *Crioli*, *Meſtices*, *Negroes* and *Albatraces* are much more numerous than their *European* Lords, tho' their Slavery and Dependence are as intolerable here as upon the Continent; but there is this Difference between the *French* and the *Spaniſh* Settlements, that the *French* work and apply themſelves to Buſineſs ſometimes themſelves, whereas the *Spaniards* live a lazy indolent Life, depending on their Vaſſals and Slaves entirely for their Subſiſtance.

Perſons.

The Stature and Complexion of the Natives are the ſame as in the like Climates on the Continent. There may be obſerv'd a great Variety of Features and Complexions here, and in all *European* Colonies in *America*; ſome of the native *Spaniards* and *French* are fair, and others tawny: The Deſcendants of theſe are a Degree browner, and the next Generation ſtill of a darker Colour: Whereas on the other hand the imported *Negroes* and their Iſſue are as black as poſſible, and their Features like thoſe of other *African* Blacks; but mixing with *Europeans* or *Indians*, their Children are tawny, and in ſome Generations theſe tawny Creatures cohabiting with other

Europeans,

Spaniſh Iſlands.

Europeans, their Children and Grandchildren are ſcarce to be diſtinguiſh'd from native *Spaniards* or *French* by their Features or Complexions, and when their Original is forgot have the ſame Privileges as thoſe deſcended from *French* or *Spaniſh* Anceſtors on both Sides, provided they have acquir'd Fortunes or Eſtates to ſupport their Pretenſions.

Quadrupedes.

It is very remarkable that when the *Spaniards* firſt diſcover'd *Hiſpaniola* and the neighbouring Iſlands, there was not one four-footed Animal upon them, unleſs ſome little cur Dogs that could not bark: But the *Spaniards* afterwards importing Horſes, Oxen, Aſſes, Mules, Sheep, Hogs, Dogs, and Cats, they multiply'd prodigiouſly, and the *Spaniards* afterwards deſerting this Iſland in a manner, having firſt deſtroy'd the Natives, the black Cattle run wild in the Mountains and Foreſts, and for many Years were kill'd by the Hunters and Buccaneers chiefly for their Hides and Tallow, of which incredible Quantities were exported to *Europe:* And here the Buccaneers uſed to victual their Ships with Beef and Pork and ſell the ſame kind of Proviſions to the Shipping that touch'd there; but ſince the *French* became Maſters of the North-Weſt Part of the Iſland, and the Number of Cattle is decreaſed by the continual Slaughter that was made of them, they have apply'd themſelves to the planting Sugar, Tobacco, *&c.*

Fowls.

As to the feather'd Kind, there is a ſort of Fowls in their Woods equal to our Poultry, which the *Spaniards* call Pintado's, and great Numbers of Parrots of various Colours. Here is alſo the Carpenter-Bird, ſo call'd from his pecking Holes in Trees, with the Cabrero, a ſort of Cormorants, Men of War Birds,

Ravens,

Ravens, Crows, Swallows, Ducks, Teal, and many more ſuch as are found in the ſame Latitude on the Continent. Spaniſh Iſlands.

As to Reptiles and Inſects, there are Serpents of various kinds, but none of them venemous; Chego's, Muſketo's, Fire-Flies, Crickets, and Millipedes. Reptiles and Inſects.

The Caymans, or Crocodiles, and Tortoiſes alſo are as numerous here and in the ſmall Iſlands on the Coaſt as in any Place of the World, and they have Plenty of Fiſh in their Seas and Rivers. Crocodiles Tortoiſes. Fiſh.

The principal Foreſt Trees on *Hiſpaniola* are the Cedar, the Oak, the Pine, the Maho-Tree, the Acoma Tree, Braſil, and other dying Woods, and the Manchinil, the Fruit of which laſt is poiſonous, and the very Saw-duſt of this Wood has been fatal to the Workman. They have alſo ſeveral ſorts of Palms, as the Latimer-Palm, the Prickle-Palm, the Wine-Palm, and the Roſary-Palm, with ſeveral kinds of Fruit-Trees, ſuch as Banana's, Plantains, Guava's, Anana's, Oranges, Lemons, Citrons, Limes, Grapes, Apricots, Caramite-Trees, whoſe Fruit reſembles Damaſcene Plumbs, the Genipa-Tree, not unlike our Cherry-Trees, but the Fruit bigger than a Tennis-Ball, and the Abelcoſe, which yields a Fruit as big as a Melon. Foreſt Trees. Fruits.

But the principal Produce of the Iſland at this Day is Sugar, of which the *French* as well as the *Spaniards* have very large Plantations: And the great Plenty of Proviſions, or rather the Frugality and Parſimony of the *French*, enables them to ſell this kind of Merchandize cheaper than the *Britiſh* Colonies can do, and conſequently muſt diminiſh our Trade in that Particular; for which I know no Remedy Sugar.

but

Spaniſh Iſlands.

but to adviſe our Planters to live as frugally as the *French*, and then poſſibly they may recover the Trade they have loſt.

Tobacco. Drugs.

They plant Tobacco alſo in *Hiſpaniola*, and have ſeveral Gums and Drugs that are uſed in Medicine, ſuch as Gum-Elema, Guaiacum, Aloes, Caſſia, and China-Root.

The Hiſtory.

The firſt Diſcovery of this Iſland, in the Year 1492, and Part of its Hiſtory have been already treated of in the Introduction to the firſt Volume of *America*. I ſhall take Leave to add in this Place, that the *Spaniards*, after they had made an entire Conqueſt of it, lived in great Splendour here for many Years, till they had exhauſted the Gold Mines and worn out the Natives in the working of them, and in other rigorous Services, inſomuch that of three Millions of *Indians* that were found here there was not one *Indian* left upon it. After which the *Spaniards* (who at one time, 'tis ſaid, amounted to fourteen thouſand Families) deſerted the Iſland themſelves, and went over to the Continent, moſt of them to *Peru* and *Chili*, where they underſtood there was the greateſt Plenty of Gold and Silver. Whereupon this Iſland became the Habitation of wild Beaſts till a People no leſs ſavage than theſe brute Creatures, conſiſting of Out-laws, Buccaneers, and Pirates of all Nations began to make Settlements here, and maintain themſelves by hunting the wild Cattle on Shore, and the Prizes they made at Sea; or by plundering the maritime Towns in thoſe Seas. The *Spaniards* finding their Commerce very much interrupted by theſe Free-booters, and apprehenſive that other *European* Nations might at length take poſſeſſion of *Hiſpaniola*, and diſpute their Dominion in that Part of the World, thought

thought fit to send Colonies thither, and repossess themselves of the South-East Part of the Island again, but could not entirely drive the Buccaneers from the North-West Coast and the little Island of *Tortuga* over-against it, where they had fortify'd themselves; and these being most of them *French*, his most Christian Majesty at length sent a Governor thither, and oblig'd these disorderly People to build Towns, cultivate the Lands, and live in Subjection to the Laws of *France*, since which time they have made prodigious Improvements, insomuch that *Hispaniola* may now be look'd upon as one of the most valuable Acquisitions the *French* have in *America*, particularly with regard to their Sugar Plantations (as has been intimated already) and the noble Harbours and Forts they are now in possession of on that Coast, which gives them an Opportunity of disturbing and ruining the Commerce of other Nations they happen to be at War with, as the *Spaniards* experienc'd in King *William*'s War, and the *English* in that of Queen *Anne*.

One Reason of the *Spaniards* deserting this fruitful Island of *Hispaniola*, tis said, was their being perpetually harrass'd and plunder'd by the *English* and *Dutch* in the Reign of Queen *Elizabeth*; and why neither of those Nations possess'd themselves of this important Island when they had driven the *Spaniards* from thence is not easy to be conceiv'd; for were either of the maritime Powers possess'd of it, there are so many fine Harbours for the Security of their Ships, and such Plenty of Provisions, that here they might ride Masters of the *American* Seas, and give Laws to all other Powers.

Sir *Francis Drake*, in the Year 1586, took the capital City of *St. Domingo* by Storm with

Spaniſh Iſlands.

twelve hundred Men, and then quitted it again, as he had done ſeveral other *Spaniſh* Ports in *America*. It ſeems to have been a Maxim then in the Court of *England*, to humble the Pride of the *Spaniards*, but not abſolutely to drive them from their Settlements in the *Weſt-Indies*.

Cromwell attempts the Conqueſt of *Hiſpaniola*.

But *Cromwell* and his Miniſtry were of a different Mind. There is no one Enterprize that cunning Uſurper ſeem'd to have ſet his heart upon more than the poſſeſſing himſelf of this important Iſland, which he evidently ſaw muſt give him the Command of thoſe Seas, if it did not let him into a Share of the Treaſures of *Mexico* and *Peru*. He ſent Admiral *Penn* and *Venables* thither therefore, in the Year 1654, with a fine Fleet and ten thouſand Land-men on Board, who had infallibly made themſelves Maſters of the Iſland, if ſome that envied *Cromwell* that glorious Conqueſt had not defeated the Deſign by unneceſſary Delays in executing his Orders, and ſending ſuch Proviſions, Arms, and Ammunition on Board the Fleet, that when they came to uſe them were found to be good for nothing. However, tho' theſe Forces were not ſo fortunate as to ſubdue the Iſland of *Hiſpaniola*, they did the Nation the next beſt Service they could poſſibly have perform'd in making a Conqueſt of *Jamaica*, which the *Engliſh* have kept Poſſeſſion of to this Day.

His Forces reduce *Jamaica*.

Iſlands of *Savona*. *St. Catalina*. *Navaza*. *Guanabo*. *Tortuga*.

There are ſeveral ſmall Iſlands near the Coaſt of *Hiſpaniola*, of which the chief are *Savona* and *St. Catalina*, at the South-Eaſt Part of the Iſland; *Navaza*, at the Weſt End of *Hiſpaniola*; *Guanabo*, in the Bay of *Leogane*; and laſtly, *Tortuga*, on the North-Weſt Coaſt, an Iſland of between twenty and thirty Leagues

in

in Circumference, in which there is an excellent Harbour of difficult Acceſs. Spaniſh Iſlands.

Here the Buccaneers and Free-booters of all Nations had their firſt Rendezvous, and fortifying the Iſland, bid Defiance to all Mankind for ſome Years. They conſiſted chiefly of the *French* Hunters of *Hiſpaniola*, who poſſeſs'd Part of that Iſland on the *Spaniards* deſerting it, and ſpent their Time in hunting, and taking the black Cattle that run wild there. Theſe were joined by great Numbers of *Engliſh* and *Dutch* and other Seamen, who having been barbarouſly treated by the *Spaniards*, form'd conſiderable Fleets, and made all *Spaniſh* Ships Prize that came in their Way; and ſometimes, 'tis ſaid, they made no Scruple of ſeizing the Ships of other Nations, or at leaſt plundering them of their Ammunition and Proviſions when they wanted themſelves; but ſince the *French* King has oblig'd thoſe People to ſubmit to a regular Form of Government, and eſtabliſh'd his Dominion in the North-Weſt Part of the Iſland of *Hiſpaniola*, the Buccaneers have diſuſed their Depredations at Sea as well as their Hunting by Land, and apply'd themſelves to cultivate the Soil, and particularly to improve the Sugar Plantations there, in which they have been very ſucceſsful. This Colony, as has been intimated already, does not only prejudice the *Britiſh* Sugar Plantations extremely, but will ever remain a Thorn in our Sides in time of War; for from hence they will be in a Condition to diſturb the Trade of our *American* Colonies, unleſs we can find Means to remove them: And one Reaſon why the *Spaniards* have of late Years favour'd the *French* more than the *Engliſh* may be, that they dread the Power of the *French* more than the *Engliſh*, Buccaneers, their Original.

Spaniſh Iſlands.

ſince they have poſſeſs'd themſelves of the North-Weſt Part of *Hiſpaniola*, where they have a Variety of commodious Harbours for the greateſt Fleets, with which they can at any time cut off the Trade between *Spain* and *America*.

CHAP.

CHAP. III.

Of the Island of Porto Rico.

Spanish Islands.

THE Island of *Porto Rico* is situated in 18 Degrees of Northern Latitude, and between 64 and 66 Degrees of Western Longitude, being of an oblong Form, about forty Leagues in Length from East to West, and twenty in Breadth from North to South, and lies about twenty Leagues East of *Hispaniola*.

Porto Rico. Situation and Extent.

Name.

The *Indian* Name was *Boriquen*, and *Columbus* when he discover'd it call'd it *St. John*, but the chief Town being afterwards built upon a commodious Harbour call'd *Porto Rico*, or *The Rich Harbour*, the Island lost both its former Names, and goes by the Name of *Porto Rico* to this Day.

Face of the Country.

The whole Island is pleasantly diversified with Woods, Hills, and Valleys, but has few large Plains, and is well watered with Springs and Rivers; only on the little Island, on which the City of *Porto Rico* stands, they have neither Spring or Brook, but fetch their fresh Water from the main Island, or preserve it in the time of the Rains in Cisterns and Reservoirs: However, as two of the most considerable Rivers discharge themselves into the same Bay, they easily import fresh Water from thence in Boats.

The

Spaniſh Iſlands.

The chief Towns are, 1. *Porto Rico*, and 2. *St. Germains*.

Porto Rico City.

1. The Town of *Porto Rico*, or *St. John's*, is ſituated on a ſmall Iſland in the Harbour from whence it takes its Name, the Iſland being about two Miles in Length, and join'd to the main Iſland by a narrow Cauſey. The Town ſtands upon an Emminence, and is about half a League in Circumference, built after the *Spaniſh* Model; and being a Biſhop's See, has a handſome Cathedral and ſix or ſeven parochial and conventical Churches. The Entrance of the Harbour is very narrow, and defended by ſtrong Forts and Batteries, which render the Town inacceſſible by Sea.

Nor is the Place leſs pleaſant than it is ſtrong, for its elevated Situation gives it the Command of the Sea on the one Side, and of the main Iſland on the other, and the ſmall Iſland in which it ſtands is planted with Fruit Trees which are green all the Year long.

St. Germains.

2. The Town of *St. Germains* is ſituated at the Weſt End of the Iſland of *Porto Rico*, about four Miles from the Sea; but of this I do not meet with any particular Deſcription.

Seaſons.

Their rainy and tempeſtuous Seaſon is in the Months of *June*, *July* and *Auguſt*, when the Sun is near them, and then the Winds in theſe Seas are at South-Eaſt, tho' they are North-Eaſt at other times; but the Hurricanes (which they are ſubject to as well as the *Caribbee* Iſlands in their Neighbourhood) blow from every Point of the Compaſs; and it is about Midſummer, or ſomething later, that they expect theſe Storms, tho' they do not happen every Year.

Winds.

It is very fortunate that it rains here in thoſe Months, which would otherwiſe be the hotteſt: And

Spaniſh Iſlands.

And the Sea Breezes are another great Relief; for about eight in the Morning there riſes a freſh Gale of Wind and blows till four in the Afternoon: From ſix in the Morning till the Sea Breeze riſes is very hot, but five in the Afternoon is the hotteſt time of the Day: From three in the Morning till ſix it is cooleſt, then a Man may bear the Bed-cloaths upon him very well.

The Time of the Rains is uſually unhealthful; Foreigners eſpecially find it ſo, as the Earl of *Cumberland* experienc'd, who, after he had taken the Town of *Porto Rico* with its Caſtles, was forc'd to abandon them again, having loſt the greateſt Part of his Men by the Flux, which leads me to give a ſhort Abſtract of the Hiſtory of this Iſland.

Hiſtory of this Iſland.

St. John de Porto Rico was diſcover'd by *Columbus* in his ſecond Voyage, in the Year 1493, who informs us that he met with ſome elegant Buildings and Gardens in this Iſland; but being employ'd in Diſcoveries on the Continent afterwards, it was not reduc'd under the Obedience of the *Spaniards*, or planted by them till the Year 1510, when *John Pounce de Leon*, Deputy-Governor of *Hiſpaniola*, being inform'd there were Gold Mines in *Boroquen*, obtain'd Leave of *Nicholas Obando* the Governor to plant a Colony there, and embarking with ſome few *Spaniards*, arriv'd at *Boroquen*; where pretending he only came to eſtabliſh a friendly Commerce with the Natives, the chief Cacique, or Lord of the Iſland, made an Alliance with the *Spaniards*, and treated them very hoſpitably, ſhewing them two Rivers wherein were ſome Gold Sands. Whereupon *Pounce de Leon* introducing a good Number of *Spaniards*, and building ſeveral Forts in the Iſland,

Spaniſh Iſlands.

Iſland, uſurp'd the Dominion of it: And not content with taking the Country from the inoffenſive Natives, he obtain'd a Commiſſion from the Court of *Spain* to be Governor of the Iſland, under Colour whereof he made all the People Slaves, dividing them among his Captains and Followers, who employ'd thoſe poor People in digging for Gold (of which it ſeems there was little to be found) and in all manner of Drudgery, ſuch as Building, Planting, carrying Burthens, *&c.* uſing them as unmercifully as the *Spaniards* had done the Natives of *Hiſpaniola*. Whereupon ſome of the *Indians* run away to the Woods and Mountains, and others ſtood upon their Defence; but not being in a Condition to reſiſt the Fire-Arms, Horſes and Dogs of the *Spaniards*, they were at length moſt of them compell'd to ſubmit to that cruel Bondage, and thoſe that would not were tortur'd or torn in pieces with Dogs. The *Spaniſh* Writers relate abundance of incredible Stories of the Sagacity of their Dogs in diſtinguiſhing between thoſe who ſubmitted to this Slavery and thoſe that refuſed to obey them: However, all agree that their Country-men hunted thoſe naked People with Dogs in the Woods and Mountains as they would wild Beaſts or other Game, and frequently *tore in pieces Men, Women, and Children in mere Sport*, turning them looſe before their Dogs, as they would a Hare or a Fox: And when repeated Orders came from *Spain* to uſe the People better, and to prohibit the making the *Indians* Slaves, thoſe Adventurers repreſented to his Catholick Majeſty that they were Canibals, and procur'd Leave to make Slaves of all they were pleas'd to denominate ſuch. And this is one Reaſon ſo many of the *American* Nations have been repreſented

The *Spaniards* Cruelty to the Natives.

Spaniſh Iſlands.

repreſented as Canibals in *Europe*; nothing ſhort of ſuch Prejudices could have induc'd any Chriſtian Prince to have ſuffer'd his Subjects to be treated ſo barbarouſly as the *Indians* were by the *Spaniards*; for tho' they claim'd their Country by virtue of the Pope's Grant, no Prince would ever have authoris'd them to worry and tear in pieces whole Nations after they had ſubmitted to the *Spaniſh* Yoke, if theſe ſavage Adventurers had not firſt dreſs'd them up in horrid Colours, and falſely accus'd thoſe inoffenſive People of the moſt barbarous and unnatural Cuſtoms: And ſtrange it is (as has been obſerv'd on other Occaſions) that if almoſt all the *American* Nations were Canibals, as the *Spaniſh* Writers affirm'd, that there ſhould not be one of thoſe Nations left at this Day in the inland Countries that were never under the Dominion of any *European* Power, and conſequently have not been brought off theſe Cuſtoms by any ſuch Catholick Reformations. But to return to the Hiſtory.

Porto Rico founded.

The City of *St. John de Porto Rico* was founded in the Year 1514, and continued in a flouriſhing Condition for many Years. Sir *Francis Drake* having a good Fleet under his Command with Land-Forces on Board gave ſeveral Aſſaults to the Town in the Year 1595, but was beaten from it. The Earl of *Cumberland* had better Succeſs; for with a much leſs Force he made himſelf Maſter of the Place the next Year with a Fleet ſet out at his own Expence, aſſiſted by two Regiments of the Queen's, for it was Queen *Elizabeth*'s good Huſbandry to encourage private Men to be at the Expence of ſuch Expeditions to the *Weſt-Indies*, only lending them her Ships and Men. It was not often ſhe put the Publick

Drake repuls'd there.

Spaniſh Iſlands.

The Earl of *Cumberland* takes the Town.

to the whole Expence of them. But it was with great Hazard and Difficulty the Earl carry'd the Town of *Porto Rico*, tho' thus aſſiſted; for in an Aſſault he made upon the Place, he fell from a Rock into the Sea in his Armour, and remain'd ſo long under Water before his People could get him out, that he was almoſt dead; and Sir *John Barkly* continued the Attack till the Earl recover'd, ſoon after which the Enemy abandon'd the Town and retir'd into their Forts, and theſe alſo ſurrender'd two or three Days afterwards. The Earl had determin'd to keep poſſeſſion of *Porto Rico*, and from thence to have attack'd the *Spaniſh* Settlements on the Continent and Iſlands after he ſhould have been re-inforc'd from *England*; but loſing more than half his Men by the Bloody-flux in a very ſhort time, he was compell'd to ſet ſail for *England* on the 14th of *Auguſt*, with much leſs Treaſure than he expected to have met with here; for the *Spaniards* having notice of his Coming, had carried off or conceal'd all that was valuable. The beſt Prize he made was eighty Pieces of Braſs Canon he found in the Town and Forts. He demanded a great Sum of the *Spaniards* to ranſom the Town from being burnt, which they promiſed to pay him; but finding his Men rot ſo faſt they neglected to pay the Money, and tho' the Earl was preſs'd to ſet the City on fire on their diſappointing him, he left the Town ſtanding, and only demoliſh'd their Forts.

Loſes his Men by Sickneſs, and forced to quit it.

There is no doubt but *Porto Rico* would have been of vaſt Advantage to the *Engliſh* if they could have kept it; and had they come before it in the dry Seaſon, poſſibly that Mortality among the Soldiers had not happen'd; which

which the Earl aſcrib'd partly to the great Labour his Men ſuſtain'd in this Service, but more to the heavy Rains that fell at that Seaſon, and obſerves when there was no Rain the Dews that fell in the Evening were no leſs fatal to his Men, who choſe to lie in the open Air in that hot Country in fair Weather: The Fruits of the Country alſo might contribute to this Diſtemper, which brings me to treat of the Produce of the Iſland of *Porto Rico*. Spaniſh Iſlands.

The Soil is rich, producing long coarſe Graſs, which they feed their Cattle with, but never make into Hay. They have good Timber fit for the building of Ships, and Variety of Fruit-Trees, ſuch as Cocoa's, Pine-apples, Mammeys, Guava's, Banana's, Plantains, Palms, Oranges, Limes, Citrons, *Jamaica*-Pepper, and the baſtard Cinamon. The Country alſo produces Rice and *Indian* Corn, but they make more Bread of the Caſſavi-Root than of Corn, being too lazy to cultivate the Soil. The principal Produce of the Iſland for Exportation is Ginger, Sugar, and Hides, for they have vaſt Numbers of black Cattle here as well as in the neighbouring Iſland of *Hiſpaniola*; but they have more Goats and Hogs than they have of *European* Sheep, and the Mutton they have is poor dry Food: Their Pork is excellent, and their Kids are pretty good Meat: They have alſo all manner of *European* Poultry, and Plenty of Fiſh. Parrots are as common as Crows in *England*, and they are well ſtock'd with Wood-Pidgeons as well as Guanoes, a kind of great Lizard, which they eſteem good Food in the *Weſt-Indies*. They have alſo Land-Crabs, not unlike the Sea-Crab, which burrow in the Ground like Rabbets; but theſe are the Food of Dogs more Produce of *Porto Rico*. Their Dogs feed on Land-Crabs.

Spaniſh Iſlands.

more than of Men. Thoſe who were in the Expedition againſt *Porto Rico* with the Earl of *Cumberland* relate, that the Earl propoſing to make this an *Engliſh* Colony, tranſported the *Spaniſh* Inhabitants to other Places; whereupon the Dogs ſet up a diſmal Howl, which they continued all Night after their *Spaniſh* Maſters were gone, and run away to the Woods next Day, which the *Engliſh* apprehended was in ſearch of their Maſters. However, the Dogs return'd to the Town again in the Evening; and after they were acquainted with the *Engliſh* left off their Howling in the Night-time, but ſtill went every Day to the Woods by the Sea-ſide, where the *Engliſh* at length obſerved that they devour'd the Land-Crabs, theſe being their principal Food.

Gold, none here.

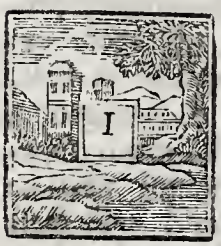
As to the Gold Mines that Travellers relate there are in this Iſland, there are none wrought at this Day; nor was there ever any that were very conſiderable, but poſſibly there might be ſome little Gold found in their Rivulets formerly, which invited the *Spaniards* to take poſſeſſion of the Iſland; tho' I believe their chief Reaſon for keeping *Porto Rico* at preſent is, that it may not fall into the Hands of ſome other *European* Power that might diſturb their Commerce with their *American* Dominions, and perhaps endanger the Loſs of their more valuable Settlements on the Continent.

The *Virgins* *Iſlands.*

The *Virgins Iſlands* are the laſt *Spaniſh* Iſlands I ſhall mention. Theſe are a Cluſter of barren Rocks, a little to the Eaſtward of the Iſland of *Porto Rico*, through which the Paſſage is ſomething difficult. They are ſcarce worth claiming by the *Spaniards*, or any other Nation; tho' they are generally ſaid to belong to *Spain*.

THE

THE CONCLUSION OF *Spaniſh America.*



IN this Survey of the *Spaniſh* Territories in *America*, it appears that they are the richeſt (if Gold and Silver are to be accounted Riches) and the moſt extenſive that ever any Monarch poſſeſs'd ſince the Flood. What are the Conqueſts and Acquiſitions of *Alexander* or *Cæſar* if compar'd with theſe? eſpecially at a Time when *Charles* V. was upon the Throne, who was Emperor of *Germany*, Soveraign of *Spain*, *Italy*, and the *Low-Countries*, and had Part of *Aſia* and *Africa* under his Dominion? Conclu-ſion.

This Prince was actually engag'd in War with the *Turk*, the *French*, the *Flemmings*, the *Africans*, and *Indians* of *North* and *South-America* almoſt at the ſame Inſtant: And in every

Conclusion.

The vaſt Extent of the *Spaniſh* Territories in *America*. *Charles* V. the grand Knight-Errant.

every Part of the World was generally ſucceſsful: But the Empire of *Mexico* and *Peru*, a Dominion of ſeven thouſand Miles Extent almoſt, was entirely ſubdu'd by the *Spaniards* during his Reign; ſo numerous were the Enterprizes his Forces were engag'd in, that he might well be deem'd the grand Knight-Errant of his Times; and *Cervantes* is ſuppoſed by ſome to have had an Eye to *Charles* V. in his *Don Quixot*, eſpecially where he brings in the Hero charging a Flock of Sheep, to which the naked *Indians* might properly be reſembled when they were attack'd by Men armed *Cap-a-pee* on Horſeback, with the Advantages of Artillery and Fire-Arms. In this and in Shipping, it muſt be acknowledg'd that *Charles* V. had the better of *Alexander* and *Cæſar*, and other Knight-Errants of Antiquity; for tho' the *Greeks* and *Romans* excell'd in military Diſcipline, which enabled them to ſubdue the Nations about them, their Conqueſts probably would have been ſwifter and more extenſive if they had known the Uſe of Fire-Arms, and been better ſkill'd in Navigation. Theſe render'd the *Spaniards* ſo much ſuperiour to the *Indians*, that they might well be look'd upon as Sheep, if compar'd with their Conquerors, as they were call'd, tho' with as little Propriety as a Troop of Horſe may be ſaid to conquer a Flock of Sheep or Hares they trample under their Feet without Reſiſtance. They might have ſtiled their Expeditions to *America* Executions, or barbarous Maſſacres; but the Name of Conqueſt (which carries in the Notion of it Hazard and Difficulty, and preſumes the Enterprize to be juſt and honourable) ought never to be profan'd and apply'd to Butchers and Hangmen, to Robbers, Pirates, and

and Usurpers, who make no Scruple of torturing and murdering the inoffensive or industrious Part of their own Species to possess themselves of their Country and Treasures. Conclusion.

But how barbarously or unjustly soever the *Spaniards* acquir'd the Dominion of *America*, they remain'd in the uninterrupted possession of it (except *Brazil*) for an hundred Years, and were possess'd of that too for threescore Years and upwards, namely, while *Portugal* was in possession of the *Spaniards*. *America* possess'd by the *Spaniards* alone for 100 Years.

The *English* and other *European* Nations seem'd to have resign'd the Dominion of that new World to the *Spaniards*, scarce endeavouring to make a Settlement, or send a Colony thither for three or fourscore Years after it was discover'd. *Sebastian Cabot* was employ'd indeed by *Henry* VII. of *England* to find out a Passage to the *East-Indies* by the North-West, in the Year 1496, and in that Attempt discover'd the North-East Coast of *America*; but no Endeavours were made to improve that Discovery till the Year 1560, when the *English* and some other *European* Nations began to promote a Fishery on the Banks of *Newfoundland*. The first Attempt of the *English*, &c. on *Newfoundland*, 1560

Monsieur *Chatillon* carry'd a Colony of the *French* to *Florida*, in the Year 1562, and called that Part of the Country *Carolina*, in Honour of *Charles* IX. of *France*, which Name it retains to this Day; but the *French* were driven from it soon after by the *Spaniards*, which they revenged and then abandon'd this Country again. In the Year 1567, *Drake* sailed with Captain *Hawkins*, who had five Ships under his Command, to *Guinea*, and from thence to *Vera Cruz* in *Mexico*, with *Negroe* Slaves, where the *Spaniards* agreed to traffick with them, The *French* attempt to settle Colonies in *Florida*, 1562.

Conclusion.

them, but surpris'd *Hawkins* and three of his Ships in the Harbour; and *Drake* return'd to *England*, having lost all he had in the World, which he reveng'd on the *Spaniards* two or three Years after by plundering *Nombre de Dios*, and seizing abundance of Treasure that was coming from *Panama*: And on his Return to *England* made Preparations for that memorable Voyage round the World, which he enter'd upon in the Year 1577, and being come into the *South-Sea*, took and plunder'd several *Spanish* Towns and made Prize of their Ships; after which he came home by the *East-Indies* and the *Cape of Good Hope*, in the Year 1580. The same bold Seaman took and plunder'd several *Spanish* Settlements in the *North-Sea* afterwards, but planted no Colonies in *America*. Sir *Walter Ralegh* procur'd the first Patent to govern such Countries as he should discover in *America*, in the Year 1584, and sent a Colony to *Virginia*, which was driven from thence by Famine again. The *English* miscarried a second and a third time in their Endeavours to settle a Colony at *Virginia* in the Years 1586 and 1587 (but here it is necessary to observe, that Sir *Walter Ralegh* gave the Name of *Virginia* to all the North-East Coast of *America*, now in possession of the *English*, in Honour of Queen *Elizabeth* his Soveraign.) The first Settlement the *English* actually made and establish'd in *America* was that at *James-Town* in *Virginia*, in the Reign of King *James* I. 1606: And eight or ten Years afterwards Colonies were sent to *New-England*: And about the same time the *French* made some Acquisitions in *Canada*. From whence it appears that the *Spaniards* had the sole Dominion of *America* for

James-Town in *Virginia*, the first Colony of the *English* in *America*, settled in 1606.

for upwards of an hundred Years (except that the *Portugueſe* were Maſters of *Brazil* part of the time.) And the *Spaniards* look'd upon themſelves to be ſo much the Proprietors of thoſe Countries that they ſunk the Ships of every Nation they met with in thoſe Seas, and hang'd up the Men; which put both the *Engliſh* and *Dutch* on making Repriſals, and queſtioning by what Title the *Spaniards* claim'd the ſole Right to that Part of the World; and theſe Diſputes continue in ſome meaſure to this Day, the *Spaniards* ſeldom failing to make Prize of ſuch Ships as they find in the Gulph of *Mexico*, or on the Coaſt of *Terra-Firma*, when they find themſelves ſtrong enough; and we are become ſo very tame as to put up theſe Inſults for the moſt part, while the *French* have in a manner bullied the haughty *Spaniards* into a Submiſſion ſince their fixing themſelves on the North-Weſt of *Hiſpaniola*, and may now be looked upon as the moſt formidable Power in thoſe Seas; and indeed that Nation ſeems to aſſume the Privilege at preſent of giving Laws to the *Engliſh* as well as the *Spaniards* both on the Continent and Iſlands. But to return to *Spaniſh America*.

Concluſion.

The *Spaniards* in *America* in a perpetual State of War with other Nations.

But humbled by the *French*, who are now very formidable in thoſe Seas.

Notwithſtanding the vaſt Addition of Dominion and Treaſure to the *Spaniſh* Crown, which their Princes enjoy'd almoſt without a Rival for the Space of an hundred Years, that Kingdom has been upon the decline ever ſince they were poſſeſs'd of them.

One Reaſon whereof may be that the Countries ſubject to them were too numerous and extenſive for any Prince that had not the Capacity of an Angel to govern them. Even *Charles* V. who had ſo vaſt a Genius, and who actually attempted and made ſome Progreſs

The *Spaniards* weaken'd by their Conqueſts.

Conclusion.

in the Conqueſt of three Parts of the World, and was not without Hopes of reigning ſole Monarch of it, this great Prince ſunk at laſt under the Weight of that unweildy Empire. Some Repulſes he met with abroad, and the ſtubborn Oppoſition of his Subjects at home ſo ruffled his Soul, that he abandon'd the World and retir'd in Diſcontent to a Cloyſter; and, fully convinc'd that he had graſped too much for any mortal Man to govern, divided his Dominions between his Brother and his Son.

Another Reaſon given for the Decline of the *Spaniſh* Monarchy on the Conqueſt of the new World is, their ſending over annually ſuch Numbers of their beſt Men thither for the ſecuring this foreign Prize, and neglecting their Affairs in *Europe*. And there is ſtill a third Cauſe more fatal than both the former, namely, that the prodigious Treaſures which at firſt flow'd in upon them render'd their People proud, lazy, and inactive, inſomuch that moſt of their Manufactures were neglected, and at length the greateſt Part of that Treaſure they receiv'd from *America* came to be diſtributed among their more induſtrious Neighbours for the Merchandize they receiv'd from them, and the *Spaniards* were little more than Factors for the reſt of *Europe:* The Gold and Silver of *America* indeed paſſes through their Hands, but very little of it remains long in their Country; from all which Conſiderations it is pretty evident that the *Spaniards* are rather Loſers than Gainers by that envied Conqueſt.

The *Americans* the worſe for the *Spaniards.*

The next Inquiry which it is natural to make is whether the *Americans* have been any great Gainers by their Intercourſe with the *Spaniards*. It is true that they firſt inſtructed them in the Chriſtian Religion, introduc'd Learning, with the

the Liberal and Mechanick Arts; and that the *Spaniards* firſt imported *European* Cattle, Corn, and Fruits, by which no doubt *America* is or might have been abundantly improved, and a more elegant Way of Living introduc'd than the *Indians* were before acquainted with. Conclu-ſion.

But how dear did the firſt Generation of *Indians* pay for this! and in what a miſerable Servitude do their Poſterity ſtill remain! The *Spaniards* indeed had Religion and Reformation in their Mouths, but practiſed the greateſt Cruelty, Injuſtice and Oppreſſion: And Religion was only made a Pretence for their Barbarity. They repreſented the Natives as Sodomites, Canibals, and Monſters, and then uſed them as ſuch. Inſtead of reforming they actually extirpated the greateſt Part of the Natives, and the reſt were reduced to a State of Slavery: And as to the Chriſtian Religion, it was ſo diſguiſed by ſuperſtitious Rites, and its Doctrines ſo perverted, that inſtead of improving their Morals, the Natives who live under the *Spaniſh* Government are become the moſt vicious Mortals upon Earth: And all the preſent Inhabitants, whether deſcended from *European*, *Indian*, or *African* Anceſtors, are oppreſs'd to a very great Degree. Neceſſitous and rapacious Governors are ſent over from time to time, who make Merchandize of all Places of Truſt and Profit to their inferior Officers; and theſe again fleece the miſerable Inhabitants in their reſpective Governments till they have repaid themſelves what has been extorted from them by their Superiors, to whom it is in vain to complain or petition for Juſtice, while a continued Series of Bribery runs through the whole Adminiſtration.

Conclusion.

The communicating the Christian Religion, Arts and Sciences, and the importing so many valuable Species of Animals, Corn and Plants, might have been esteem'd a very great Happiness to the *Americans*, if they had not been compell'd to resign their Country and Liberties in Exchange for them. But what Pleasure can Slaves take in the midst of the greatest Affluence? They see indeed all that is desireable in Life with their Eyes, but as they can call nothing of all this their own, it does but add to their Misery when they find they have no Share in these Blessings, or none at least but what they are liable to be deprived of every Moment by their imperious Masters. As it seems evident therefore that the *Americans* are not much the better for their Commerce with *Europe*, so some make it a Question whether the Inhabitants of this Continent have gain'd any great Advantage by their Intercourse with the new World.

We have certainly receiv'd great Quantities of Gold and Silver from thence, but the Multiplication and Increase of these Metals does not seem to have added much to our Happiness. In Proportion to the Importation the Value of them has decreased, and since Estates have been converted into Money, which may be hoarded up or lodg'd in Banks, Hospitality has visibly declin'd. The money'd Man is generally the most useless Member in a Common-wealth, where he does not apply it to Traffick. An ordinary Farmer employs more People, and does more good in his Neighbourhood than a Man that is possess'd of ten thousand Pounds and lives on the Interest of it.

But if we are not much better for the Gold and Silver of *America*, it must be acknowledg'd, however, that *Europe* reaps great Advantages from the rest of the Produce of that new World, which furnishes us with abundance of valuable Drugs and Merchandize we wanted. Our Colonies also take off vast Quantities of our Manufactures, and consequently employ great Numbers of People on this Side. Navigation and the Knowledge of Nature also has been extremely improv'd since our Discovery of these Countries; and in time, when we come to know one another better, and come to treat each other with more Humanity, there is no doubt but that they and we shall receive great Advantages by a mutual Intercourse, and the Communication of the Produce of the respective Continents. Conclusion.

The last Observation I shall make is, that the best *Spanish* Historians cannot be relied on: They have evidently made such Representations of the Country and the Natives as their Interest, their Vanity or Superstition prompted them to make, and have had very little Regard to the Truth of Things; and how false soever their Relations have been, they have generally been transcrib'd and copied by other Nations, who had no other Opportunity of informing themselves of the State of those Countries before the *Spaniards* arriv'd, insomuch that I have found as much Difficulty in discovering the true state of those Countries as if we had but just heard of them, especially as to the Religion and Morals of the *Indians* when the *Spaniards* came amongst them. The Uncertainty of the *Spanish* Accounts.

As to the numerous Nations of Canibals, Giants and Monsters that were said to be found in *America*, I am perfectly satisfy'd that these Relations

Conclusion.

Relations were all pure Fiction: And as to their human Sacrifices, I am very much in doubt upon the moſt ſtrict and impartial Review whether there were any ſuch. Certain it is theſe Matters were very much aggravated, if there was ever any Foundation for them: And it is ſtrange, if many *Indian* Nations did formerly ſacrifice Men, there ſhould not be one left among the Nations unſubdued and unconverted that ſacrifice Men at preſent. Their celebrated *Acoſta* and other *Spaniſh* Writers do charge both the *Peruvians* and *Florida Indians* with ſacrificing Children, which is now known to be falſe: Why may we not then ſuſpect the Truth of the human Sacrifices they pretend there were among the *Mexican* Nations?

Another thing I cannot help doubting of is, the noble and elegant Buildings that are ſaid to be found in the City of *Mexico* and ſome other Cities at the Arrival of the *Spaniards*. I muſt confeſs, when I firſt obſerv'd the concurrent Teſtimony of the *Spaniſh* Writers in theſe Particulars, I did give Credit to them, as the Reader will obſerve in the Deſcription of the *Mexican* Cities; but having obſerv'd ſince, that there are no ſuch Buildings to be found in any other Parts of *America*, I think we have ſome Reaſon to queſtion whether theſe were not ſet in a better Light than they deſerv'd: As to the Largeneſs of their Buildings, and the vaſt Stones they were compos'd of, theſe Particulars poſſibly may be true, ſince the whole Country were Slaves to their Princes, who could command as many of them as they pleaſed to aſſiſt in building their Palaces, Temples or Fortreſſes. But when it is related, that the Materials of their Buildings were of

Jaſper

Jaſper and other poliſh'd Marble, when they had no Iron Tools to form or beautify the Stone; and when there are no ſuch Works to be found in any Part of the Country which the *Indians* poſſeſs at this Day, and when ſo many other Particulars in the *Spaniſh* Hiſtorians have been found to be falſe, I cannot give entire Credit to all that has been written on this Head. Concluſion.

THE

THE PRESENT STATE OF *BRAZIL.*

CHAP. I.

Of the Situation and Extent of Brazil; *of its Name, the Face of the Country, Springs, Rivers, Lakes, Seas, Air, Winds and Seasons.*

Brazil.

Situation.

I COME now to the second grand Division of *America* I propos'd to describe, namely, that of *Brazil*, under the Dominion of the King of *Portugal*, which is situated between the Mouth of the great River *Amazon*, under the Equator, and the Mouth of the River *La Plata*, in 35 Degrees of South Latitude, being

being bounded by the *Atlantick Ocean* on the North and East, by the River *La Plata* on the South, and by the Province of *La Plata*, or *Paragua*, and the Country of the *Amazons* on the West, being two thousand four hundred Miles and upwards in Length from North to South, if we measure in a direct Line, and near four thousand if we take in all the Turnings and Windings of the Coast, but is not in many Places more than two thousand Miles broad, tho' in some the *Portuguese* may have penetrated four or five hundred Miles into the Country. Brazil.

The *Portuguese*, who first discover'd this Country, gave it the Name of *The Holy Cross*, but it afterwards obtain'd the Name of *Brazil* (by which it is now universally known) from the great Abundance of *Brazil* Wood which grows here. Name.

As to the Face of the Country, the Land is rather low than high near the Coast, but exceeding pleasant, being chequer'd (according to *Dampier*'s Expression) with Woods and Savannahs, or Meadow Grounds, and the Trees, for the most part, Ever-greens: But on the West Side of it, far within Land, are high Mountains, which separate it from the *Spanish* Province of *La Plata*, and in these are innumerable Springs and Lakes, from whence issue abundance of Rivers that fall into the great Rivers *Amazon* and *La Plata*, or run cross the Country from West to East, and fall into the *Atlantick Ocean*, which last are very numerous, and of great Use to the *Portuguese* in turning their Sugar-Mills, and meliorating their Lands, which they over-flow annually, as the *Nile* does *Egypt*. Face of the Country. Springs, Lakes, and Rivers.

Brazil. Through every Province of *Brazil* there runs a great River (beſides ſeveral leſſer Streams) which communicates its Name to the Province, the Courſe whereof will be deſcrib'd in treating of the reſpective Provinces.

The Sea. The only Sea that borders upon *Brazil* is that of the *Atlantick Ocean*, which waſhing its Coaſts for the Space of three hundred Miles and upwards, forms ſeveral fine Harbours, Bays, Capes, and Promontories, the principal whereof are, 1. Cape *Roque*, in 4 Degrees odd Minutes South Latitude. 2. The Harbour of *Pernambuco*, or *Recief*, in 7 Degrees 30 Minutes South Latitude. 3. Cape *St. Auguſtin*, in 8 Degrees. 4. The Harbour or Bay of *All Saints*, in 13 Degrees odd Minutes. 5. The Harbour of *Porto Seguro*, in 16 Degrees 30 Minutes. 6. The Port and Bay of *Reio Janeiro*, in 23 Degrees South Latitude. 7. Cape *Frio*, ſome few Minutes Eaſt of *Reio Janeiro*. 8. The Port of *St. Vincent*, in 25 Degrees South Latitude. 9. Cape *St. Mary*, the moſt Southerly Promontory of *Brazil*, in 34 Degrees odd Minutes South Latitude. 10. The Port of *St. Gabriel*; and, 11. The Port of *St. Salvador*, ſituate on the North Shore, at the Entrance of the River *La Plata*: The reſt of the Ports and Bays will be taken notice of in the Deſcription of the reſpective Provinces.

Harbours and Capes.

Air, Winds, and Seaſons. As to the Seaſons, Air and Winds, they are not the ſame throughout this extenſive Country, but vary with the ſeveral Situations. I ſhall divide it therefore, in reſpect of the Seaſons, into three Parts, *viz.* 1. The moſt Northerly, which lies next the Equator. 2. That Part of it which extends from 5 Degrees South Latitude to the Tropick of Capricorn; and, 3. That Part of the Country which is ſituated

situated between the Tropick and 35 Degrees of South Latitude. Brazil.

As to the North of *Brazil*, which lies almost under the Equator, this, like other Countries in the same Situation, is subject to great Rains and variable Winds, particularly in the Months of *March* and *September*, when they have Deluges of Rain, with Storms and Tornadoes; the Country is over-flow'd, and the Air unhealthful; but this Part is very little inhabited: The *Portugueſe* only keep poſſeſſion of the Coaſts to keep Foreigners out. As to the Air, Winds and Seaſons in that Part of *Brazil* which lies between 5 Degrees South Latitude and the Tropick of Capricorn, Mr. *Dampier* has given us this Account of it. Near the Equator.

He obſerves, that the Winds and Seaſons are the very reverſe here to what they are in other Parts of the World in the ſame Latitudes; for whereas the dry Seaſon comes on in other Places South of the Equinoctial, when the Sun goes to the Northward of the Equator, and the wet Seaſon begins when the Sun returns to the Southward; here the wet Seaſon begins in *April*, when the South-Eaſt Winds ſet in with violent Tornadoes, Thunder and Lightning: And in *September*, when the Wind ſhifts to Eaſt North-Eaſt, it brings with it a clear Sky and fair Weather, and this is the Time of their Sugar Harveſt. In the middle of *Brazil*.

There are but two Winds blow upon this Coaſt, *viz.* the South-Eaſt from *April* to *September*, and the North-Eaſt from *September* to *April* again: But thirty or forty Leagues out at Sea they meet with the conſtant Trade-Wind, which blows in the *Atlantick Ocean* all the Year round from the Eaſtward with very little Variation.

Brazil.

There is no Country between the Tropicks where the Heats are more tolerable, or the Air more healthful than this, being conſtantly refreſh'd with Breezes from the Sea, and abounding in Lakes and Rivers, which annually over-flow their Banks: And in the in-land Part of the Country the Winds from the Mountains are ſtill cooler than theſe that blow from the Ocean.

In the South of *Brazil.*

3. I proceed in the next place to enquire into the Air and Seaſons of the moſt Southerly Part of *Brazil*, which lies without the Tropick of Capricorn, and this appears to be like other Countries in the ſame Climate, one of the moſt deſirable Parts of the World, having a greater Share of fair Weather, and a more temperate Air than thoſe Countries that are nearer, or thoſe that are remov'd further from the Equator, and are generally bleſs'd with a moſt fruitful Soil. The Winds here are variable, at leaſt beyond the Latitude of 30, and the little Winter they have is when the Sun is in the Northern Signs; but the Territories of the *Portugueſe* are but very narrow here, lying between the Sea and the Mountains which divide them from that Part of *La Plata* ſubject to the *Spaniſh* Jeſuites, deſervedly call'd *The Jeſuites Paradiſe*, from the Excellency of the Soil and Climate.

CHAP.

CHAP. II.

Of the Provinces and chief Towns of Brazil, *and the Buildings of the Natives.*

BRAZIL is usually divided into fifteen Provinces or Captainships (*viz.*) 1. The Captainship of *Paria*. 2. *Maragnan*. 3. *Siara*. 4. *Potigi*, or *Rio Grande*. 5. *Parayba*. 6. *Tamara*. 7. *Pernambuco*. 8. *Seregippe*. 9. *Batria de Todos Santos*. 10. *Ilheos*. 11. *Porto Seguro*. 12. *Spirito Sancto*. 13. *Rio Janeiro*. 14. *St. Vincent*; and 15. *Del Rey*. Brazil. Provinces of *Brazil*.

1. The Captainship of *Paria*, or *Para*, is bounded by the Mouth of the River *Amazon* and the Ocean on the North, by the Province of *Maragnan* on the East, by the Country of the *Tapuyers* on the South, and by the Country of the *Amazons* on the West. The principal River, which gives Name to the Province, runs through it from South to North, and falls into the Mouth of the River *Amazon*; and the chief Town, call'd also *Para*, or *Belem*, is situated at the Mouth of the River *Amazon*, in 1 Degree of South Latitude, and 47 Degrees odd Minutes Western Longitude, where 'tis said the *Portugueſe* keep a Garriſon of four or five hundred Soldiers. 2. *Corupa*, ſituated about fifty Leagues South-West of *Para*. *Paria*. *Para* Town. *Corupa* Town.

2. The

Brazil. *Maragnan* Province.

2. The Captainſhip of *Maragnan*, bounded by the Ocean on the North, by the Province of *Siara* on the Eaſt, by the *Tapuyers* Country on the South, and by *Paria* on the Weſt.

Chief Town *St. Lewis.*

The chief Towns are, 1*ſt*. *St. Lewis de Maragnan*, ſituated in 2 Degrees odd Minutes South Latitude, on an Iſland in a fine Bay made by the Mouths of their three principal Rivers, *Maragnan* *viz.* 1. *Mary*, or *Maragnan*. 2. *Tapucary*; and 3. *Mony*.

The Town and Iſland of *St. Lewis* were formerly poſſeſs'd by the *French*, and then by the *Dutch*, but both Nations were driven from thence by the *Portugueſe*, who are now in poſſeſſion of it.

Cuma.

2*dly*, *Cuma*, ſituated on the Continent, over-againſt the ſaid Iſland of *Maragnan*.

Siara Province.

3. The Captainſhip of *Siara*, bounded by the Ocean on the North and Eaſt, by the Province of *Potigi*, or *Rio Grande*, on the South, and by *Maragnan* and the *Tapuyers* Country on the Weſt. The River *Siara*, which *Siara* River and Town. gives Name to the Province, runs from the South-Weſt to the North-Eaſt, and falls into the Sea in 4 Degrees odd Minutes South Latitude, at the Mouth whereof ſtands the Town of *Siara*, and about twenty Leagues to the Eaſtward of it the Fort of *St. Luke*.

Potigi Province.

4. The Captainſhip of *Potigi*, or *Rio Grande*, bounded by *Siara* on the North, by the Ocean on the Eaſt, by the Province of *Payraba* on the South, and by the Country of the *Tapuyers* on the Weſt. The chief River of *Rio Gran-* *Rio Grande* gives Name to the Province, runs *de* River. from Weſt to Eaſt, and falls into the Ocean in 5 Degrees odd Minutes South Latitude, on Chief Town which River ſtands the Town of *Tiguares*, being the only Town I meet with in this Province. *Tiguares.*

5. The

5. The Captainship of *Payraba*, bounded by *Potigi* on the North, by the Ocean on the East, by *Tamaraka* on the South, and by the Country of the *Tapuyers* on the West. Brazil. *Payraba* Province.

The River *Payraba* running from West to East, divides this Province in two equal Parts, and falls into the Ocean in 6 Degrees odd Minutes South Latitude. *Payraba* River.

The Town of *Payraba* lies on the South Side of this River, about five Leagues from the Sea. There are in it several Churches and Cloisters, and it is defended by a Wall and Forts; and two Leagues to the North of this Town lies the Port of *Lucena*, which is a good Harbour for Ships. and Town. *Lucena* Harbour.

6. The Captainship of *Tamara*, or *Tamarica*, bounded by *Payraba* on the North, the Ocean on the East, by *Pernambuco* on the South, and the *Tapuyers* Country on the West. The chief River whereof is *Tamara*, in the Mouth whereof lies the Island and Town of *Tamarica*, which form a tolerable Harbour. *Tamara* Province, River, and Town.

There is another Town call'd *Guia*, or *Goyana*, situated on the *Goyana*, about three Leagues from the Sea, but of none of these Towns do I meet with any particular Descriptions, only 'tis said the *Portuguese* have abundance of Sugar-Mills on these Rivers, Sugar being the principal Produce and Manufacture of the Country. *Guia* Town.

7. The Captainship of *Pernambuco* is bounded by that of *Tamera* on the North, by the Ocean on the East, by *Serigippe* on the South, and by the Country of the *Tapuyers* on the West, extending two hundred Miles along the Coast from North to South, and an hundred and fifty Miles in Breadth from East to West, and was the principal Province belonging to the *Pernambuco* Province.

Dutch

Brazil.

Dutch when they were in poſſeſſion of *North-Brazil*. The chief Town whereof was *Pernambuco*, or *The Recief*. This Harbour was call'd *Pernambúco*, or rather *Infernoboco*, the Mouth of Hell, by the *Portugueſe*, on account of the Rocks and Shoals under Water at the Entrance of it. It is compoſed partly of a Peninſula on the Continent, and partly of ſeveral ſmall Iſlands which were built upon and fortify'd in the Time of the *Dutch*. The Peninſula is call'd *The Recief*, and lies in 7 Degrees 30 Minutes South Latitude, and 35 Degrees of Weſtern Longitude, a little to the North of Cape *St. Auguſtin*. South of *The Recief*, and juſt oppoſite to it, is an Iſland built upon, and call'd *Maurice-Town*, from the Palace of Prince *Maurice*, which was ſituated on it, and hath a Communication with *The Recief* by a Bridge. It was naturally ſtrong, ſurrounded by Water or Moraſſes, and defended by ſeveral Forts and Redoubts; but was however ſurrender'd by the *Dutch* to the *Portugueſe*, in the Year 1647, for want of Ammunition and Proviſions, which the *Dutch Weſt-India* Company did not take care to ſupply their Colonies in *Brazil* with in due time.

Pernambuco Town, or *The Recief*.

Olinda.

2*dly*, The City of *Olinda* is ſituated on ſome ſmall Hills on the Sea-Coaſt, a very little North of *The Recief*, and before the *Dutch* took it from the *Portugueſe*, was the principal Port in *Brazil*, well built and fortify'd, and contain'd two thouſand Inhabitants, beſides the religious People and Slaves, who were both very numerous.

Porto Calvo.

3*dly*, *Porto Calvo*, or *Cavelo*, lies at the Conflux of four Rivers, about thirty Miles South of *The Recief*, and four Leagues Weſt of the Sea-

Sea-Coaſt. This Place was ſtrongly fortify'd when in the Hands of the *Dutch*. Brazil.

4*thly*, Cape *St. Auguſtin* Harbour is ſituated near the moſt Eaſterly Promontory of *Brazil* of the ſame Name, in 8 Degrees odd Minutes South Latitude, and 35 Degrees of Weſtern Longitude, and lies about twenty-five Miles North of the little Iſland of *St. Alexio*. The Entrance of the Harbour is dangerous on account of the Rocks which lie under Water; and this is the Caſe of moſt of the Harbours upon the Coaſt of *Brazil*, which may however ſafely be enter'd by the Aſſiſtance of the Pilots of the Coaſt. Cape *St. Auguſtin*.

8 and 9. The Captainſhip of *Bahia de Todos Santos*, or of the Bay of *All Saints*, in which I include *Serigippe* is bounded by the Province of *Pernambuco*, from whence it is ſeparated by the great River *St. Francis* on the North, by the Ocean on the Eaſt, by that of *Ilheos* on the South, and the *Tapuyers* Country on the Weſt, being about two hundred and forty Miles in Length from North to South along the Sea-Coaſt; how far it extends to the Weſtward is uncertain, but it is eſteem'd the richeſt and moſt populous Province in *Brazil*. The chief Towns whereof are, 1. *Serigippe*, or *St. Chriſtophers*; and, 2. *Bahia*, or *St. Salvador*. Captainſhip of *Bahia*, or *Serigippe*.

1*ſt*, *Serigippe* is ſituated on a Bay of the Sea, in 11 Degrees South Latitude, between the great Rivers of *St. Francis* and *Real*. *Serigippe* Town.

2*dly*, *Bahia*, or *St. Salvador*, of which the laſt is the true Name; but it is generally known by that of *Bahia*, or the *Bay*, on account of the Commodiouſneſs of the Harbour on which it ſtands. It is ſituated on a Hill above the Harbour, in 13 Degrees of South Latitude, *Bahia*, or *St. Salvador*, the Capital of *Brazil* deſcrib'd.

Brazil. according to *Dampier*, and is the moſt conſiderable Town in *Brazil*, whether we regard the Beauty of its Buildings, its Magnitude, or its Trade or Revenue. The Harbour is capable of receiving Ships of the greateſt Burthen. The Entrance whereof is guarded by a ſtrong Fort, call'd *St. Antoni*, and there are other ſmall Forts which command the Harbour, one whereof is built upon a Rock, about half a Mile from the Shore: cloſe by this Fort all Ships muſt paſs that anchor here, and muſt ride alſo within half a Mile of it at fartheſt between this and another Fort (that ſtands on a Point at the inner Part of the Harbour, and is call'd *The Dutch Fort*) but muſt ride neareſt to the former all along againſt the Town, where there is good holding Ground, and leſs expoſed to the Southerly Winds that blow very hard here. They commonly ſet in about *April*, but blow hardeſt in *May*, *June*, *July*, and *Auguſt*: But the Place where the Ships ride is expos'd to theſe Winds not above three Points of the Compaſs.

Beſide theſe there is another Fort fronting the Harbour, and ſtanding on the Hill upon which the Town ſtands. The Town itſelf conſiſts of about two thouſand Houſes, the major Part of which cannot be ſeen from the Harbour; but ſo many as appear in Sight, with a great Mixture of Trees between them, and all placed on a riſing Hill, make a very pleaſant Proſpect.

There are in the Town thirteen Churches, Chapels, Hoſpitals, and Monaſteries, and one Nunnery, *viz.* the *Eccleſia Major*, or Cathedral, and the *Jeſuites College*, which are the chief, and both in ſight from the Harbour: *St. Antonio*, *St. Barbara*, both Pariſh Churches, the *Franciſcans*,

Franciſcans, and the *Dominicans*, and two Convents of *Carmelites*, a Chapel for Seamen cloſe by the Sea-ſide, where Boats commonly land, and the Seamen go immediately to Prayers; another Chapel for poor People, at the farther End of the ſame Street, which runs along by the Shore, and a third Chapel for Soldiers at the Edge of the Town, remote from the Sea, and an Hoſpital in the middle of the Town. The Nunnery ſtands at the outer Edge of the Town next the Fields, wherein, by Report, there are ſeventy Nuns. Here lives an Archbiſhop, who has a fine Palace in the Town, and the Governor's Palace is a fair Stone Building, and looks handſome to the Sea, tho' but indifferently furniſh'd within, both *Spaniards* and *Portugueſe* in their Plantations abroad affecting to have large Houſes, but are little curious about Furniture, except Pictures. The Houſes of the Town are two or three Stories high, the Walls thick and ſtrong, being built with Stone, with a Covering of Pantile, and many of them have Balconies. The principal Streets are large, and all of them pav'd or pitch'd with ſmall Stones. There are alſo Parades in the moſt eminent Places of the Town, and many Gardens, as well within the Town as in the Out-parts of it, wherein are Fruit-Trees, Herbs, Sallading, and Flowers in great Variety, but order'd with no great Care or Art. Brazil.

Here are about four hundred Soldiers in Garriſon. They commonly draw up and exerciſe in a large Parade before the Governor's Houſe, and many of them attend him when he goes abroad. The Soldiers are decently clad in brown Linnen, which in theſe hot Countries is far better than Woollen. Beſide

Brazil.

the Soldiers in Pay, he can ſoon have ſome thouſands of Men up in Arms upon Occaſion. The Magazine is on the Skirts of the Town, on a ſmall Riſing between the Nunnery and the Soldiers Church. 'Tis big enough to hold two or three thouſand Barrels of Powder, but it ſeldom has more than an hundred. There are always a Band of Soldiers to guard it, and Centinels looking out both Day and Night.

A great many Merchants always reſide at *Bahia*, for 'tis a Place of great Trade. *Dampier* found here above thirty great Ships from *Europe*, with two of the King of *Portugal*'s Ships of War for their Convoy, beſide two Ships that traded to *Africa* only, either to *Angola*, *Gamba*, or other Places on the Coaſt of *Guinea*, and abundance of ſmall Craft that only run to and fro on this Coaſt, carrying Commodities from one Part of *Brazil* to another.

Trade and Shipping.

The Merchants that live here are ſaid to be rich, and to have many *Negroe* Slaves in their Houſes, both Men and Women. They are chiefly *Portugueſe*, Foreigners having but little Commerce with them; yet here was one Mr. *Cock*, an *Engliſh* Merchant, *Dampier* relates, a Gentleman of good Repute, who had a Patent to be *Engliſh* Conſul, but did not care to take upon him any publick Character, becauſe *Engliſh* Ships ſeldom came hither, and there had been none in eleven or twelve Years before *Dampier* was there in the Year 1699. Here was alſo a *Dane*, and a *French* Merchant or two, but all have their Effects tranſported to and from *Europe* in *Portugueſe* Ships, none of any other Nation being admitted to trade hither. There is a Cuſtom-houſe by the Sea-ſide, where all Goods imported or exported are enter'd: And to prevent Abuſes, there are

five

five or six Boats that take their Turns to row about the Harbour, searching any Boats they suspect to be running of Goods. Brazil.

The chief Commodities that the *European* Ships bring hither are Linnen Cloths, both coarse and fine, some Woollens, as Bays, Searges, Perpetuana's, *&c.* Hats, Stockings, both of Silk and Thread, Biscuit-Bread, Wheat-Flower, Wine (chiefly Port) Oil, Olive, Butter, Cheese, *&c.* and salt Beef and Pork would there also be good Commodities. They bring hither also Iron, and all sorts of Iron Tools, Pewter Vessels of all sorts, as Dishes, Plates, Spoons, *&c.* Looking-glasses, Beads, and other Toys; and the Ships that touch at *St. Jago* bring thence Cotton-cloth, which is afterwards sent to *Angola*. Goods imported and exported.

The *European* Ships carry from thence Sugar, Tobacco, either in Roll or Snuff, never in Leaf. These are the Staple Commodities; besides which here are Dye-woods, as Fustick, *&c.* with Woods for other Uses, as speckled Wood, Brazil, *&c.* They also carry home raw Hides, Tallow, Train-Oil of Whales, *&c.* Here are also tame Monkeys, Parrots, Parroquets, *&c.* which the Seamen carry home.

The Sugar of this Country is much better than that which we bring home from our Plantations: For all the Sugar that is made here is clay'd, which makes it whiter and finer than our *Muscovado*, as we call our unrefin'd Sugar. Our Planters seldom refine any with Clay, unless sometimes a little to send home as Presents to their Friends in *England*. Claying of Sugar describ'd.

Their Way of doing it is by taking some of the whitest Clay, and mixing it with Water till 'tis like Cream; with this they fill up the Pans with Sugar that are sunk two or three Inches

Brazil.

Inches below the Brim by the draining of the Moloſſes out of it, firſt ſcraping off the thin hard Cruſt of the Sugar that lies at the Top, and would hinder the Water of the Clay from ſoaking through the Sugar of the Pan. The Refining is made by this Percolation: For ten or twelve Days time, that the clayiſh Liquor lies ſoaking down the Pan, the white Water whitens the Sugar as it paſſes through it, and the groſs Body of the Clay itſelf grows hard on the Top, and may be taken off at pleaſure, when ſcraping off with a Knife the very upper Part of the Sugar, which will be a little ſully'd, that which is underneath will be white almoſt to the Bottom: And ſuch as is call'd *Brazil* Sugar is thus whiten'd. When *Dampier* was here, this Sugar was ſold for fifty Shillings *per* Hundred, and the Bottoms of the Pots, which is very coarſe Sugar, for about twenty Shillings *per* Hundred, both Sorts being then ſcarce; for here was not enough to lade the Ships, and therefore ſome of them were to lie here till the next Seaſon.

The Voyage from *Portugal* to *Brazil.*

The *European* Ships commonly arrive here in *February* or *March*, and they have generally quick Paſſages, finding at that time of the Year briſk Gales to bring them to the Line, little Trouble then in croſſing it, and briſk Eaſt-North-Eaſt Winds afterwards to bring them hither. They commonly return from hence about the latter End of *May*, or in *June*.

From *Brazil* to *Guinea.*

The Ships that uſe the *Guinea* Trade are ſmall Veſſels in compariſon of the former: They carry out from hence Rum, Sugar, the Cotton Cloths of *St. Jago*, Beads, *&c.* and bring in Return Gold, Ivory, and Slaves, making very good Returns.

The

Brazil.

The ſmall Craft that belong to this Town are chiefly employ'd in carrying *European* Goods from *Bahia*, the Center of the *Brazilian* Trade, to other Places on this Coaſt, bringing back hither Sugar, Tobacco, *&c.* They are ſailed chiefly with *Negroe* Slaves, and about *Chriſtmas* theſe are moſtly employ'd in Whale-killing; for about that time of the Year a ſort of Whales, as they call them, are very thick on this Coaſt. They come in alſo into the Harbours and inland Lakes, where the Seamen go out and kill them. The Fat of them is boiled to Oil, the Lean is eaten by the Slaves and poor People. Theſe are ſaid to be but ſmall Whales, yet here are ſo many, and ſo eaſily kill'd, that they get a great deal of Money by it. Thoſe that ſtrike them buy their Licence for it of the King, who, 'tis ſaid, receives thirty thouſand *Dollars per Annum* for this Fiſhery. All the ſmall Veſſels that uſe this coaſting Traffick are built here, and ſo are ſome Men of War alſo for the King's Service: And the Timber of this Country is very good and proper for this Purpoſe, being more ſtrong and durable than any we have in *Europe*, and they have enough of it.

Whale Fiſhery.

Ship Building.

Beſides Merchants and others that trade by Sea from this Port, here are other pretty wealthy Men, and ſeveral Artificers and Tradeſmen of moſt ſorts, who by Labour and Induſtry maintain themſelves very well, eſpecially ſuch as can arrive at the Purchaſe of a *Negroe* Slave or two. And indeed, excepting People of the loweſt Degree of all, here are ſcarce any but what keep Slaves in their Houſes. The richer Sort, beſides the Slaves of both Sexes whom they keep for ſervile Uſes in their Houſes, have Men Slaves who wait on them abroad

The Way of Life of the *Portugueſe* at *Bahia*.

for

Brazil. for State, either running by their Horſes ſides when they ride out, or to carry them to and fro on their Shoulders in the Town when they make ſhort Viſits near home. Every Gentleman or Merchant is provided with things neceſſary for this ſort of Carriage. The main thing is a pretty large Cotton Hammock of the *Weſt-India* Faſhion, but moſtly dy'd blue, with large Fringes of the ſame hanging down on each Side. This is carry'd on the *Negroes* Shoulders by the Help of a Bambo about twelve or fourteen Foot long, to which the Hammock is hung, and a Covering comes over the Pole, hanging down on each Side like a Curtain; ſo that the Perſon ſo carry'd cannot be ſeen unleſs he pleaſes, but may either lie down, having Pillows for his Head, or may ſit up by being a little ſupported with theſe Pillows; and by letting both his Legs hang out over one Side of the Hammock, when he hath a mind to be ſeen he puts by his Curtain and ſalutes every one of his Acquaintance whom he meets in the Streets; for they take a piece of Pride in greeting one another from their Hammocks, and will hold long Conferences thus in the Streets; but then their two Slaves who carry the Hammock have each a ſtrong well-made Staff with a fine Iron Fork at the upper End, and a ſharp Iron below, like the Reſt for a Muſket, which they ſtick faſt in the Ground, and let the Pole or Bambo of the Hammock reſt upon them till their Maſters Buſineſs or Compliment be over. There is ſcarce a Man of any Faſhion, eſpecially a Woman, will paſs the Streets but ſo carry'd in a Hammock.

Carriages and Viſits.

Artificers. The chief mechanick Trades here are Smiths, Hatters, Shoe-makers, Tanners, Sawyers, Carpenters, Coopers, *&c.* Here are alſo Taylors,

Taylors, Butchers, *&c.* which laſt kill the Bullocks very dextrouſly, ſticking them at one Blow with a ſharp-pointed Knife in the Nape of the Neck, having firſt drawn them cloſe to a Rail; but they dreſs them very ſlovenly, *Dampier* ſays. It being *Lent* when he came hither, there was no Buying any Fleſh till *Eaſter*-Eve, when a great Number of Bullocks were kill'd at once in the Slaughter-houſes within the Town, Men, Women and Children flocking thither with great Joy to buy, and a Multitude of Dogs almoſt ſtarv'd following them, for whom the Meat ſeem'd fitteſt it was ſo lean. All theſe Tradeſmen buy *Negroes* and train them up to their ſeveral Employments, which is a great Help to them: And they having ſo frequent a Trade to *Angola* and other Parts of *Guinea*, they have a conſtant Supply of Blacks both for their Plantations and Towns. Theſe Slaves are very uſeful in this Place for Carriage as Porters; for as here is a great Trade by Sea, and the Landing-place is at the Foot of a Hill too ſteep for drawing with Carts, ſo there is great need of Slaves to carry Goods up into the Town, eſpecially for the inferiour Sort. But the Merchants have alſo the Convenience of a great Crane that goes with Ropes or Pullies, one End of which goes up while the other goes down. The Houſe in which this Crane is ſtands on the Brow of the Hill towards the Sea, hanging over the Precipice, and there are Planks ſet ſhelving againſt the Bank from thence to the Bottom againſt which the Goods lean or ſlide as they are hoiſted up or let down. The *Negroe* Slaves in this Town are ſo numerous that they make up the greateſt Part or Bulk of the Inhabitants: Every Houſe, as I ſaid, having ſome both

Brazil.

Slaves.

Brazil. Men and Women of them. Many of the *Portugueſe*, who are Batchelors, keep of theſe black Women for Miſſes, tho' they know the Danger they are in of being poiſon'd by them if ever they give them any Occaſion of Jealouſy. Theſe Slaves alſo of either Sex will eaſily be engag'd to do any ſort of Miſchief, even to murder, if they are hir'd to do it, eſpecially in the Night.

Thus far Mr. *Dampier*'s Deſcription, who was there in the Year 1699: After which it is almoſt unneceſſary to obſerve, that *Bahia*, or *St. Salvador*, is the Capital of *Brazil*, the Reſidence of the Vice-roy and the Courts of Juſtice, and the See of an Archbiſhop, to whom the reſt of the Biſhops of *Brazil* are Suffragans. This City was founded by *Thomas de Souſa*, a *Portugueſe*, in the Year 1541, and is obſerv'd not to be very ſtrong on the Land-ſide, being commanded by ſome neighbouring Hills, and accordingly it has been frequently taken and retaken by the *Dutch*, the *Spaniards*, and *Portugueſe*; but the laſt have now continued in the quiet Poſſeſſion of it for fourſcore Years and upwards.

The Captainſhip of *Ilheos*. 10. The Captainſhip of *Ilheos* is bounded by that of *Bahia* on the North, by the Ocean on the Eaſt, by the Province of *Porto Seguro* on the South, and by the Country of the *Tupinambes* on the Weſt. There are two conſiderable Rivers in this Province, the one nam'd

St. Antonio River. *St. Antonio*, which ſeparates it from the Province of *Seguro*, riſing in the Weſt and running Eaſterly falls into the Ocean in 16 Degrees odd Minutes South Latitude. 2. The River

Ilheos River. *Ilheos*, which riſing in a Lake to the Weſtward of this Province, runs to the Eaſt and falls into the Sea about twenty Leagues to the North

North of *St. Antonio*. The chief Town, also named *Ilheos*, stands on a Promontory near the Mouth of the said River, in 15 Degrees odd Minutes South Latitude, and is only remarkable for the Sugar-Mills. Brazil. *Ilheos* Town.

11. The Captainship of *Porto Seguro* is bounded by that of *Ilheos*, from whence it is separated by the River *Antonio* on the North, by the Ocean on the East, by the Province of *Spirito Sancto* on the South, and by the Country of the *Tupinambes* on the West. The River of *Dolce*, or the River of sweet Water, is the largest in this Province. It rises in the Mountains to the Westward, and running Eastward falls into the *Atlantick Ocean* in 20 Degrees of South Latitude; besides which there are three other Rivers that run parallel to it (*viz.*) the River of *Crocodiles*, the *Alequa*, and the River of *St. Michael*. The Captainship of *Porto Seguro*. *Dolce* River. Three other Rivers.

The chief Towns are, 1*st*, *Porto Seguro*, situate upon a Rock near the Sea-coast, in 17 Degrees South Latitude. 2*dly*, *Sancta Cruz*, about three Leagues South of *Seguro*, and *Sancta Amaria*, a little further to the Southward. Towns of *Porto Seguro*, *Sancta Cruz*, and *Sancta Amaria*.

12. The Captainship of *Spirito Sancto*, bounded by that of *Seguro* on the North, by the Ocean on the East, by the Province of *Rio Janeiro* on the South, and by the Country of the *Tupinambes* on the West. The principal River of this Province is that of *Pariba*, or *Parina* River, which falls into the *Atlantick Ocean* in 22 Degrees odd Minutes South Latitude. The only Town I meet with here is *Spirito Sancto*, situate in 20 Degrees 40 Minutes South Latitude, on the Banks of a River of the same Name, about twenty-six The Captainship of *Spirito Sancto*. *Pariba* River. Town of *Spirito Sancto*.

Brazil.

Miles from the Sea, a good Harbour, but of difficult Entrance.

The Captainship of *Rio Janeiro*.

13. The Captainship of *Rio Janeiro*, so call'd from a celebrated Bay and River of that Name, discover'd in the Month of *January*, in the Year 1515, is bounded by the Province of *Spirito Sancto* on the North, by the Ocean on the East, by the Captainship of *St. Vincent* on the South, and by the Mountains which separate it from *La Plata* or *Paraguay* on the West, being about two hundred Miles long, and as many broad. This Bay and River are now resorted to by the *Portuguese* as much as any Part of *Brazil* on account of the rich Gold Mines that have been discover'd in the Mountains to the Westward of this and the neighbouring Province of *St. Vincent*; these have occasion'd the building and peopling the Banks of the River *Janeiro* more than any other Part of *Brazil*, and brought hither a very great Trade.

Bay and River of *Janeiro* much resorted to on account of the Gold Mines.

Chief Town *St. Sebastian*.

The chief City of *St. Sebastian* is situated in 23 Degrees South Latitude, on the West Side of this River, about two Leagues from the Sea, and defended by several strong Forts. It is the See of a Bishop Suffragan to the Archbishop of *St. Salvador*, or *Bahia*. 2*dly*, *Los Reyes*, or *Angra de Los Reyes*, situate about twelve Miles West of the Bay of *Rio Janeiro*. 3*dly*, The Town and Harbour of *St. Salvador*, over-against which lies the Cape or Promontory call'd Cape *Frio*, in 23 Degrees odd Minutes South Latitude, and in 42 Degrees of Western Longitude.

Los Reyes.

St. Salvador.

Cape *Frio*.

The Captainship of *St. Vincent*.

14. The Captainship of *St. Vincent* is bounded by that of *Rio Janeiro* on the North, by the Sea on the East, by the Province of *Del Rey* on the South, and by the Mountains which

which separate it from *La Plata* on the West, extending in Length from North to South three hundred Miles and upwards, *viz.* from the Tropick of Capricorn to 28 Degrees South Latitude, and is reckoned two hundred Miles broad at the North End of it, but not more than ninety or an hundred Miles broad in the South. The chief Towns are, 1*st*, *St. Vincent*, situated at the Confluence of three Rivers on a fine Bay of the *Atlantick Ocean*, in 24 Degrees odd Minutes South Latitude, and defended by several Forts. This Harbour is at present in a flourishing Condition on account of the Gold Mines that have been discover'd in the Mountains to the Westward; but the Town which has the most immediate Advantage by them is, 2*dly*, that of *St. Paul*, built on purpose for their Security, and situate about an hundred Miles North-West of the Town of *St. Vincent*. 3*dly*, The Town of *Santos*, situate on the same Bay with that of *St. Vincent*, and a little to the Northward of it, by some reckon'd the chief Town in the Province.

Brazil.

Chief Towns *St. Vincent*,

St. Paul,

Santos.

15. The fifteenth and last Province of *Brazil* is that of *Del Rey*, bounded by *St. Vincent* on the North, by the *Atlantick Ocean* on the East, by the Mouth of the River *La Plata* on the South, and by the Country of *La Plata*, or *Paragua*, on the West, extending from Latitude 28 to Latitude 34 odd Minutes, being four hundred Miles in Length from North to South, but scarce an hundred broad in any Place from East to West. This Province has been pretty much neglected by the *Portuguese* till of late Years. But since they have found Gold in the adjoining Province of *St. Vincent* they have built several Forts on the North Side of the River *La Plata*, and on the

The Captainship of *Del Rey*.

Islands

Brazil. Iſlands at the Mouth of it to prevent the *Spaniards* ſettling there again, who were once poſſeſs'd of the North Side of that River. This has already occaſion'd ſome Hoſtilities between the *Spaniards* and *Portugueſe*, and poſſibly may occaſion a War between them one time or other; for the Gold Mines are ſuch a Bone of Contention that no Peace can be of any long Duration between two Powers ſituated as the *Spaniards* and *Portugueſe* are, for their Territories are divided only by the Mountains which ſeparate *Brazil* from *La Plata*, or *Paragua*, in which the Gold they both thirſt after is ſuppoſed to be found; but no doubt the *Portugueſe* conceal the Place as well as they can from the *Spaniards* and all other *European* Nations, as they do their Mines of Diamonds and other precious Stones they have diſcover'd in *Brazil* of late Years: However, there is no doubt but they have great Plenty of Gold and precious Stones in ſome Part of *Brazil* (and moſt probably to the Southward) there being brought great Quantities of both from thence annually to *Europe*, which has pretty much ſunk their Value.

Diamonds and other precious Stones.

No Diviſion of the Country before the *Europeans* arriv'd.

Before the *Portugueſe* planted *Brazil*, the Country was not divided into Provinces, but was all one great Common, every Tribe and Family inhabiting and cultivating what Part of it they ſaw fit, and removing their Dwellings whenever they pleaſed, only every Man was look'd upon as the Proprietor of what he planted or poſſeſs'd till he remov'd and left that Part of the Country with the Fruits and Produce of it for another he liked better: And as for their Towns, they conſiſted uſually of five or ſix great Barns, each of which contained two or three hundred and ſometimes a thouſand

Towns, Houſes, and Furniture of the Natives.

thouſand People, and over theſe the Head of the Tribe or Family preſided. The Materials of their Houſes were only long Poles and Reeds, or *Palmeto* Leaves for a Covering, and conſequently it was no great Trouble for them to remove or to erect their Town in another Place: Nor was their Furniture any great Burthen to them, which conſiſted of Hammocks of Cotton Net-work, faſten'd to Poles, in which they ſlept; ſome earthen Pots and Pans, and their Gourds and Calabaſhes which ſerved them cut in half for Pails, Tubs, and Drinking-cups, for they have them of all Sizes; beſides which they had Baſkets, in which they carried their Proviſions on a March; and the Ornaments of their Houſes were their Bows, Arrows, Spears, and other Arms. Brazil.

There were ſome vagrant Nations alſo that had no ſettled Abode, but living in Tents were continually removing from Place to Place, and both the one and the other as often ty'd their Hammocks to the Boughs of Trees and ſlept without Doors as within, but uſed to make Fires near their Lodging to correct the Air, and prevent the ill Effects of the cold Dews that fell in the Night-time, or as others imagine to keep off wild Beaſts and noxious Vermine and Inſects. Some vagrant Nations.

CHAP.

CHAP. III.

Of the Perſons and Habits of the Brazilians, *their Genius and Temper, Arts and Sciences, Food, Exerciſes, and Diverſions.*

Brazil.

THE *Portugueſe* and *Dutch* Writers give the Name of *Tapuyers* to the Natives which inhabit the North Part of *Brazil*, and the Name of *Tupinambes*, or *Tupinamboys*, to thoſe who dwell in the South of *Brazil*, but divide theſe again into ſeveral petty Nations, differing in Language, but not much in Manners and Cuſtoms; and therefore I ſhall only treat of them under the two firſt grand Diviſions of *Tapuyers* and *Tupinambes*.

Two great Nations of the *Brazilians*

Tapuyers, their Perſons.

The *Tapuyers* are Men of a good Stature (but not the Head and Shoulders taller than *Dutchmen*, as ſome have related) and as they inhabit a hot Climate, almoſt under the Equator, are of a dark Copper Colour, their Hair black, and hanging over their Shoulders; but they ſuffer no Hair on their Bodies or Faces, and go almoſt naked, the Men only incloſing the *Penis* in a Caſe, as ſome other *Americans* do, and the Women concealing their Nudities with Leaves, like their Mother *Eve*. The Man has alſo a Cap or Coronet of Feathers, but I don't perceive the Women have any Covering on their Heads.

Wear no Cloaths.

Their

Their Ornaments are glittering Stones hung upon their Lips or Noſtrils, and Bracelets of Feathers about their Arms. Some of them paint their Bodies of all manner of Colours, whereas others rubbing their Bodies with Gums, ſtick beautiful Feathers upon them, which make them look more like Fowls than human Creatures at a Diſtance. Brazil. Ornaments. Paint. Feathers.

The *Tupinambes*, who inhabit the South of *Brazil*, are of a moderate Stature, and not ſo dark a Complexion as their Northern Neighbours who lie nearer the Line; but neither the one or the other are ſo black as the *Africans* are, who lie in the ſame Latitude, it having been obſerv'd already that there were no *Negroes* in *America* till they were tranſported thither by the *Spaniards* and *Portugueſe*. The *Tupinambes*, however, reſemble the *Africans* in their flat Noſes, which are not natural, but made ſo in their Infancy, a flat Noſe being eſteem'd a Beauty among them. They have alſo black curl'd Hair on their Heads, but ſuffer no Hair to grow on their Bodies or Faces any more than the *Tapuyers*, and paint themſelves like the Northern *Brazilians*. *Tupinambes*, their Perſons.

The general Food of the *Brazilians* was the Caſſavi, or Mandioka Root, dry'd and ground to Powder, of which they made Cakes, like our Sea-Biſcuit. They carry'd this Flower with them alſo on Journies, and it ſerv'd them, infus'd in Water, as the *Scots* do Oatmeal, both as Meat and Drink; but I don't find they had any Sort of Corn till the *Europeans* carry'd it thither. They uſed alſo to feed on other Roots, Fruits, and Herbs, and ſuch Veniſon as they could take in Hunting, as alſo on Fiſh and Fowl, if they lived near the Water, and with every thing eat a great deal Food.

Brazil. of Pepper; ſome have added, that they were Canibals, and eat human Fleſh from one End of *Brazil* to the other; but late Travellers obſerving no ſuch thing, little Credit can be given to this. The general Liquor the Natives drink is Spring-Water, of which, 'tis ſaid, they have the beſt and the greateſt Variety in the World; but there are other kinds of Liquors which have a good Body, made of their Fruits preſs'd and infus'd, or of Honey, with which they ſometimes get very drunk, ſitting whole Days and Nights over their Cups. They are charg'd alſo with being a very lazy Generation, that will never work or hunt but when Neceſſity compells them: And

Arts and Sciences. as to Arts and Sciences, they were Maſters of ſcarce any, unleſs the Art of Spinning and Weaving, and forming their Arms, (which conſiſted of Bows, Arrows, Launces, and Darts) and the Art of Building, which was but mean, for their Houſes did not want any great Contrivance. As for Letters, Characters, and Arithmetick, they were perfectly ignorant of them.

They had ſome Knowledge of the Virtues of ſeveral Herbs and Drugs, which they frequently adminiſter'd with Succeſs to the Sick; but a merry Writer relates, that when they deſpair'd of recovering the Patient, all his Relations agreed to knock him on the Head, which they thought much better than a lingering Death; and this may be as true as their devouring human Fleſh.

Exerciſes. Hunting, Fiſhing, and Fowling were rather their Buſineſs than Diverſion, being abſolutely neceſſary for the Support of their Families, in a Country where they had no

Diverſions tame Cattle or Corn: Drinking, Singing, and

and Dancing were more properly their Diverſions, theſe they practis'd on their rejoicing Days, on a Victory, or the Birth of their Children. They are great Smoakers, and take the ſtrongeſt Tobacco: Their Pipes are a hollow Reed or Cane, and the Bowl a large Nut-ſhell that holds almoſt a Handful of Tobacco. Brazil.

They are a tractable and ingenious People, ready to learn any Art or Science the *Portugueſe* will teach them, and take nothing ſo kindly of the Fathers as the inſtructing their Children; which has given the Jeſuites an Opportunity of making abundance of Converts; and thoſe who live under the *Portugueſe* generally conform themſelves to their Cuſtoms in Eating, Drinking, Cloathing, *&c.* Few of theſe go naked. Genius.

CHAP. IV.

Of the Animals of Brazil.

Brazil.

Animals.

AS it has been obſerv'd of the reſt of *America*, ſo here they had neither Horſes, Cows, Sheep, Aſſes, Hogs, Cats, or Dogs (unleſs ſome little mungrel Curs) before the *Europeans* carry'd them over, of all which they have now great Abundance.

Thoſe of *Europe* carry'd thither.

Beaſts proper to this Country.

The Beaſts that were found in this Country were the ſame with thoſe already deſcrib'd in *Mexico* and *Peru*, particularly the *Peruvian* Sheep, their Peccaree (to which the *Europeans* gave the Name of Hogs, from ſome Reſemblance they had to our Hogs) the Sloth, the Armadillo, the Opoſſum, the Guanoe, the Racoon, and Flying-Squirrel, with great Variety of Monkeys, Deer, Hares, and Rabbets, differing ſomething from ours, the Ant, Bear, and ſome Lions and Tygers, but neither ſo large or fierce as thoſe of *Africa*, and Porcupines. Many of theſe Animals have different Names given us by Travellers, but are the ſame already enumerated and deſcrib'd in *Mexico* or *Peru*.

Fowls.

Their Fowls are Maccaws, Parrots, Paroquets, the Quam, the Curaſoe, the Bill-Bird, the Cockrecoe, the Partridge, the Wood-Pigeon, the Heron, the Pelican, the Crab-catcher, the Fiſhing-Hawk, the Oſtrich, the Cormorant,

Cormorant, the Curlieu, the Carrion-Crow, and the Humming-Bird; all which having been already deſcrib'd, I would not tire the Reader with Repetition. They have alſo great Variety of Singing-Birds, ſeveral Species of Wild-Ducks, Wild-Geeſe, and Dunghil-Fowls, and there is not any ſort of Poultry in *Europe* but what has been carry'd thither by the *Portugueſe*: However, Fowls of all Kinds are but dry Meat in theſe hot Climates; nor is their Mutton very good; Pork is the beſt Fleſh we eat between the Tropicks, and obſerv'd to be as eaſy of Digeſtion there as any Meat. Brazil.

The moſt ſurpriſing Relations Travellers entertain us with are concerning the Multitude and monſtrous Size of their Serpents. We are told of ſome that are thirty Foot long and upwards, as big about as an Hogſhead, and which will ſwallow a whole Buck, or a Man, and that they eaſily take either by throwing their Tails about them: And I remember, ſome Travellers that have wrote of the *Eaſt-Indies* have mention'd Serpents that have ſwallow'd a Buck Horns and all; but as I could never hear of any ſuch Monſters when I was in the *Eaſt-Indies*, or of any Serpents that were any thing near that Size, I can't help doubting whether there be any ſuch Monſters here, how gravely or poſitively ſoever ſuch Stories are related; and I am apt to think at laſt that they have miſtaken the Crocodile for a Serpent here as well as elſewhere, tho' even this Creature does not come up to the Dimenſions of this pretended Serpent. Serpents and Inſects.

The ſame Writer (Mr. *Nieuhoff*) has furniſh'd us in his Cuts with a Dragon that has Wings and Feet, an Animal which I am ſtill

of

Brazil. of opinion had never any other Exiſtence than in the Brains of the ancient Poets. Indeed the Word Dragon is found in Scripture, but as the Creature is not deſcrib'd there, the Term may belong to an Animal of a different Form. I believe no one will pretend to affirm that our Tranſlators have never miſtaken the Nature and Form of ſome Animals we meet with in Scripture: For I don't find the Learned are agreed about the Behemoth and the Unicorn any more than they are about the Dragon. But commend me to my Friend *Harris*, who tells us of a Water-Snake in *Brazil* near forty Foot long, and every way proportionable, in whoſe Body were found two whole wild Boars he had ſwallow'd. One would think our Voyage-Writers were lying for a Wager in theſe Caſes. As for the Amphiſbena, or Snake with two Heads, I think 'tis agreed now that he really has but one; only ſome ſhort-ſighted People miſtook his Tail for a Head, it ſeems.

Here is alſo found the Rattle-Snake, and ſeveral other Species of Snakes, which will be deſcrib'd when I come to treat of the *Britiſh* Plantations in *America*. They have alſo Scor-

Inſects. pions, Centepees, Spiders, and other venomous Inſects of an extraordinary Size: And their Ants are almoſt as troubleſome here as in *Africa*, marching in great Bodies, and devouring every thing in their Way, and are only to be deſtroy'd by Fire or Water, and one Species of them, 'tis ſaid, have Wings. Here alſo is the Fire-Fly, which ſeems to differ but little from the Glow-Worm, only in its Wings: When any of theſe fix on Boughs of Trees they appear at a little Diſtance like ſo many Stars.

Of

Of Bees they reckon up twelve ſeveral Sorts, ſome of which have vaſt Neſts in hollow Trees in the Woods, and others in Holes of Rocks, and yield them great Quantities of Honey and Wax; and the Honey does not only ſerve them for Food, but they make a Liquor with it that has ſome Reſemblance of Mead. Brazil.

Their Seas, Lakes, and Rivers, are full of excellent Fiſh, and, as *Dampier* has obſerv'd, the lean Fleſh of the Whales, of which they have great Plenty on this Coaſt, is eaten by the Slaves and poor People at *Brazil.* But the beſt Fiſh on their Coaſt is the Manatee, as big as an ordinary Ox, which has been already deſcrib'd in *Mexico.* They have alſo the Sword-Fiſh, Thraſher, Paracood, Old-wife, Cavally, Gar-fiſh, Mullets, Snooks, Herrings, Mackerel, and Turpoons already deſcrib'd, Oyſters, Crabs, Shrimps, Prawns, and other Shell-fiſh. Their beſt River Fiſh has a Reſemblance of our Perch, and they have others not unlike Jacks and Carp. Fiſh.

Of amphibious Animals they have Tortoiſes of three Kinds, *viz.* the Hawkſbill, the Loggerhead, and the green Tortoiſe; but of theſe it ſeems the *Portugueſe* never eat, tho' our Seamen eſteem the green Tortoiſe very good Food. There are alſo great Numbers of Crocodiles in their Lakes and Rivers, but not ſo large as thoſe of *Africa*; and they have a Creature, which the *Portugueſe* call *Cachora de Agua*, or the Water-Dog, as big as a Maſtiff, and hairy from Head to Tail; he has four ſhort Legs and a long Head, and is of a dark Colour, and lives in freſh Water Lakes and Ponds, but comes on Shore to ſun himſelf, and is ſaid to be good Food. Amphibious Animals.

CHAP.

CHAP. V.

Of their Plants and Vegetables.

Brazil.

Vegetables.

THE Soil of *Brazil*, according to *Dampier*, is generally good, producing very large Trees of divers Sorts, and fit for any Uſes. Their Savannahs or Paſtures are loaden with Graſs and Herbs, and being cultivated, produce every thing that is proper for ſuch Countries as lie between the Tropicks, as Cotton, Tobacco, Indico, Sugar-Canes, Maiz, or *Indian* Corn, and Fruits.

Foreſt Trees.

Of their Foreſt-Trees the chief are, the Sapiera, the Vermiatico, the Commeſſerie, the Guiteba, and the Serrie; the ſpeckled Wood, the Fuſtick, and other dying Woods; three Kinds of Mangrove-Trees, and the Manchinele-Tree.

The Sapiera is a large tall Tree, very good Timber, and made uſe of in building Houſes, as is alſo the Vermiatico, a tall ſtrait-body'd Tree, which furniſhes them with Plank two Foot broad, and of the Bodies of theſe Trees they make their Canoes, or little Country Boats all of a Piece, the Body of the Tree being only ſcoop'd hollow, and ſhap'd ſomething like a Boat at the Head and Stern; and tho' they are ſo narrow that they frequently over-ſet they can't ſink, and the *Indians*, who excell in Swimming, make no Difficulty when they are over-ſet to turn them up again.

The

The Commeſſerie and the Guiteba are moſt uſed in building of Ships, for which Purpoſe they are as much eſteem'd as Oak with us, and are ſaid to be harder and more durable Wood. The Serrie-Tree reſembles the Elm, and is very durable in Water. Their Mangrove Trees are red, white and black, the red being uſed in tanning Leather here, of the black they make good Plank, and of the white, Maſts and Yards for their Barks, both the black and white being much larger in *Brazil* than in the Gulph of *Mexico*. Brazil.

There grows alſo in *Brazil* a wild Cocoa-nut Tree, neither ſo tall or ſo large as thoſe that grow in the *Eaſt* or *Weſt-Indies*. They bear Nuts as the others, but not a quarter ſo big as the right Cocoa-nuts. The Shell is full of Kernel, without any hollow Place or Water in it, and the Kernel is ſweet but very hard both for the Teeth and Digeſtion. Theſe Nuts are in much Eſteem for making Beads for *Paternoſters*, Bowls of Tobacco-Pipes, and other Toys; and every ſmall Shop at the Bay has a great many to ſell. At the Top of theſe baſtard Cocoa-Trees among the Branches there grows a Sort of long black Thread, like Horſe-hair, but much longer, which by the *Portugueſe* is call'd *Treſabo*; of theſe they make Cables, which are very ſerviceable, ſtrong and laſting; for they will not rot as Cables made of Hemp, tho' they lie expos'd to Wet and Heat. Theſe are the Cables which they keep in their Harbours to let out to hire to *European* Ships, and reſemble the *Coyre* Cables.

There are alſo in *Brazil* three Sorts of Cotton Trees, but very little of the right *Weſt-India* Cotton Shrub, of which the Cotton Cloth is made.

Brazil.

Fruits.

As to Fruits they have ſeveral Kinds of Oranges and Limes, Pomegranates, Pomecitrons, and *European* Grapes; but all theſe have been tranſported thither by the *Portugueſe*. There were no ſuch Fruits in *America* till the *Europeans* introduc'd them. They have alſo Plantains, Banana's, Guava's, the true Cocoa-Nut, Cabbage-Trees, Cuſtard-Apples, Sourſops, Caſhews, Papahs, Jenipahs.

The Sourſop is a Fruit as large as a Man's Head, of an oval Shape, green on one Side and yellowiſh on the other when ripe. The Outſide or Coat is pretty thick and very rough, with ſmall ſharp Knobs, the In-ſide is full of a ſpungy Pulp, with black Seeds or Kernels, in Shape and Bigneſs like a Pumpkin-ſeed. The Pulp is very juicy, of a pleaſant Taſte and wholeſome. You ſuck the Juice out of the Pulp, and ſo ſpit it out. The Tree or Shrub that bears this Fruit grows about ten or twelve Foot high, with a ſmall ſhort Body, the Branches growing pretty ſtrait up. The Twigs are ſlender and tough, and ſo is the Stem of the Fruit. This Fruit grows alſo both in the *Eaſt* and *Weſt-Indies*.

The Caſhew is a Fruit as big as a Pippin, pretty long, and bigger near the Stem than at the other End, growing tapering. The Rind is ſmooth and thin, of a red and yellow Colour. The Seed of this Fruit grows at the End of it. 'Tis of an Olive Colour, ſhap'd like a Bean, and about the ſame Bigneſs, but not altogether ſo flat. The Tree is as big as an Apple-Tree, with Branches, not thick, yet ſpreading off. The Boughs are groſs, the Leaves broad and round, and in Subſtance pretty thick. This Fruit is ſoft and ſpungy when ripe, and full of Juice. It is very pleaſant,

pleaſant, and gratefully rough on the Tongue, and is accounted very wholeſome. This Fruit alſo grows both in the *Eaſt* and *Weſt-Indies*.

The Jenipah, or Jenipapah, is a Sort of Fruit of the Calabaſh or Gourd kind. It is about the Bigneſs of a Duck-Egg, and ſomewhat of the oval Shape, and is of a grey Colour. The Shell is not altogether ſo thick nor hard as a Calabaſh. 'Tis full of whitiſh Pulp mixt with ſmall flat Seeds, and both Pulp and Seeds are taken into the Mouth, but ſucking out the Pulp they ſpit out the Seeds. It is of a ſharp and pleaſing Taſte, and is very innocent. The Tree that bears it is much like an Aſh, ſtrait-body'd, and of a good Height, clear from Limbs till near the Top, where the Branches put forth a ſmall Head. The Rind is of a pale grey, and ſo is the Fruit.

Beſide theſe, here are many Sorts of Fruits which are not met with any where elſe, as Ariſah's, Mericaſah's, Petango's, *&c.* Ariſah's are an excellent Fruit, not much bigger than a large Cherry, ſhap'd like a Catherine-Pear, being ſmall at the Stem and ſwelling bigger towards the End. They are of a greeniſh Colour, and have ſmall Seeds as big as Muſtard-Seeds; they are ſomewhat tart, yet pleaſant, and very wholeſome, and may be eaten by ſick People.

Mericaſah's are an excellent Fruit, of which there are two Sorts, one growing on a ſmall Tree or Shrub, which is counted the beſt, the other growing on a kind of Shrub like a Vine, which they plant about Arbours to make a Shade, having many broad Leaves. The Fruit is as big as a ſmall Orange, round and green. When they are ripe they are ſoft, full

Brazil. of white Pulp mixt thick with little black Seeds, and there is no ſeparating one from the other till they are in your Mouth, when you ſuck out the white Pulp and ſpit out the Stones. They are tart, pleaſant, and very wholeſome.

Petango's are a ſmall red Fruit that grow alſo on ſmall Trees, and are as big as Cherries, but not ſo globular, having one flat Side, and alſo five or ſix ſmall protulerant Ridges. 'Tis a very pleaſant tart Fruit, and has a pretty large flatiſh Stone in the Middle.

Petumbo's are a yellow Fruit (growing on a Shrub like a Vine) bigger than Cherries, with a pretty large Stone. Theſe are ſweet, but rough in the Mouth.

Mungaroo's are a Fruit as big as Cherries, red on one Side and white on the other Side. They are full of ſmall Seeds, which are commonly ſwallow'd in eating them.

Muckiſhaws are a Fruit as big as Crab-Apples, growing on large Trees. They have alſo ſmall Seeds in the Middle, and are well taſted.

Ingwa's are a Fruit like the Locuſt Fruit, four Inches long and one broad. They grow on high Trees.

Otee is a Fruit as big as a large Cocoa-nut. It hath a Huſk on the Out-ſide, and a large Stone within, and is accounted a very fine Fruit.

Muſteran de Ova's are a round Fruit as big as large Hazel-nuts, cover'd with thin brittle Shells of a blackiſh Colour. They have a ſmall Stone in the Middle, inclos'd within a black pulpy Subſtance, which is of a pleaſant Taſte. The Out-ſide Shell is chewed with the Fruit and ſpit out with the Stone, when the Pulp is ſuck'd from them.

Palm-

Palm-Berries (call'd here Dendes) grow plentifully about *Bahia*; the largeſt are as big as Wallnuts. They grow in Bunches on the Top of the Body of the Tree among the Branches or Leaves, as all Fruits of the Palm kind do. Theſe are the ſame kind of Berries or Nuts as thoſe they make the Palm-Oil with on the Coaſt of *Guinea*, where they abound. Brazil.

Phyſick-Nuts, as our Seamen call them, are call'd here Pineon, and Agnus Caſtus is call'd here Carrepat. Theſe both grow here; ſo do Mendibees, a Fruit like Phyſick-Nuts. They ſcorch them in a Pan over the Fire before they eat them.

They have Plenty of Callavances, Pine-apples, Pumpkins, Water-melons, Muſk-melons, Cucumbers, and Roots, as Yams, Potatoes, Caſſava's, *&c.* Garden Herbs alſo good ſtore, as Cabbages, Turnips, Onions, Leeks, and abundance of Sallading; and for the Pot, Drugs of ſeveral Sorts, *viz.* Saſſafras, Snake-root, *&c.* beſides the Wood mention'd for Dying and other Uſes, as Fuſtick, ſpeckled Wood, *&c.*

Dampier relates, that the Jeſuites have introduc'd the Cinamon-Tree into their Garden at *St. Salvador*, but it is probable it degenerates, and the Bark is not ſo fine a Spice as that of the *Ceylon* Cinamon, from whence it is brought; for if it were, there is no Reaſon they ſhould not propagate it more; and indeed the Cinamon that grows on the *Malabar* Coaſt in the *Eaſt-Indies*, which is but a few Leagues from *Ceylon*, is not comparable to it; which inclines me to believe that no other Soil but that of *Ceylon* will bear the true Cinamon. I wiſh it were otherwiſe, that we might ſhare that valuable Spice with the *Dutch*, and were not

Brazil. not oblig'd to pay what Price they are pleas'd to ſet upon it.

The Jeſuites have Mango's alſo in their Garden at *St. Salvador*, which is another *Eaſt-India* Fruit, but I find they are not common in *Brazil*.

Corn. As to their Corn, there is no Sort that thrives in *Brazil* like Maiz, or *Indian* Corn. Wheat and Rye grow too rank and run up into Straw; and the only way to procure a good Crop is to make the Soil poorer by mixing Sand with it inſtead of Dung to enrich it: And this is the Caſe of moſt foreign Seeds. Their Seed-time is at the Beginning of the rainy Seaſon, and their Harveſt immediately after it. Their own Trees and Shrubs bear Leaves, Bloſſoms, and Fruit all the Year round; and the ſame is obſerv'd of their Oranges, Limes, and ſome other Fruits that have been carry'd thither: And thoſe who would have ripe Grapes all the Year, 'tis ſaid, only prune their Vines at different Times to effect it, and they produce a fine luſcious Grape as ſweet as Honey; and yet they can have no Wine that will keep here, or in any other Country between the Tropicks, unleſs in *Peru*.

And here I muſt caution the Reader to underſtand what is ſaid above only of that Part of *Brazil* which lies within the Tropick of Capricorn, which is the beſt planted and peopled of any Part of *Brazil*; for in the Countries South of the Tropick of Capricorn, the ſame Grain and Fruits grow as do to the Northward of the Tropick of Cancer, and many Kinds of Fruit which flouriſh between the Tropicks will not come to any thing without the Tropicks: As the Air and Seaſons are very different, ſo are their Grain, Fruits, and Plants generally;

generally; tho' there are ſome will thrive on either ſide the Tropick. Brazil.

The Ants in *Brazil* are great Enemies to the Corn, Fruits, and other Produce of the Earth, which the Huſbandmen endeavour to deſtroy by Fire and Water, but all their Care ſometimes proves ineffectual.

As to their Minerals, there is no doubt but they have diſcover'd very rich Gold Mines of late Years by the vaſt Treaſures of that kind they ſend annually to *Europe*; and 'tis ſaid there are ſome Silver Mines in the Country. They have alſo diſcover'd very rich Diamond Mines, Jaſper, Emeralds, Chryſtal, and other precious Stones, inſomuch that the Value of theſe are much fallen. Minerals.

CHAP.

CHAP. VI.

Of their Hiſtory, Government, Arms, Forces, Wars, Marriages, Women, Children, Slaves, and Funerals.

Brazil.

Hiſtory.

THE firſt Adventurer that diſcover'd the Coaſt of *Brazil* was *Americus Veſputius*, an *Italian*, then in the Service of the King of *Spain:* This was in the Year 1498, but then he ſail'd no further than to the 5th Degree of South Latitude. Afterwards, in the Year 1500, being employ'd by the King of *Portugal*, he ſail'd again to *Brazil*, and extended his Diſcoveries to 52 Degrees of South Latitude; but he does not give us any Account of the Country, or the Natives he ſaw in either of thoſe Voyages.

The ſame Year, 1500, *Emanuel* King of *Portugal* ſending a Fleet of thirteen Sail to the *Eaſt-Indies*, they were driven from their intended Courſe upon the Coaſt at *Brazil*, where meeting with a pretty good Harbour, after a Storm, wherein they had ſuffer'd much, they gave it the Name of *Porto Seguro*, which lies in 17 Degrees of South Latitude, and to the Country they gave the Name of *Santa Cruz*; tho' it ſoon after loſt it, and obtain'd the Name of *Brazil*, as has been obſerv'd already.

The

The Admiral of this Fleet, *Peter Alvarez Capralis*, sent one of his Ships back to *Portugal* with an Account of the Richness of the Country and its agreeable Situation, and then continued his Voyage to the *East-Indies* with the rest. Brazil.

Several private Adventurers upon this Intelligence went over to *Brazil* with their Families, but were most of them destroy'd by the Natives, and no Settlement was made to any purpose till the Year 1549, when *John* III. King of *Portugal*, sent a great Fleet thither with a thousand Soldiers on Board, under the Command of *Thomas de Sosa* their General, and with them a great many Jesuites, whom Pope *Paul* III. desired might be embark'd in order to endeavour the Conversion of the Natives.

This Fleet arriving at the Bay of *All Saints*, General *Sosa* there built the City of *St. Salvador*, of which *Ferdinandez Sardinia* was appointed the first Bishop in the following Year 1550.

The *Portuguese* finding the *Brazilians* divided into several petty Kingdoms and States, at War among themselves, and joining with one Nation against another, by this Means subdu'd first their Enemies and then their Allies, making Slaves of all without Distinction. *Serigippe*, which lies contiguous to the Bay of *All Saints* on the North, and which I have consider'd as Part of this Province, was the first Conquest the *Portuguese* made.

The *French* also made several Attempts to settle Colonies on the Coast of *Brazil*, but were driven from thence from time to time by the *Portuguese*, who at length possess'd them-

Brazil.

ſelves of all the Coaſt from the River *Amazon* to the River of *Plata*.

To juſtify their Invaſions of this Country, and the barbarous Maſſacres they committed there, they have repreſented the People as Infidels without any Notion of God or Religion, and even Canibals: And whereas we have been told by the *Spaniards* that the Countries of *Guiana* and *Caribiana*, which lie contiguous to *Brazil*, and extend from the Equator to 10 Degrees North Latitude, were Canibals. Now the *Portugueſe* endeavour to perſuade us, that the *Brazilians*, whoſe Country extends from the Equator to 35 Degrees of South Latitude, were likewiſe Canibals and Infidels: And indeed this is what the *Spaniards* and *Portugueſe* have affirm'd of all the *American* Nations at one time or other. They tell us, they were perpetually engag'd in War with each other, and eat up their Enemies that fell into their Hands; and yet none of our *Engliſh* Adventurers for an hundred Years paſt, none of our Buccaneers, that have penetrated through and through the Country, and reſided among the *Caribbees* themſelves, who were moſt fam'd for eating human Fleſh, have ever ſeen any ſuch thing.

Knivet's Account of Canibals, Giants, Monſters, &c.

About an hundred and forty Years ago, indeed, ſome of our People, who had their Intelligence, I preſume, from the *Spaniards* and *Portugueſe*, pretended that they had ſeen the *Brazilians* devour their Enemies, of whom the moſt eminent is *Knivet*. This Gentleman tells us he was left ſick on Shore at *Brazil* by Captain *Cavendiſh*, in the Year 1592, and being taken Priſoner by the Natives, together with twelve *Portugueſe*, his Companions were kill'd, broil'd, and eaten, but his Life was

ſav'd

ſav'd becauſe the Natives took him for a *Frenchman*; and of theſe Executions he gives us the following Account:

That having taken a Priſoner in Battle, and convey'd him into their own Country, they give him one of their Siſters or Daughters to ſerve him as a temporary Wife, furniſhing him with the beſt Food, and all that is deſirable in Life; and when they have fatted him, they proclaim the Day and Place of his Execution; in the Morning whereof many thouſands of the People aſſemble early, drinking, ſinging, and dancing for ſeveral Hours; after which the Captive is brought out, bound about the Body with Cords, which are held by ſix or ſeven People, but his Hands at liberty: In this Condition the Priſoner uſually makes a Speech to the People, and tells them, *Thus have I often bound your Friends and Relations, and then broil'd and devour'd them; nor will my Countrymen ſuffer my Death to be long unrevenged.* Then they bring him Stones and bid him revenge himſelf, whereupon he throws them among the Multitude, of whom he frequently wounds ſeveral; and having continued this Sport ſome time, one advances with the fatal Club, and demanding, *Art thou he that haſt kill'd and devour'd our People? Take leave of all that is pleaſant and deſirable to thee, for thou ſhalt ſee them no more; thou ſhalt be kill'd and devour'd in like manner as thou haſt kill'd and devour'd our Friends*; and then beats out his Brains with a Club. After which the Wife they had given him comes and bewails the Fate of her Huſband, but eats the firſt Slice of him, however, when he is broil'd, 'tis ſaid, and then the reſt of the Carcaſe is cut in Pieces and diſtributed among the People, par-

Brazil. ticularly they give the Guts and Entrails to the Women, and the Head and Brains fall to the Share of the Children. *Purchaſe*, Vol. IV. p. 1217. Vol. V. p. 914.

If any Man ſhould be found credulous enough to believe this formal and improbable Tale, yet the reſt of the monſtrous Relations contain'd in Mr. *Knivet*'s Narrative, which are now known to be falſe, are ſufficient to ſhock his Faith in this.

He relates, that the People of *Tucuman*, a Province of *La Plata*, are Pigmies; *Purchaſe*, Vol. IV. p. 1231. And that at the Streights of *Magellan* he met with another Nation of Pigmies, of about five Spans high, and with Mouths from Ear to Ear, of whom he ſaw ſeveral thouſands; and that they traffick'd with the *Engliſh*, giving them Pearls and Feathers for *European* Toys.

That in the ſame Streights he ſaw naked Giants ſixteen Spans high; *Purchaſe*, Vol. IV. p. 1231.

That he ſaw a Monſter of a Mermaid, p. 1240.

That he had ſeen a Snake that ſwallow'd Men, Stags, and Oxen, and after ſuch Morſels would lie ſleeping till his Fleſh rotted, or was pick'd clean off the Bones by Birds of Prey; after which new Fleſh grew upon the Bones again, and the Creature awaked, his Head having been alive all the while, but bury'd in Mud. *Purchaſe*, Vol. V. p. 914.

That he knew ſeveral *Brazilians* poſſeſs'd by the Devil, and ſome of them kill'd by evil Spirits. He himſelf heard an *Indian* diſcourſing with an evil Spirit, and threatening to turn Chriſtian if the Spirit did not ceaſe to afflict him. May we not, after ſuch a multitude of

idle

idle Stories, very well ſuſpend our Belief of the firſt in relation to Canibals? And yet this is the Man whoſe Accounts of theſe Things are moſt depended upon, and which *Purchaſe*, in his Collection, has given ſuch Countenance to that he has compil'd his Narratives twice over (*viz.*) in the fourth and fifth Volumes, from whence I took theſe pretty Stories. But it being acknowledg'd that the *Caribbees* and other Nations charged with eating human Fleſh have generally left it off at this Day; and the Reaſon of their preſent Abſtemiouſneſs being demanded, one of Mr. *Purchaſe*'s Authors informs us, that they happen'd to eat a Friar whoſe Fleſh poiſon'd ſeveral of them, and that was the Reaſon they never lik'd Man's Fleſh ſince. *Purchaſe*, Vol. III. p. 865. Brazil.

As to Religion, the *Portugueſe* will not allow the *Brazilians* any, and yet they tell us they have Prieſts, and allow a State of Rewards and Puniſhments; that the Brave go to *Elyſium*, or Paradiſe, and mean and cowardly Souls to a Place of Torment. *Purchaſe*, Vol. V. p. 915, *&c.* Religion.

The ſame Authors admit, that their Prieſts direct them to bring their Offerings to them, and aſſure them, on their doing this, that thoſe inviſible Beings who give them Food and all the good Things they enjoy, will proſper their Affairs; and if they neglect this they muſt expect ſome dreadful Calamities will overtake them, and that accordingly the People bring them ſuch Fruits as they apprehend will be moſt acceptable. They inform us alſo, that they believe their Souls ſurvive their Bodies, and are converted into Dæmons, or Spirits, after Death. *Purchaſe*, Vol. IV. p. 1289. Vol. V. p. 916, 917.

Another

Brazil. Another Writer in *Purchaſe*'s Collection tells us, they comforted themſelves that they ſhould after Death viſit their Anceſtors beyond certain Mountains. From all which it is evident that this People were not entirely without Religion; that they believe ſome inviſible Beings are the Authors of all their good and bad Fortune in the World; and that they ſhall be rewarded and puniſh'd hereafter according to their Behaviour in this Life, and conſequently are not thoſe Infidels they are ſometimes repreſented.

And tho' the idolatrous *Portugueſe* make their having no Images amongſt them another Argument that they have no Religion, I preſume that will be of little Weight with Proteſtants. But further, we meet with Writers in *Purchaſe* that tell us ſome of the *Brazilians* worſhip the new Moon, at leaſt that they dance and ſing when it appears: And that others worſhip the Conſtellation call'd the great Bear, rejoicing much when it appears in their Hemiſphere.

As to their having no Temples, perhaps they look upon the Heaven over their Heads to be the only proper Temple to adore the great Creator in, or at leaſt moſt proper to adore the Sun, Moon, and Stars, if they worſhip them as Gods, as ſome relate.

Nor do theſe People live without Government. They have Kings in their reſpective Territories, who adminiſter Juſtice according to the Cuſtom of their ſeveral Countries, tho' they have no written Laws: And where one Man has injur'd another, he is oblig'd to make him Satisfaction in kind, if it be poſſible: And no People are more kind or hoſpitable to Strangers than the *Brazilians* are, ſo far are they

they from murdering and devouring Foreigners, even by the Relation of thoſe very *Portugueſe*, that have repreſented them as Canibals. Brazil.

In their Marriages they are not confin'd to one Woman, but enter into a Contract, however, with their Relations to uſe them well, in which they are uſually as good as their Words; and when a Man takes home his Wife there is great Feaſting and Rejoicing, but no other Ceremony that I can learn. Marriages

The Women, however, ſeem to have much the greateſt Share in the Care and Trouble of providing for the Family; for they are not only employ'd in their domeſtick Affairs, but it falls to their Lot to plant and gather in their Fruits, Roots, and other Food. The Man is only employ'd in making his Arms, or in Hunting or Fiſhing; and upon a March or Removal, the Women carry all the Baggage.

They tell us a great many idle Stories in relation to their Womens bearing Children, and particularly, that the Woman is no ſooner deliver'd but ſhe goes about her Buſineſs, and the Huſband is put to Bed in her Stead, and the Child is left to ſhift for itſelf upon the Floor. And yet in other Places they tell us, that no People are ſo fond of their Children as the *Brazilians*; and indeed the Relations that *Purchaſe* has compil'd are ſo inconſiſtent and full of Contradictions, that we ſcarce know what to make of them.

The beſt Account I can collect of their Funerals and Mourning is, that upon the Death of any Perſon, the Friends and Relations aſſemble and ſet up a Howl, not unlike that of the wild *Iriſh*, repeating by Turns the Praiſes of the Deceas'd, admiring his Wealth, his Strength, Beauty, and excellent Parts, the multi- Funerals.

tude

Brazil.

tude of his Friends, Servants and Cattle, concluding with Words of the following Tenour: *He is dead; we shall see him no more until we dance with him beyond the Mountains.* These Lamentations having continued six Hours, they prepare to bury the Deceas'd, digging a Grave like the Mouth of a Well, in which they place the Corpse in a sitting Posture, and building a little Tomb of the Form of a Dome over him, they leave at the Place all manner of Meat and Drink, his Arms, and whatever was useful to him while alive, coming every Day with fresh Supplies to the Grave for a Month, making the same Lamentations they did the first Day, and afflicting themselves during this time by Fasting and other Penances; and if he leave Wives behind him they cut off their Hair. This Mourning having continued a Month, they resume their former Way of Life. The Master of the Family is usually buried in the Middle of the House, and his Tomb adorn'd with beautiful Feathers and other Ornaments.

Wars and Arms.

As to the Wars of these People among themselves, they had no other Arms but Bows, Arrows, and wooden Swords or Clubs, and in some Places Shields; and when they charg'd an Enemy it was never in Rank and File, but in great Confusion if they came to a Field Fight, which was not often, for most of their Actions were perform'd by Surprise. They would march Day and Night with great Expedition, and lying in Woods fall upon their Enemies when they were unprepar'd to receive them, carrying away Men, Women, and Children into Slavery; for their Towns had no Walls or Fortifications to defend them.

To

Brazil.

To proceed in the History. I have already observ'd that the *Portugueſe* diſcover'd this Country in the Year 1500; that they made ſeveral Attempts to plant it with ſmall Succeſs, till the Year 1549, when they fix'd themſelves at the Bay of *All Saints*, and built the City of *St. Salvador*; that the *French* alſo made ſome Attempts to plant Colonies on this Coaſt, but were driven from thence by the *Portugueſe*, who remain'd in *Brazil* almoſt without a Rival till the Year 1623; but being then under the Dominion of the King of *Spain*, with whom the *United Provinces* were at war, the *Dutch Weſt-India* Company fitted out a ſtrong Fleet, and putting a good Body of Land Forces on Board, ſent them to *Brazil*, where they attack'd and took the City of *St. Salvador*, in the Bay of *All Saints*, with very little Loſs: But the King of *Spain* ſending a great Fleet and Army thither in the Year 1625, recover'd the City again, and drove the *Dutch* out of the Country. However, the *Hollanders* continued to ſend ſtrong Squadrons to the Coaſt of *Brazil* every Year, where they harraſs'd the *Portugueſe* Settlements, and made abundance of rich Prizes; and making a Deſcent near *Olinda*, in the Year 1629, took that City with the Fortreſs of *The Recief*, and being join'd by ſome Nations of the *Indians* againſt the *Portugueſe*, at length poſſeſs'd themſelves of the entire Province of *Pernambuco*, where they erected a great many Forts, and compell'd the *Portugueſe* who reſided in that Part of the Country to obey them as their Soveraigns; whereupon Count *Maurice* of *Naſſau* was pleas'd to accept the Government of the *Dutch* Territories in *Brazil*, and remain'd in that Capacity at *The Recief*, or

St. Salvador retaken by the *Spaniards*.

The *Dutch* take *Olinda* and the whole Province of *Pernambuco*.

Count *Maurice* Governor of *Dutch Brazil*.

Brazil.

Pernambuco, from the Year 1637 to the Year 1644, during all which Time the *Dutch* and *Portugueſe* remaining in a State of War, Prince *Maurice* recover'd from the *Portugueſe* three more of their Northern Provinces: Nor did he content himſelf with taking Places from the *Portugueſe* in *Brazil*, but detach'd from thence a Squadron to the Coaſt of *Africa*, and took from them the important Fort of *Del Mina*, the ſtrongeſt Fortreſs on the *Guinea* Coaſt, which the *Hollanders* are in poſſeſſion of at this Day. But the *Dutch Weſt-India* Company not ſupplying the Count with ſuch a Number of Forces as he apprehended was neceſſary to ſecure their Conqueſts againſt the *Portugueſe*, he return'd to *Holland* in Diſguſt, in the Year 1644, after which the Affairs of the *Dutch* in *Brazil* declin'd apace; for the *Portugueſe* who lived under the Government of the *Hollanders*, joining their Countrymen, by degrees recover'd all the Towns which the *Hollanders* were in poſſeſſion of, and drove them entirely out of *Brazil* again, in the Year 1654.

Reduces three Provinces more.

However, the *Dutch* ſtill continuing their Pretenſions to *Brazil*, and committing continual Depredations on the *Portugueſe* at Sea, the latter agreed, at a Treaty of Peace made between the King of *Portugal* and the *States General*, by the Mediation of *England*, in the Year 1661, to pay the *Dutch* eighty Tuns of Gold to relinquiſh their Intereſt in that Country; which was accepted, and the *Portugueſe* have remain'd in the peaceable poſſeſſion of all *Brazil* from that Day to this.

The preſent Inhabitants of *Brazil*.

I come now to conſider the preſent Inhabitants of *Brazil*, which are, 1. *Portugueſe*. 2. *Crioli*. 3. *Meſtiſe*. 4. *Negroes*; and, 5. *Brazilians*. The *Portugueſe* of *Europe*, who are

are the Governors, are the fewest in Number; the *Crioli*, or those born of *Portuguese* Parents in *Brazil*, are more numerous; and the *Mestise*, or mingled Breed, still more numerous than either; for few of the *Portuguese* but have had black or tawny Mistresses, and the Issue of these having intermarry'd, they are multiply'd to a very great degree: But whether the *Negroes* do not exceed all the rest I much question, there having been so many imported annually from *Africa* for an hundred and fifty Years past. The *Dutch* relate, that when they were possess'd of the Northern Provinces of *Brazil*, which are not a Third of the Whole, they employ'd no less than forty thousand *Negroes* in their Sugar-Works and other Husbandry: And as the *Portuguese* employ'd a proportionable Number, which have been increasing and multiplying for upwards of an hundred Years, and so many thousands annually imported all the while, they must of necessity swarm upon the *Brazil* Coast by this time; and indeed there are some *Portuguese* Planters, 'tis said, that have several hundreds of *Negroe* Slaves, and when they have not Employment for them they suffer them to work for themselves, paying their Masters something weekly out of what they get: And those *Negroes* which are bred up to any Trade, such as Carpenters, Smiths, and Bricklayers, bring in their Masters a handsome Income.

As to the native *Brazilians*, they are partly Freemen and partly Slaves; but the *Negroe* Slaves are much more valued than the *Brazilians*, being of more robust Constitutions, and fitter for Labour: As they come from the Coast of *Africa*, opposite to *Brazil*, which is

Brazil. much hotter, they endure Fatigue in the hot Seaſon better than the Natives. Nor are the latter now very numerous; for the *Portugueſe*, on their Invaſion of this Country, like the *Spaniards*, in their Conqueſts deſtroy'd the unfortunate Natives by all the cruel Ways they could invent, inſomuch that of an hundred thouſand Men they found in the ſmall Province of *Serigippe* (if we may credit the *Dutch* Writers) they reduc'd them in a few Years to four or five hundred Men.

The Force of the *Portugueſe* in *Brazil*. As to the Forces and Strength of the *Portugueſe* in *Brazil*, I don't at all doubt but that it is ſufficient at this Day to maintain the Dominion of that Country againſt any other Power. The *Engliſh* and *Dutch* and other Powers may diſturb their Navigation, and perhaps now and then ſurpriſe their maritime Places, but I don't apprehend they would any of them be able to take this Country from them, if they ſhould attempt it; for that Mixture of People, *Portugueſe*, *Crioli*, Natives, *Meſtiſe*, and *Negroes*, are now in a manner one People, their Religion the ſame, and their Blood intermix'd by Marriages, and would infallibly unite therefore againſt all the reſt of the World, however they may diſagree among themſelves while they have no Enemy to contend with. And this is an Advantage that the *Spaniards*, *Portugueſe*, and *French* have of the *Engliſh* in *America*; theſe Nations always make the Natives and *Negroes* where they have any Power of their own Religion, and theſe, in a little time, diſcover as much or more Zeal for their Superſtition than the *Spaniards* themſelves, and would never bear that any People, who carry'd the Name of Hereticks, ſhould plant themſelves

themſelves amongſt them, if they had no other Reaſon to oppoſe it. Brazil.

Nor is the Circumſtance of Marriage and Alliance inconſiderable. Blood and Relation lays ſtrong Obligations upon all People to unite againſt Strangers; and this the *Engliſh* do not enough conſider when they prohibit their People matching with the Natives or *Negroes*, and we ſeem as averſe to the inſtructing them in our Religion as we do to the mingling our Blood with theirs; which is the Reaſon they generally remain in a ſeparate Intereſt, and inſtead of ſerving their Allies or Maſters faithfully, are ever conſpiring to cut their Throats, and eſcape out of their Hands, and poſſibly would rather join an Enemy than oppoſe him.

But to proceed. Any *European* Power would find much greater Difficulties in driving the *Portugueſe* from their Settlements in *Brazil* than they did to fix themſelves there; for the Inhabitants were then a naked defenceleſs People, and divided into a great many little States and Kingdoms; whereas the preſent Inhabitants are all united and underſtand the Art of War as well as we do. They are alſo uſed to that hot Climate, which muſt prove fatal to abundance of *Europeans* on their Arrival there, as well as the Want of Proviſions, which the *Portugueſe* would not fail to deſtroy in order to diſtreſs their Enemies. From all which Conſiderations I conclude, that the *Portugueſe* are now ſo well fix'd in *Brazil* that it is not in the Power of any other Nation to expell them from this Country and fix themſelves in it.

If

Brazil.

If the *Dutch*, who had poſſeſs'd themſelves of four of their Provinces, and had ſo many Fortreſſes in *Brazil*, could not maintain their Ground, it is reaſonable to believe that no other Power will be able to ſucceed in ſuch an Enterprize.

THE

THE PRESENT STATE OF THE *British* Plantations.

CHAP. I.

Of the Name, Situation, Extent, and Subdivisions of the British *Plantations on the Continent of* America, *and more particularly of the Province of* Virginia.

THE *British* Dominions in *America* come next to be consider'd; and these are divided into, 1*st*, Those that are situated on the Continent; and, 2*dly*, The Islands. The Territories subject to *Britain* on the Continent (except *Hudson's Bay*, or *New-Britain*) lie contiguous, and are extended along the Eastern Coast of *North-America* from 31 Degrees

British Plantations

Their Situation and Extent.

Virginia. Degrees of Northern Latitude to 50 and upwards, lying between the 63d and 83d Degrees of Weſtern Longitude: And as the Coaſt runs or extends from the South-Weſt to the North-Eaſt, they are about fifteen hundred Miles in Length, and generally under two hundred Miles broad, but in no Place four hundred, unleſs we take in the *Iroquois* and other *Indian* Nations under our Protection, and then they may be extended further Weſtward.

When the *Spaniards* firſt diſcover'd the Country North of the Gulph of *Mexico*, they call'd it all by the general Name of *Florida*; but having graſped more than they could cultivate or defend, they in a manner deſerted this Part of *America*, and fix'd themſelves in thoſe Parts of it that abounded in Silver and Gold. Whereupon the *Engliſh*, *French*, and *Dutch* thought themſelves at liberty to ſend Colonies to *North-America*, and gave ſuch Names to the Countries they reſpectively poſſeſs'd themſelves of as they ſaw fit.

The Name. Sir *Walter Ralegh* was the firſt *Engliſh* Adventurer who attempted to ſettle Colonies on this Coaſt, and gave it the Name of *Virginia*, in Honour of his Soveraign, the Virgin Queen *Elizabeth*, as will appear more at large in the Chapter aſſign'd for treating of the Hiſtory of this Country. It was afterwards divided into *North* and *South-Virginia*, but at this Subdiviſion. Day we find it ſubdivided into the eight following Provinces (*viz.*) 1. *Carolina*, in which *Georgia* is comprehended. 2. *Virginia Proper*. 3. *Maryland*. 4. *Penſilvania*. 5. *New Jerſey*. 6. *New-York*. 7. *New-England*; and 8. *New-Scotland*, call'd alſo *Acadia* and *Acady*. 9. There is ſtill a ninth Province call'd *New-Britain*, or the *Terra de Labarador*, which

which is in a great measure the same with that call'd *Hudson*'s Bay and Streights, and is separated from the rest of the *British* Territories by the River of *St. Laurence* and Part of the *French Canada*. It extends from 50 to 64 Degrees of North Latitude, and lies between 60 and 90 Degrees of Western Longitude. Virginia.

And that I may not be thought to have assign'd this vast Country to *Britain* without any Foundation, I shall here present the Reader with that Article in the Treaty of *Utrecht*, made in the Year 1712, whereby the *French* resign'd this Part of *America* to *Great-Britain*, which is of the following Tenour (*viz.*)

" The said most Christian King shall re-
" store to the Kingdom and Queen of *Great-*
" *Britain*, to be possess'd in full Right for
" ever, the Bay and Streights of *Hudson*, to-
" gether with all Lands, Seas, Sea-Coasts,
" Rivers, and Places situated in the same
" Bay and Streights, and which belong thereto,
" no Tracts of Land or Sea being excepted
" which are at present possess'd by the Sub-
" jects of *France*. All which, as well as
" any Buildings there made in the Condition
" they now are, and likewise all Fortresses
" there erected, either before or since the
" *French* seiz'd the same, shall, within six
" Months from the Ratification of the pre-
" sent Treaty, or sooner, if possible, be well
" and truly deliver'd to the *British* Subjects,
" having Commission from the Queen of
" *Great-Britain* to demand and receive the
" same, entire and undemolish'd, together
" with all the Cannon and Cannon-Ball, and
" Powder, *&c.* which are therein."

As the *French* have yielded this Country to the *English*, they have at least given us all the

Virginia.

Right they had to it, and excluded themſelves from it; what Right we may have to it in regard to the Natives is another Point that will be diſcuſſed hereafter.

I proceed now to deſcribe the reſpective Provinces in the Order of Time they were ſeverally planted, of which *Virginia Proper* being the firſt, naturally becomes the firſt Subject of our Enquiries.

This Country with the reſt of the aboveſaid Provinces, obtain'd the Name of *Virginia*, as has been already obſerv'd, from Sir *Walter Ralegh*, who call'd it *Virginia* in Honour of Queen *Elizabeth*; but the Province to which the Name of *Virginia* is now appropriated is bounded by the great River *Patowmack* on the North-Eaſt, by the *Atlantick Ocean* on the Eaſt, by *Carolina* on the South, and by the *Apalathian* Mountains, which ſeparate it from *Florida*, on the Weſt, extending from 36 to 39 Degrees odd Minutes North Latitude, and lying between 74 and 80 Degrees of Weſtern Longitude, and is about two hundred and forty Miles in Length from North to South, and one hundred and twenty Miles in Breadth from Eaſt to Weſt.

Virginia Proper, its Situation.

CHAP.

CHAP. II.

Of the Face of the Country, its Mountains, Seas, Capes, Bays, Rivers, Springs, Lakes, Winds, Tides, and Seasons.

THERE are no Mountains in *Virginia*, unleſs we take in the *Apalathian* Mountains, which ſeparate it from *Florida*; but theſe have not yet been planted or inhabited by the *Engliſh* or any other People that I can learn. Virginia. The Face of *Virginia*

As we approach *Virginia* from the Ocean, it appears to be low Land, inſomuch that (according to Mr. *Clayton*) the Trees ſeem at a little Diſtance to grow out of the Water: And for an hundred Miles up into the Country there is ſcarce a Hill or a Stone to be met with, only in ſome Places there are Rocks of Iron Ore appear, and in others there are Banks of petrefy'd Oyſter-ſhells, ſome of them above twenty Yards deep. The whole Country, before it was planted, was either Foreſts or Bogs and Moraſſes, which the People in the *Weſt-Indies* call Swamps; and ſuch the greateſt Part of it is at preſent. Their Trees being much loftier than ours, and no Underwood or Buſhes growing beneath, People travel with Eaſe through theſe Foreſts on Horſeback, and never want a fine Shade to defend them from the Summer Heats.

Virginia. The only Sea that borders upon *Virginia* is that of the *Atlantick Ocean* on the Eaſt, in

Seas. which are two very remarkable Capes or Promontories (*viz.*) 1. That of Cape *Henry*; and, 2. That of Cape *Charles*. Cape *Henry* lies in 37 Degrees North Latitude, and Cape *Charles* about thirty Miles to the Northward of it; between which Capes Ships enter the great Bay of *Cheſepeak*, which runs up through *Virginia* and *Maryland*, almoſt due North three hundred Miles and upwards, being navigable moſt part of the Way for large Ships. This Bay is at the Entrance ſeven or eight and twenty Miles over, and in moſt Places about twenty Miles broad.

Cape *Henry*.

Cape *Charles*.

Bay of *Cheſepeak*.

Rivers. Into the Weſt Side of this Bay fall four great Rivers, which riſe in the *Apalathian* Mountains, all of them running from the North-Weſt to the South-Eaſt. The moſt Southerly of theſe is *James* River, the *Indian* Name whereof was *Powhaton*, being generally about two Miles over, and navigable at leaſt fourſcore Miles. *York* River, whoſe *Indian* Name was *Pamunky*, is a little to the Northward of *James* River, and in ſome Places they approach one another ſo near that they are not five Miles aſunder. To the Northward of *York* River is the River of *Raphanack*, which in ſome Places is not ten Miles diſtant from *York* River, and either of them as broad or broader than *James* River. North of *Raphanack* is the great River of *Patowmack*, which in ſome Places is not above ſeven Miles diſtant from *Raphanack* River, and in other Places upwards of fifty: This River of *Patowmack* is navigable near two hundred Miles, being nine Miles broad in ſome Places, but generally about ſeven. The Mouth of the River

James River.

York River

Raphanack River.

Patowmack River

River *Patowmack* and that of *James* River are about an hundred Miles asunder; but the Heads of all the four Rivers rise in the same Hills pretty near each other; and, as Mr. *Clayton* expresses it, the Heads of these Rivers interfere and are lock'd within each other, as they are also within the Heads of several other Rivers that rise in the same Mountains and run towards the West. Virginia.

The Tides in these Rivers regularly ebb and flow about two Foot perpendicular; and at *James* Town there is a Tide and half Tide, as they call it, that is, it flows near two Hours along by the Shore after it is Ebb in the Channel, and again it ebbs near two Hours by the Shore after it is Flood. This is a great Advantage to the Boats passing up and down the River. I suppose, says Mr. *Clayton*, this is caused by the numerous Creeks and Branches of the River, which are many of them as broad as the *Thames* at *London*, some ten Miles long, and others above twenty that have little fresh Water in them, their Current primarily depending upon the Flux and Reflux of the Sea; so that after the Tide is made in the Channel it flows by the Shore a considerable time afterwards, those Creeks being still to fill, and therefore (as it were) draws up a Source upwards by the Shore, and likewise when the Tide returns in the Channel, the Creeks that could not so readily disburse their Water, being still to empty themselves, they make an Ebbing by the Shore a considerable time after it is Flood in the Channel; and so far as the salt Waters reach, the Country is deem'd less healthy. Tides.

As to their Springs, Mr. *Clayton* observes, that their Waters are generally more eager Springs.

than

Virginia. than thoſe in *England*, and require more Malt to make Beer: Nor will they bear Soap. He ſaw a Spring in *The Iſle of Wight* County, he ſays, from whence their iſſu'd a greater Body of Water than ever he met with, except that of *Holy-Well* in *Wales*; and there is another Spring ſo cold that it is dangerous drinking of it in Summer-time. He obſerv'd alſo, that moſt of their Waters had a petrefying Quality.

Lakes. As to Lakes, I don't find there are any on the Eaſt Side of the Mountains, unleſs their Swamps or Bogs are to be accounted ſuch (as they very well may in Winter-time) and of theſe indeed they have as many as any Country can boaſt of; but on the Weſt Side of the Mountains are a great many large Lakes, of which the *French* are in poſſeſſion, as 'tis ſaid, but theſe have not a Communication with each other, or with the River of *St. Laurence*, as is commonly reported.

The Air, Winds, and Seaſons. The ſame Writer in his Letters to the *Royal Society* obſerves, that the Air and Seaſons depend very much on their Winds, as to Heat and Cold, Dryneſs and Moiſture. The North and North-Weſt Winds are very nitrous and piercing cold and clear, or elſe ſtormy. The South-Eaſt and South, hazy and ſultry hot. Their Winter is a fine clear Air and dry, which renders it very pleaſant. Their Froſts are ſhort, but ſometimes very ſharp, that it will freeze the Rivers over three Miles broad; nay, the Secretary of State aſſur'd me, ſays Mr. *Clayton*, it had frozen *Patowmack* River, over-againſt his Houſe, where it is near nine Miles over. He adds, I have obſerv'd it freezes there the hardeſt when from a moiſt South-Eaſt, on a ſudden the Wind paſſing by the *Nore*, a nitrous ſharp *Nore*-Weſt blows,

blows, not with high Gusts, but with a cutting brisk Air, and those Valleys then that seem to be shelter'd from the Wind, and lie warm, where the Air is most stagnant and moist, are frozen the hardest and seized the soonest, and there the Fruits are more subject to Blast than where the Air has a free Motion. Snow falls sometimes in pretty great Quantities, but rarely continues there above a Day or two. Their Spring is about a Month earlier than in *England*; in *April* they have frequent Rains; *May* and *June* the Heat increases, and it is much like our Summer, being mitigated with gentle Breezes that rise about nine of the Clock, and decrease and incline as the Sun rises and falls. *July* and *August* those Breezes cease, and the Air becomes stagnant, that the Heat is violent and troublesome. In *September* the Weather usually breaks suddenly, and there falls generally very considerable Rains. When the Weather breaks many fall sick, this being the Time for Cachexies, Fluxes, scorbutical Dropsies, Gripes, or the like; which I have attributed to this, says Mr. *Clayton*, that by the extraordinary Heat, the Ferment of the Blood being rais'd too high, and the Tone of the Stomach relaxed, when the Weather breaks the Blood palls, and like over-fermented Liquors, is depauperated, or turns eager and sharp, and there is a crude Digestion, whence the above-named Distempers may be supposed to ensue; and then Chalibiates, that raise the decay'd Ferment, are no bad Practice, after which, I conceive, Armoniack Spirits might be very beneficial. But their Doctors are so learned, that I never met with any of them, says this Gentleman, that understood what Armoniack Spirits were. Two or three of them one time

Virginia.

Diseases.

Remedies.

ran

Virginia.

ran me clear down by Consent, that they were vomitive, and that they never used any thing for that Purpose but *Crocus Metallorum*, which indeed every House keeps, and if their Finger ach they immediately give three or four Spoonfuls thereof; if this fail they give them a second Dose, then perhaps purge them with fifteen or twenty Grains of the Rosin of Jallop, afterwards sweat them with Venice-Treacle, Powder of Snake-root, or *Gascoin*'s Powder: And when these fail, *Conclamatum est.* 'Tis wonderful, he adds, what Influence the Air has over Mens Bodies, whereof I had myself sad Assurances; for tho' I was in a very close warm Room, where was a Fire constantly kept, yet there was not the least Alteration or Change, whereof I was not sensible when I was sick of the Gripes; and when a very ingenious Gentlewoman was visited with the same Distemper, I had the Opportunity of making very considerable Observations. I stood at the Window, and could view the Clouds arise; for there small fleeting Clouds will arise and be swiftly carry'd cross the whole Element; and as these Clouds arose and came nigher her Torments were increased, which were grievous as a labouring Woman's; there was not a Cloud but lamentably affected her, and that at a considerable Distance; but by her Shrieks it seem'd more or less according to the Bigness and Nearness of the Clouds. The Thunder, says Mr. *Clayton*, is attended often with fatal Circumstances here. I was with my Lord *Howard* of *Effingham*, the Governor, when they brought word that one Dr. *A.* was kill'd therewith after this Manner: He was smoaking a Pipe of Tabacco, and looking out of his Window, when he was struck dead, and immediately became

Frequent and terrible Thunder.

became so stiff that he did not fall, but stood leaning in the Window, with the Pipe in his Mouth, in the same Posture he was in when struck: And these Things are remarkable, that it generally breaks in at the Gable-End of the Houses, and often kills Persons in or near the Chimney's Range, darting most fiercely down the Funnel of the Chimney, more especially if there be a Fire (I speak here confusedly of Thunder and Lightning) for when they do any Mischief, the Crash and Lightning are at the same Instant, which must be from the Nearness of the Cloud. One time, when the Thunder split the Mast of a Boat at *James* Town, I saw it break from the Cloud, which it divided in two, and seem'd as if it had shot them immediately a Mile asunder to the Eye. It is dangerous when it thunders standing in a narrow Passage, where there is a thorough Wind, or in a Room betwixt two Windows, tho' several have been kill'd in the open Fields. 'Tis incredible to tell how it will strike large Oaks, shatter and shiver them, sometimes twisting round a Tree, as if it struck the Tree backwards and forwards. I had noted a fine spreading Oak in *James* Town Island; in the Morning I saw it fair and flourishing, in the Evening I observ'd all the Bark of the Body of the Tree, as if it had been artificially peel'd off, was orderly spread round the Tree in a Ring, whose Semi-diameter was four Yards, the Tree in the Center; all the Body of the Tree was shaken and split, but its Boughs had all their Bark on, few Leaves were fallen, and those on the Boughs as fresh as in the Morning, but gradually afterwards wither'd, as on a Tree that is fallen. I have seen several vast Oaks and other Timber Trees twisted, as if it had been a Virginia.

Virginia.

ſmall Willow that a Man had twiſted with his Hand; which I could ſuppoſe had been done by nothing but the Thunder. I have been told by ſeveral Planters, that thirty or forty Years ſince, when the Country was not ſo open, the Thunder was more fierce, and that ſometimes after violent Thunder and Rain the Roads would ſeem to have perfect Caſts of Brimſtone: And he ſeems to be of opinion, that the fierce and frequent Thunders they had formerly proceeded from the Air's being more ſtagnant when the Motion of the Winds was impeded by the Trees, before the Country was clear'd.

CHAP.

CHAP. II.

Of the Provinces and chief Towns of Virginia, *and of the Buildings of the* Indians.

HOW the Country was divided when the *Indians* had the Dominion of it does not appear, only the firſt Adventurers inform us, that there were a great many petty Monarchs in it who commanded on the ſeveral Rivers; and that the moſt potent frequently ſubdu'd his weaker Neighbours, and held them in Subjection during his Life, after which every Principality uſually return'd to the original Proprietor; but I ſhall be more particular on this Head in the Chapter aſſign'd for the Hiſtory of this Country.

Virginia. Provinces and chief Towns.

Virginia is at preſent divided into twenty-five Counties, (*viz.*) 1. *James County.* 2. *Henrico County.* 3. *Prince George.* 4. *Charles County.* 5. *Surrey.* 6. *Iſle of Wight.* 7. *Nanſamund.* 8. *Norfolk.* 9. *Princeſs Anne.* 10. *York County.* 11. *Warwick.* 12. *Elizabeth.* 13. *New Kent.* 14. *King William.* 15. *King and Queen.* 16. *Glouceſter.* 17. *Middleſex.* 18. *Eſſex.* 19. *Richmond.* 20. *Stafford.* 21. *Weſtmorland.* 22. *Lancaſter.* 23. *Northumberland.* 24. *Acomack*; and, 25. *Northampton.*

Virginia.

James County.

1. *James County* lies on both Sides of *James River*, and is bounded by *New-Kent* on the North, by *York County* on the East, by *Surrey* on the South, and *Henrico County* on the West, and contains five Parishes (*viz.*) 1. *James Town.* 2. *Williamsburg.* 3. *Wallingford*, all which lie on the North Side of *James River.* 4. *Merchants Hundred*; and 5. *Bruton*, on the South Side of the River.

James Town.

1*st*, *James Town*, the Capital of this County and of the whole Province, is situated in a Peninsula on the North Side of *James River*, about forty Miles from the Mouth of it, the River being at this Place about a Mile broad. There are not above three or fourscore Houses at present in it, and those most of them publick Houses, kept for the Entertainment of sea-faring People who resort hither; for it is not agreeable to the Humour or Business of the *Virginian* Planters to live in Towns. Every Man of Substance almost chuses to reside upon his Estate, and have his Farms and Plantations under his Eye; and when they have amass'd as much Wealth as satisfies them, they either remain in the Place they acquir'd it, or return to *England*, but seldom reside in the little Towns of *Virginia.* Another Reason which makes *James Town* now so inconsiderable is, the removing the Courts of Justice and the Seat of the Government to *Williamsburgh*: And lastly, *James Town* suffer'd very much in the Rebellion during the Reign of King *Charles* II. when it was almost entirely burnt down to the Ground. Before that Misfortune happen'd, 'tis said, there were several spacious Streets and handsome Buildings in *James Town*, and the Government seem'd to be set upon peopling and improving it, by obliging all Shipping to unload

load their Merchandize at this Place, but that Order was never obey'd. Few Towns are capable of being made ſtronger than *James Town*, as it is ſituated on a Peninſula, which, at high Water, is a perfect Iſland, and there is no approaching it but on one Side, which might eaſily be render'd inacceſſible; but the Fortifications I perceive are but mean. Virginia.

2*dly*, *Williamsburgh*, heretofore call'd *Middle Plantation*, is ſituated about ſeven Miles from *James Town*, further within Land, and this, tho' the Seat of the Government, and the Place where their Parliament or General Aſſembly meet, is but a very ſmall Place, conſiſting only of thirty or forty Houſes that are not contiguous. Governor *Nicholſon* did all that lay in his Power to increaſe the Buildings and enlarge the Town, in the Year 1689, particularly he built a Town-houſe, to which he gave the Name of *The Capitol*. A fine College alſo was erected here, and a good Revenue ſettled upon it; but this was unfortunately burnt down. There are ſome Redoubts and Batteries of Guns erected for the Defence of the Place, but of no great Conſequence; what the late Orders for the repairing and ſtrengthening our Fortifications in *America* may produce, we ſhall ſee in a little time. This County contains 108,362 Acres of Land. *Williamsburgh.*

I ſhall not pretend to give the Boundaries of the reſt of the Counties, only obſerve in what Part of the Province they lie, the Pariſhes and the Number of Acres contained in them.

2. *Henrico* County is ſituated the moſt Weſterly of all thoſe that lie on the South of *James River*, and contains the two Pariſhes of *Henrico* and *Briſtol*, in which are 148,787 Acres of Land. *Henrico County.*

3 and

Virginia.

3 and 4. *Prince George* and *Charles* Counties are ſituated over-againſt *Henrico* County, on the North Side of *James River*, in which are the three Pariſhes of *Martin Brandon*, *Wyanoke*, and *Weſtover*, containing 161,239 Acres of Land; and twenty Miles higher, above the Falls of *James River*, is the *Monacan* Town, where the *French* Refugees are ſettled.

Prince George and *Charles* Counties.

Surrey County.

5. *Surrey* County is ſituated over-againſt *James* County, on the South Side of *James River*, containing the two Pariſhes of *Southwark* and *Lyons Creek*, in which are 111,050 Acres of Land.

Iſle of Wight County.

6. *Iſle of Wight* County is ſituated South-Eaſt of *Surrey* County, on the South Side of *James River*, containing the two Pariſhes of *Warwick-Squeak* and *New-Port*, in which are 142,796 Acres of Land.

Nanſamund County.

7. *Nanſamund* County, which lies South of the *Iſle of Wight* County, containing the three Pariſhes of *Upper-Pariſh*, *Lower-Pariſh*, and *Chukatuck*, in which are 131,172 Acres of Land. In this County riſes the River of *Nanſamund*, which running to the North-Eaſt falls into *James River*, near *Bennet's Creek*.

Norfolk County.

8. *Norfolk* County lies South-Eaſt of *Nanſamund* County, extending to the Borders of *Carolina*, and contains only the Pariſh of *Elizabeth*, in which are 112,019 Acres of Land. In this County riſes the River *Elizabeth*, which running due North falls into *James River*, between the Eaſt and Weſt Bay.

Princeſs Anne County.

9. *Princeſs Anne* County lies North-Eaſt of *Norfolk*, having the Bay of *Cheſepeak* on the North, and the Ocean on the Eaſt, and contains only the Pariſh of *Lynhaven*, in which are 98,305 Acres of Land. Cape *Henry* is a Promontory

Promontory on the Nort-East Part of this County. Virginia.

10. *York* County, situate between *York* and *James* Rivers on the East of *James* County, in which are the three Parishes of *York*, *Hampton*, and *New-Pokoson*, and contains 60,767 Acres of Land. *York* County.

11. *Warwick* County lies contiguous to *York* County, and South-East of it between the same Rivers, in which are the two Parishes of *Denby* and *Mulberry Island*, containing 38,444 Acres of Land. In this County rises the River of *Pokoson*, which running to the Eastward discharges itself into the Mouth of *York* River. *Warwick* County.

12. *Elizabeth* County lies contiguous to *Warwick* County, and to the Eastward of it, having the Bay of *Chesepeak* on the North, and the Mouth of *James River* on the South. It hath but one Parish, call'd *Elizabeth*, in which was a City of the same Name, but it is of late Years dwindled to a Village. This County contains 29,000 Acres of Land. *Elizabeth* County.

13. *New-Kent* lies North of *James* County on the Southern Branch of *York River*, and contains the two Parishes of *Blissland* and *St. Peters*, in which are 171,314 Acres of Land, being one of the largest and most populous Counties in *Virginia*. In the West Part of this County are some Hills of glittering Sand, which the first Adventurers mistook for Gold, and loaded home a Ship with it, but to their great Mortification it prov'd but common Earth. *New-Kent*

14. *King William* County is contiguous to *New-Kent*, and lies to the Westward of it, the River *Pamunky*. (being the Southern Branch of *York River*) running through it. It contains only *King William* County.

Virginia.

only the Parish of *St. John's*, in which are 84,324 Acres of Land.

King and Queen County.

15. *King and Queen* County lies on the South of *King William* County, and is contiguous to it, and contains the two Parishes of *Straton Major* and *St. Stephen's*, in which are 131,716 Acres of Land. In this County rises the River *Chicohomony*, and running Eastward falls into *James River*, near *Bromfield's* Plantation.

Glouceſter County.

16. *Glouceſter* County is situated between the Mouth of *York River* and *Prankitank River*, having the Bay of *Cheſepeak* on the East, and contains the four Parishes of *Perſo*, *Abington*, *Ware*, and *Kingſton*, in which are 142,450 Acres of Land.

Middleſex County.

17. *Middleſex* County lies North of *Glouceſter*, having the River *Raphanock* on the North, and the River *Prankitank* on the South, containing only the Parish of *Chriſt-Church*, in which are 49,500 Acres of Land.

Eſſex County.

18. The County of *Eſſex* lies on the River *Raphanock*, North-West of *Middleſex*, containing the three Parishes of *South-Farnham*, *Sittingburn*, and *St. Mary's*, in which are 140,920 Acres of Land. Upon the Confines of this County and that of *Middleſex* there is a great Swamp or Bog almost sixty Miles in Length, call'd *Dragons Swamp*, cover'd with Bushes and Flags, in which harbour wild Beasts and Game in abundance.

Dragons Swamp.

Richmond and *Stafford* Counties.

19 and 20. *Richmond* and *Stafford* Counties lie North-West of *Eſſex*, upon the same River *Raphanock*, and contain the three Parishes of *North-Farnham*, *St. Paul's*, and *Overworton*.

21. *Weſt-*

21. *Weſtmorland* County lies Eaſtward of the laſt, between the two Rivers of *Raphanock* and *Patowmack*. Virginia. *Weſtmorland* County.

22. *Lancaſter* County lies on the North Shore of the River *Raphanock*, near the Mouth, being divided into two Parts by the River *Cartomain*, and contains the two Pariſhes of *Chriſt-Church* and *St. Mary White-Chapel*. *Lancaſter* County.

23. *Northumberland* County is bounded by the Mouth of *Patowmack River* on the North, and by the Bay of *Cheſepeak* on the Eaſt, containing the two Pariſhes of *Fairfield-Bawtry*, and *Wicomoco*. *Northumberland* County.

24. *Acomac* County lies in the Peninſula on the oppoſite Side of the Bay of *Cheſepeak*, having Part of *Maryland* on the North, the *Atlantick Ocean* on the Eaſt and South, and the Bay of *Cheſepeak* on the Weſt, in which is the Pariſh of *Acomac* only, but contains, however, 200,923 Acres of Land, being the largeſt County of *Virginia*, but not ſo well peopled as thoſe on the Weſt Side of the Bay. *Acomac* County.

25. *Northampton* County lies South of that of *Acomac*, and forms the South Part of the Peninſula on which the Promontory call'd Cape *Charles* is ſituated. This is a long narrow County, lying between the Ocean and the Bay of *Cheſepeak*, in which is but one Pariſh, call'd *Hungers*, containing 99,384 Acres of Land. *Northampton* County.

In all which Counties, it is computed there may be at this Day about an hundred thouſand Souls, beſides Servants and Slaves, which are above three times that Number. Numbers of People.

As to the Towns of the *Indians*, I don't find they had any thing that deſerved the Name of a Town even in their greateſt Proſperity, before the *Engliſh* came among them. They *Indian* Villages and Buildings.

Virginia. liv'd dispers'd in small Villages of ten or twelve Huts a-piece (scarce any of them exceeding thirty such Houses) either in the Woods or on the Banks of Rivers, where they had little Plantations of *Indian* Corn and Roots, scarce sufficient to supply their respective Families half the Year, subsisting the Remainder of it by Hunting, Fishing, and Fowling, and the Fruits of the Earth, which grow spontaneously in great Plenty there.

The Materials of their Houses were Poles cover'd with Bark or Matts; the Poles being let into the Ground in a circular Form were bent inwards, and made the Hutt of the Shape of a Bee-hive: The Hearth or Fire-place was in the Middle of it, about which they lay upon Matts, or the Skins of Beasts. The Palaces of their greatest Men were no better than ordinary Barns, in which were several Partitions made by Matts, and might therefore be call'd so many Rooms, in the furthest of which was placed their favourite Idol, and sometimes two or more, which they carry'd with them on every Enterprize, and whenever they removed. The Length of these Barns (or Palaces, as some call them) were from twelve to twenty-four Yards in Length, and usually half as broad as they were long. Their Furniture consisted of their Skins and Furrs, some earthen Pots and Pans; Gourds and Calabashes cut asunder serv'd them for Tubs, Pails, Cups, and Dishes.

The Country was then very thinly inhabited, these small Villages being usually several Miles asunder, as appears by the concurrent Relations of the first Adventurers, collected by *Hackluit* and *Purchase*.

Captain

Captain *Smith*, one of the firſt Adventurers, ſays, the Land is not populous within ſixty Miles of *James Town*. There are about ſeven thouſand People, but of Men fit for War ſcarce two thouſand: Seven or eight hundred are the moſt that have been ſeen together; *Purchaſe*, Vol. IV. 1697. So that there is little Reaſon to charge the *Engliſh* with deſtroying ſuch Numbers, as ſome have done either ignorantly or maliciouſly. The Middle of *America*, between the Tropicks, where the *Spaniards* fix'd themſelves, indeed was very populous, but towards the North and South there were few Inhabitants. Even at this Day thoſe Parts of *Florida* which have never been under the Subjection of any *Europeans*, and conſequently have not been deſtroy'd by them, live in the like little Villages, and are very thinly peopled. Virginia.

CHAP. III.

Of the Perſons and Habits of the Virginians, *their Genius and Temper, Arts, Manufactures, Food, Exerciſes, and Diverſions, Diſeaſes, and Remedies.*

Virginia.

Perſons of the *Virginians.*

AS to the Perſons of the *Virginians*, their Stature is much the ſame with the People of *Europe*. In ſome Provinces there are huge luſty Fellows like the *Germans*, whom ſome People are pleas'd to call a gigantick Race, and there are others as little as the *French*, but all in general well made, ſtrong and active. They are born tolerably white, but take a great deal of Pains to darken their Complexion by anointing themſelves with Greaſe, and lying in the Sun. They alſo paint their Faces, Breaſts, and Shoulders of various Colours, but generally red. Their Hair and Eyes are black, the Men cutting their's in ſeveral Forms; and Perſons of Condition have always a long Lock behind. The Women wear their Hair long, ſometimes looſe and flowing, and at others twiſted and adorn'd with Beads, Shells, and Feathers. The Men ſuffer no Hair on their Chins, or any Part of their Bodies. Their Features are good, eſpecially thoſe of the Women, their Limbs clean and ſtrait, and ſcarce ever any crooked or deform'd Perſons among them.

them. Their Noblemen and Chiefs wear a Coronet adorn'd with Feathers, and ſometimes a whole Fowl ſtuff'd and dry'd on their Heads, their Ornaments being Ear-rings of Copper, Chains of Shells, Feathers, and Beads about their Necks, and Bracelets of the ſame about their Arms. Virginia.

Their Cloathing is only a Piece of a Skin about their Waiſt that reaches down to their Knees; and thoſe of Condition have the Skin of a Deer or ſome other Beaſt for a Mantle, and another Piece of Skin ſerves them for Shoes or Buſkins. Habits.

Their Characters are given us variouſly by different Travellers; which, I preſume, proceeds from the various Circumſtances the *Indians* or our People were in when they were Friends with our People and entertain'd them hoſpitably; then they were all that was good, and when in a State of Hoſtility, no Character was thought bad enough for them; but I think they all agree, that the *Virginians* did not want Wit or natural Parts. Genius and Temper.

Mr. *Whitaker*, Chaplain to the Colony of *Virginia*, obſerves, that the *Indians* are neither ſo ignorant or ſo innocent as ſome ſuppoſe them, but are a very underſtanding Generation, quick of Apprehenſion, ſudden in Diſpatch, ſubtle in their Dealings, exquiſite in their Inventions, and induſtrious in their Labour: That the World has not better Markſmen with Bow and Arrow than the Natives, who kill Birds flying, Fiſhes ſwimming, and wild Beaſts running, and ſhoot their Arrows with ſuch prodigious Force, that one of them ſhot an *Engliſhman* quite through, and nail'd both his Arms to his Body with the ſame Arrow. And he ſaw a Boy

Virginia. Boy of twelve or thirteen Years of Age kill a Bird with an Arrow.

In the Character Captain *Smith* gives of them, he ſays, they are ſtrong, nimble, and hardy, and when they are at war, or engag'd in an Enterprize, they will lie all Night abroad in the hardeſt Winters under a Tree, making Fires about them.

That they are inconſtant, crafty, quick of Apprehenſion, and very ingenious, ſome bold, ſome timorous, but all of them cautious, circumſpect and ſavage: That they are ſoon mov'd to Anger, and ſo malicious that they ſeldom forget an Injury.

However, the ſame Captain *Smith* ackowledges the *Engliſh* were hoſpitably entertain'd when they landed firſt in *Virginia*, before the Natives had any Apprehenſion the *Engliſh* came to invade their Country, and uſurp the Dominion of it: And the Reaſon he gives them an ill Character in other Places ſeems to be, becauſe they would not tamely ſuffer the Yoke to be put about their Necks by Foreigners. But if we would judge rightly of theſe People, I think we ought to obſerve how they treated ours before any Injury was offer'd them. And it appears that in the firſt Voyage that was made thither by Captain *Philip Amidas* and Captain *Arthur Barlow*, in the Year 1584, they were here feaſted and careſs'd beyond their Expectations. The politeſt and moſt hoſpitable People of *Europe* could not have uſed them better. They relate, that on their coming to an Anchor near Cape *Hateras*, an *Indian* came on Board, to whom they gave ſome Wine and a Diſh of Meat; and that thereupon the *Indian* returning to his Boat, caught them as many Fiſh as it would hold and brought them.

That

That the next Day, the Brother of one of their Kings came to the Sea-side with forty or fifty Attendants, and setting himself down over-against the Ship, Mr. *Amidas* and several more of the *English* went on Shore with their Arms. Whereupon this Prince, without being terrify'd at their warlike Appearance, invited them to set down on the Matts his Servants had provided, and made a great many Signs to express his Joy at their Arrival: After which they traffick'd with the Natives for their Deer-skins, Furrs, and other Peltry, giving them Dishes, Kettles, Hatchets, Knives, and other Implements in Return for them. Virginia.

That afterwards, the Prince brought his Wife and several other Women on Board the Ship, where the *English* entertain'd them in the best Manner they could; and the Lady, in Return, invited them on Shore, and gave them Venison roast and boil'd, Fish, Melons, and other Fruits; and the Captain, who was one of the Company that was thus feasted by the Natives, and wrote this Relation, says, *they found the People most gentle, loving, and faithful, void of all Guile and Treachery.*

As to Arts and Sciences they understood but little. They knew no more of Letters than the rest of the *Americans*, but appear'd very tractable and capable of learning any thing. There were no Companies or Societies of Mechanicks or Artificers amongst them, but every Family did their own Business. They all understood how to build their Hutts, make their Cloaths, sow and plant their Grounds; and the greatest of them busied themselves in these Works: Their Princes were not exempted. King *Powhaton*, according to Captain *Smith*, made his own Robes, Shoes, Bows, Arrows, Arts and Sciences.

Virginia. Arrows, Pots, and Pans, as well as the meaneſt of his Subjects.

They did not know the Uſe of Iron, and the Copper they had only ſerv'd them for Ornaments. Their edg'd Tools were ſharp Stones, or Shells, ſet in Wood. They burnt down the Timber they uſed, hollow'd the Trunks of their great Trees with Fire, of which they made their Canoes, or Country Boats, all of a Piece, ſcraping them ſmooth with Stones or Shells, and ſome of theſe Boats were thirty Foot in Length.

They were infinitely ſurpriſed at the Effects of the Loadſtone; the Compaſs, and Mathematical Inſtruments, the Burning-Glaſs, the Perſpective-Guns, Clocks, and Fire-works amazed theſe People; they look'd upon them to be the Works of the Gods rather than Men, or at leaſt that the Men that made them muſt be taught by the Gods; which gave them an uncommon Veneration for the *Engliſh* when they arriv'd upon their Coaſts, and made them ready to liſten to whatever was propos'd.

The *Virginians* reckon'd their Years by Winters, and their Months by the Moon, and ſome ſay they reckon'd every Spring and Autumn a new Year, beginning it at either Equinox, which was the Occaſion that ſo many of their People were reckon'd upwards of an hundred when the *Engliſh* came amongſt them. They kept their Accounts with a notch'd Stick, and reckon'd from one to ten, and ſo to an hundred, as we do; but large Sums confounded them.

Food. Their uſual Food was Hommony, which is *Indian* Corn boil'd to a Pulp, and comes the neareſt butter'd Wheat of any thing I can compare it to: They eat alſo Veniſon, Fiſh, and

and Fowl, great Part of their Time being employ'd in hunting and taking them; for they had no tame Cattle or Fowls. They both broil and ſtew their Meat, and their Fiſh they dreſs with the Scales on, and without gutting them. They eat alſo Peas and Beans, and ſeveral other kinds of Pulſe and Roots, and among the reſt the Caſſavi Root, of which they make Bread, as in other Parts of *America*; 'tis ſaid they eat Snakes alſo and other Vermin with as great a Guſt as any other Fleſh. Virginia.

On rejoicing Days they ſing and dance in a Ring, taking Hands, as other *Americans* do, and are much delighted with Maſquerades, one of which Captain *Smith* gives a particular Relation of, being perform'd for his Diverſion when he was in the Court of King *Powhaton*. Diverſions

They carry'd him into a Field by a Wood-ſide, and having ſeated him and his Company on Mats by a Fire, thirty young Women iſſu'd out of the Woods perfectly naked, only ſome Leaves to hide what all the World conceal, their Bodies painted red, white and black, and all manner of Colours, and on their Heads every one a Pair of Stags Horns, having Bows and Arrows in their Hands and Quivers at their Backs. Thus accoutred, theſe Ladies took Hands, danced and ſung about the Fire and the Strangers, and having continued this Exerciſe for an Hour, they retir'd into the Woods, where they invited the Captain and his Friends to as elegant a Feaſt of Fiſh, Fleſh, Fowl, and Fruits, as *Indians* were capable of making, ſome of the Nymphs ſinging and dancing, while others attended them; and, if we may credit this Traveller, making Love to him with ſo much Fondneſs, that he was perfectly ſurfeited with it.

Virginia.

Diſeaſes and Remedies.

The Natives are generally healthful and long-liv'd, ſubject to but few Diſeaſes, and thoſe chiefly proceeding from Colds, which they endeavour to get off by Sweating; but they are ſometimes ſwept away by epidemical Diſtempers, occaſion'd by unkindly Seaſons; and the Small-pox proves as fatal to them as the Plague. As to the *Europeans* that live amongſt them, Fevers and Agues, the Gripes, and Fluxes are the moſt common Diſtempers here, as in the reſt of the *Britiſh* Plantations, the Occaſion whereof, and the Methods of Cure, Sir *Hans Sloan*, who reſided ſome time in *Jamaica*, has given very particular Accounts of, and from him I ſhall take the Liberty to communicate them to my Readers when I come to the Deſcription of that Iſland, and only obſerve here, that the Bark is an infallible Remedy for their Fevers and Agues.

CHAP.

CHAP. IV.

Of the Virginian *Animals.*

THE Deſcription Mr. *Clayton* has given us of theſe is ſo full that little can be added to it, and therefore I ſhall give it the Reader in his own Words, *viz.* Virginia. Animals.

There were neither Horſes, Cows, Sheep, or Swine in all the Country before the Coming of the *Engliſh*; but now there is good ſtore of Horſes, tho' they are very negligent and careleſs about the Breed. It is true there is a Law, that no Horſe ſhall be kept ſtoned under a certain Size, but it is not put in execution. Such as they are there is good ſtore, and as cheap or cheaper than in *England*, worth about five Pounds a-piece. They never ſhoe them, or ſtable them in general; ſome few Gentlemen may be ſomething more curious, but it is very rare; yet they ride pretty ſharply, *a Planter's Pace* is a Proverb, which is a good hand Gallop. The *Indians* have not yet learned to ride, only the King of *Pamonkie* had got three or four Horſes for his own Saddle, and an Attendant, which I think ſhould in no wiſe be indulged; for I look on the allowing them Horſes much more dangerous than even Guns and Powder. Horſes.

Wild Bulls and Cows there are now in the uninhabited Parts, but ſuch only as have been bred from ſome that have ſtray'd and become wild, and have propagated their Kind, and Kine.

Virginia.

are difficult to be ſhot, having a great Acuteneſs of Smelling. The common Rate of a Cow or Calf is fifty Shillings un-ſight un-ſeen; be ſhe big or little they are never very curious to examine that Point.

Sheep. Their Sheep are of a midling Size, pretty fine fleec'd in general, and moſt Perſons begin to keep Flocks, which hitherto has not been much regarded becauſe of the Wolves that deſtroy them; ſo that a Piece of Mutton is a finer Treat than either Veniſon, Wild-gooſe, Duck, Widgeon, or Teal.

Elks. Elks: I have heard of them beyond the Inhabitants, and that there was one preſented to Sir *William Berkly*, which he kept ſome time; but they are not common.

Deer. There are abundance of brave red Deer; ſo that a good Woodſman, as they call them, will keep his Houſe with Veniſon. The *Indians* make artificial Sorts of Heads of Boughs of Trees, which they conſecrate to their Gods, and theſe they put on to deceive the Deer when they go a Shooting or Hunting, as they call it, and by mimicking the Feeding of the Deer, they by Degrees get within Shot.

Hogs. Swine they have now in great Abundance. Shoats, or Porkrels, are their general Food, and I believe as good as any *Weſtphalia*, certainly far exceeding our *Engliſh*.

Raccoons. Raccoon: I take it to be a Species of a Monkey, ſomething leſs than a Fox, grey hair'd, its Feet form'd like a Hand, and the Face too has likewiſe the Reſemblance of a Monkey's, beſides, being kept tame, are very apiſh. They are very prejudicial to their Poultry, as I remember.

An

An Opoſſum: as big, and ſomething ſhap'd like our Badgers, but of a lighter dun Colour, with a long Tail ſomething like a Rat, but as thick as a Man's Thumb. The Skin of the Females Belly is very large, and folded ſo as to meet like a Purſe, wherein they ſecure their Young whilſt little and tender, which will as naturally run thither as Chickens to a Hen, and in theſe falſe Bellies they will carry their Young. Theſe alſo feed on and devour Corn. Virginia. Opoſſum.

Hares: Many will have them to be a Hedge-Rabbet, but I know not what they mean thereby. I take them to be a perfect Species of Hares, becauſe I have ſeen Leverets there with the white Spot in the Head, which the old ones have not; ſo it is in *England*, and the Down is perfectly of the Colour of our Hares; they ſit as our Hares do, and make no Holes and Burrows in the Earth; true, they are but about the Bigneſs of an *Engliſh* Rabbet, and run no faſter; they generally take into ſome hollow Tree within a little Space, which then the People catch by gathering the wither'd Leaves, and ſetting them on Fire within the Hollow of the Tree, and ſmoaking them ſo till they fall down. Sometimes they take long Briars and twiſt them in the Down and Skin, and ſo pull them forth. Hares.

Their Squirrels are of three Sorts, the firſt is the great Fox-Squirrel, much larger than the *Engliſh*, and grey almoſt as a common Rabbet. Theſe are very common. I have eaten of them at the beſt Gentlemens Tables, and they are as good as a Rabbet. The ſecond is the Flying-Squirrel, of a lighter dun Colour, and much leſs than the *Engliſh* Squirrel. The Skin on either Side the Belly extended is very large Squirrels.

Virginia. large betwixt the Fore-leg and Hind-leg, which helps them much in their ſkipping from one Bough to another, that they will leap farther than the Fox-Squirrel, tho' much leſs; yet this is rather Skipping than Flying, tho' the Diſtinction be well enough. The third is the Ground-Squirrel. I never ſaw any of this Sort, only I have been told of them, and have had them deſcrib'd to me to be little bigger than a Mouſe, finely ſpotted like a young Fawn; by which I further apprehend, they are an abſolute ſort of Dor-Mouſe, only different in Colour.

Muſk-Rats Muſk-Rats: In all things ſhap'd like our Water-Rats, only ſomething larger, and is an abſolute Species of Water-Rats, only having a curious muſky Scent. I kept one for a certain Time in a wooden Cheſt: TwoDays before it dy'd it was extraordinary odoriferous, and ſcented the Room very much, but the Day that it dy'd and a Day after the Scent was very ſmall; yet afterwards the Skin was very frágrant; the Stones alſo ſmelt very well. They build Houſes as Beavers do in the Marſhes and Swamps (as they call them) by the Water-ſides, with two or three Ways into them, and they are finely daub'd within. I pull'd one in Pieces purpoſely to ſee the Contrivance; there were three different Lodging-rooms, very neat, one higher than another, as I conceive purpoſely made for Retirement when the Water riſes higher than ordinary: They are conſiderably large, having much Traſh and Lumber to make their Houſes withal. I ſuppoſe they live moſtly on Fiſh.

Batts. Batts: As I remember, at leaſt two Sorts, one a large ſort with long Ears, and particularly long ſtragling Hairs. The other much like the

the *Engliſh*, ſomething larger I think; very common. Virginia.

I never heard of any Lions; they told me of a Creature kill'd whilſt I was there in *Glouceſter* County, which I conceiv'd to be a ſort of Pard, or Tyger. Lions. Tygers.

Bears: There are but few in the inhabited Part of *Virginia*. Towards *Carolina* there are many more. There was a ſmall Bear kill'd within three Miles of *James* City, the Year that I left the Country; but it was ſuppos'd to have ſtray'd and ſwam over *James River*. They are not very fierce. Their Fleſh is commended for a very rich ſort of Pork; but the lying Side of the Bear, as I remember, is but half the Value of the other, Weight for Weight. Bears.

There are ſeveral Sorts of wild Cats, and Poll-Cats. WildCats.

Beavers build their Houſes in like manner as the Muſk-Rats do, only much larger, and with Pieces of Timber make Dams over Rivers, as I ſuppoſe either to preſerve their Furs dry in their Paſſage over the Rivers, or elſe to catch Fiſh by ſtanding to watch them thereon, and jumping upon them on a ſudden. They are very ſubtle Creatures, and if half the Stories be true that I have been told, they have a very orderly Government among them. In their Works each knows his proper Work and Station, and the Overſeers beat thoſe young ones that loiter in their Buſineſs; and will make them cry and work ſtoutly. *Theſe will be further deſcrib'd in* New-England. Beavers.

Of Wolves there are great ſtore; you may hear a Company hunting in an Evening, and yelping like a Pack of Beagles; but they are very cowardly, and dare ſcarce venture on Wolves.

any

Virginia. any thing that faces them; yet if hungry, will pull down a good large Sheep that flies from them. I never heard that any of them adventur'd to set on Man or Child.

Foxes. Foxes: They are very much like ours, only their Furr is much more grisled or grey; neither do I remember ever to have seen any Fox-holes; but of this I am not positive.

Dogs. Every House keeps three or four mungrel Dogs to destroy Vermine, such as Wolves, Foxes, Raccoons, Opossums, *&c.* But they never hunt with Hounds, I suppose because there are so many Branches of Rivers that they cannot follow them. Neither do they keep Greyhounds, because they say, that they are subject to break their Necks by running against Trees, and any Cur will serve to run their Hares into a hollow Tree, where, after the aforesaid Manner, they catch them.

Tortoises. They have great store both of Land and Water-Tortoises, but they are very small I think. I never saw any in that Country to exceed a Foot in Length. There is also another sort of Land-Tortoise, different from the common Sort, with a higher-ridg'd Back, and speckled with red sort of Spots.

Fregs. Frogs they have of several Sorts; one of a prodigious Largeness, eight or ten times as big as any in *England*, and it makes a strange Noise, something like the Bellowing of a Bull, or betwixt that and the hollow sounding Noise that the *English* Bittern makes.

Toads. Another very common Sort which they call Toads, because black; but I think differs nothing from our black Frog. They have Toads also, like ours in *England*, and another small sort of Frog, which makes a Noise like Pack-horse Bells all the Spring long. Another little

little green Frog that will leap prodigiously, which they therefore call the Flying-Frog. There is still heard in the Woods a shrill sort of Noise, much like that which our Shrew-Mouse makes, but much sharper. I could never learn the Certainty what it was that made this Noise. It is generally in a Tree, and some have asserted to me that it was made by the green Frog, yet I scarcely believe it. Mr. *Banister* assur'd me, that it was made by a sort of scarabeus Beetle, that is, I think, full as big as the Humming-Bird; but neither do I believe that, and for this Reason, because I never saw that Beetle so low as the *Salts*, but always as high up in the Country as the *Freshes*, and that Noise is frequent all over the Country. Virginia.

Lizards are grey and very common here; the Snakes feed much on them, for I have taken several of them out of the Bellies of Snakes. Lizards.

Snakes: about seven several Sorts. The Rattle-Snake, so call'd from certain Rattles at the End of the Tail. These Rattles seem like so many perished Joints, being a dry Husk over certain Joints; and the common Opinion is, that there are as many Rattles or Joints as the Snake is Years old. I kill'd four or five, and they had each eleven, twelve, or thirteen Joints each; but the young ones have no Rattles of a Year or two old, but they may be known notwithstanding, being very regularly diced or chequer'd black and grey on the Backs. The old ones shake and shiver these Rattles with wonderful Nimbleness when they are any ways disturb'd. Their Bite is very deadly, yet not always of the same Force, but more or less mortal according as the Snake is in Force or Vigour, and therefore in *June* or Snakes. Rattle-Snake.

Virginia. *July* much worſe, and more mortal than in *March* and *April*. This Snake is a very majeſtick ſort of Creature, and will ſcarce meddle with any thing unleſs provok'd, but if any thing offend it, it makes directly at them. I was told a pleaſant Story of an old Gentleman, Colonel *Cleyborn*, as I remember, was his Name, the ſame that ſent the Rattle-Snakes to the *Royal Society* ſome Years ſince: He had an odd Fancy of keeping ſome of theſe Snakes always in Barrels in the Houſe; and one time an *Indian* pretending to charm them ſo as to take them by the Neck in his Hand without biting of him, the old Gentleman cauſed a Rattle-Snake to be brought forth; the *Indian* began his Charm with a little Wand, whiſking it round and round the Rattle-Snake's Head, bringing it by degrees nigher and nigher, and at length flung the Switch away, and whiſked his Hand about in like manner, bringing his Hand ſtill nigher and nigher by taking leſs Circles, when the old Gentleman immediately hit the Snake with his Crutch, and the Snake ſnap'd the *Indian* by the Hand, and bit him very ſharply betwixt the Fingers, which put his Charm to an End, and he roar'd out, but ſtretch'd his Arm out as high as he could, calling for a String, wherewith he bound his Arm as hard as poſſibly he could, and clap'd a hot burning Coal thereon and ſinged it ſtoutly, whereby he was cur'd, but look'd pale a long while after. And I believe this truly one of the beſt Ways in the World of curing the Bite either of a Viper or mad Dog. I was with the Honourable 'Squire *Boyle* when he made certain Experiments of curing the Bite of Vipers with certain *Eaſt-India* Snake-ſtones, that were ſent him by King *James* the Second,

the

the Queen, and ſome of the Nobility, purpoſely to have him try their Virtue and Efficacy: For that End he got ſome briſk Vipers, and made them bite the Thighs of certain Pullets, and the Breaſts of others. He apply'd nothing to one of the Pullets, and it dy'd within three Minutes and a half, as I remember, but I think they all recover'd to which he apply'd the Snake-ſtones, tho' they turn'd wonderful pale, their Combs, *&c.* immediately, and they became extreme ſick, and purg'd within half an Hour, and the next Morning all their Fleſh was turn'd green to a Wonder; nevertheleſs they recover'd by degrees. The Manner of the Application was only by laying on the Stone, and by two croſs bits of a very ſticking Diaculum Plaiſter, binding it on, which he let not lie on paſt an Hour or two, but I think not ſo long, then took the Stone off and put it into Milk for ſome time; ſome Stones were of much ſtronger Virtue than others. I propos'd a Piece of unquench'd Lime-ſtone to be apply'd, to ſee whether it might not prove as powerful, but know not whether ever it was try'd. But here one telling Mr. *Boyle* the Story of this *Indian*, he approv'd the Method of Cure, and ſaid, an actual Cautery was the moſt certain Cure. The Poiſon both of a Viper and mad Dog (as I conceive) kill by thickning of the Blood, after the manner that Runnet congeals Milk when they make Cheeſe. Vipers, and all the viperous Brood, as Rattle-Snakes, *&c.* that are deadly, have, I believe, their poiſonous Teeth fiſtulous, for ſo I have obſerv'd the Vipers Teeth are, and the Rattle Snakes very remarkable, and therefore they kill ſo very ſpeedily by injecting the Poiſon through theſe Virginia.

Virginia. fiſtulous Teeth into the very Maſs of Blood; but the Bite of mad Dogs is oft of long Continuance before it get into and corrupt the Maſs of Blood, for that it ſticks only to the Out-ſides of the Teeth, and therefore when they bite through any Thickneſs of Cloaths, it rarely proves mortal, the Cloaths wiping the Poiſon off before it comes to the Fleſh.

Colonel *Spencer*, the Secretary of State in *Virginia*, a very ingenious Gentleman, told me, that his Servant brought him word once that a Sow having farrow'd, a Rattle-Snake was got into the Den and had kill'd the Pigs. The Colonel went to ſee the Snake, which they ſaid was ſtill coyl'd in the Den; there follow'd them two or three mungrel Curs, and they ſet one of the Dogs at the Snake, which was too quick for the Dog and ſnapt him by the Noſe; whereupon he ſet a howling, and run immediately into the adjacent River and dy'd very ſhortly after. Another of the Dogs upon the like Attempt was bit by the Snake alſo, and fell a howling and frothing and tumbling, but he not dying ſo ſoon as the other Dog did, they fetch'd ſome of the Herb which they call Dittany, as having a great traditionary Virtue for the Cure of Poiſons. They pounded it, and adding a little Water expreſſed the Juice, and gave the Dog frequently thereof, nevertheleſs he died within a Day or two. The Howlings of the Dogs he ſuppos'd gave Notice to the Sow, and made her come furiouſly briſtling, and run immediately into her Den, but being likewiſe bit by the Snake, ſhe ſet up a miſerable Squeak, and ran alſo into the River and there dy'd.

A Gen-

A Gentlewoman, who was a notable female Doctreſs, told me, that a Neighbour having been bit by a Rattle-Snake, ſwell'd exceſſively. Some Days afterwards ſhe was ſent for, who found him ſwell'd beyond what ſhe thought it had been poſſible for the Skin to contain, and very thirſty. She gave him oriental Bezoar, ſhav'd with a ſtrong Decoction of the aforeſaid Dittany, whereby ſhe recover'd the Perſon. To the beſt of my Remembrance it was he that told me. Aſking him afterwards what he felt when the Snake firſt bit him, he ſaid it ſeem'd as if a Flaſh of Fire had run through his Reins. Virginia.

Beſides the Rattle-Snake, there is the Blowing-Snake, an abſolute Species of a Viper, but larger than any that I have ſeen in *Europe*. It is ſo call'd becauſe it ſeems to blow and ſpread its Head, and ſwell very much before it bites, which is very deadly. It is remarkable there is none of their Snakes which make any of that hiſſing Noiſe that ours in *England* make, but only ſhoot out their Tongues, ſhaking them as ours do, without any Noiſe at all. This is a ſhort thick ſort of Snake. The Blowing-Snake.

There is another ſort of deadly Snake, call'd the Red-Snake. I once narrowly eſcap'd treading on the Back of one of them. They are of an ugly dark brown Colour, inclining to red; their Bellies are of a more duſky white, with a large Streak of Vermillion red on either Side. This too is of the Viper Kind, but is not ſo ſhort, and its Tail is more taper and ſmall. The Red-Snake.

The Horn-Snake is, as they ſay, another ſort of deadly Snake. I never ſaw any of them unleſs once, ſhortly after my Arrival in that Country. I could not ſee the Horn, which, they The Horn-Snake.

Virginia. they say, it has in its Front, wherewith it strikes, and if it wounds is as deadly as the Rattle-Snakes's Bite. This, I think, may not improperly be refer'd to the Dart-Snakes.

The Black Snake. The Black-Snake I think is the largest of all others, but I am sure the most common. I have kill'd several of them full six Foot long. Their Bite is not deem'd mortal, but it swells and turns to a running Sore; they feed upon Lizards, Mice, Rats, Frogs, and Toads, which I have taken out of their Bellies. I was once a simpling in the Woods on a fair Sun-shine Day, when I saw a Snake crawling on a Tree that was fallen, and licking with its forked Tongue as it mov'd. I stood still to observe it, and saw it lick up small Insects and Flies with wonderful Nimbleness, catching them betwixt the Forks of its Tongue.

The Corn-Snake. The Corn-Snake is most like the Rattle-Snake of all others in Colour, but the Chequers are not so regular, neither has it any Rattles. They are most frequent in the Corn Fields, and thence I suppose so call'd. The Bite is not so venomous as the Black-Snake's.

The Water-Snake. The Water-Snake is a small Snake. I never saw any of them above a Yard long, tho' I have seen sometimes forty or fifty at once. They are of an ugly dark blackish Colour. They say they are the least venomous of any.

Sir *Hans Sloan*'s Remarks on Snakes. To this Account of Mr. *Clayton*'s, if I add Sir *Hans Sloan*'s Remarks on the same Animals, and the Instances he produces of the Effects their Bite has upon other Creatures, I presume it will not be unacceptable.

The various Relations, says that Gentleman, not only of curious and credible Authors who have given us Accounts of *Virginia*, *Carolina*, and

and the neighbouring Countries, but alſo the Teſtimonies of ſeveral Men of Integrity by word of Mouth concerning what they call Charms, Enchantments, or Faſcinations by Snakes, have often ſeem'd to me greatly ſurpriſing, without my being able to ſatisfy myſelf of the true Cauſe of ſuch Appearances. Virginia.

Theſe Opinions are the greateſt Support of a common Notion, that ſeveral chronical waſting Diſeaſes, and ſuch Diſorders of the Nerves as are not eaſily accounted for, not only in Men but in Cattle, are believ'd to be the Effects of an evil Eye, of old malicious Women, *&c.* thought to be Witches and Sorcerers, or aſſiſted by the Devil.

In particular, as to Rattle-Snakes, they all agree in their Relations, that thoſe Snakes keeping their Eyes fix'd on any ſmall Animal, as a Squirrel, Bird, or ſuch like, tho' ſitting upon the Branch of a Tree of a conſiderable Height, ſhall, by ſuch ſtedfaſt or earneſt Looking, make or cauſe it to fall dead into their Mouths. This is a thing ſo well atteſted, that they think there is no Reaſon to queſtion their Belief of it.

Mr. *Read*, an eminent Merchant in the City of *London*, had a Rattle-Snake ſent him alive in a Box with ſome Gravel from *Virginia*, which he did me the Favour to give me. It had liv'd three Months before, without any Suſtenance, and had in that Time parted with its outer Coat, or *Exuviæ*, which was found amongſt the Gravel. Mr. *Ranby*, a very ingenious Surgeon and Anatomiſt, undertook the lodging it; and Captain *Hall*, a very underſtanding and obſervant Perſon, who had liv'd many Years in that Country in great Repute, ventur'd to take the Snake out of the Box,

Virginia. Box, notwithſtanding that the Poiſon from the Bite thereof is almoſt preſent Death; for he gave us an Inſtance of a Perſon bitten, who was found dead at the Return of a Meſſenger going to the next Houſe to fetch a Remedy or Antidote, tho' he was not gone above half an Hour. Nay, ſo certain are the mortal Effects of this Poiſon, that ſometimes the Waiting till an Iron can be heated in order to burn the Wound, is ſaid to have proved fatal. This Gentleman told me, he thought the ſecureſt Way was immediately to cut out the Part where the Wound was made; for he had ſeen ſeveral who carry'd theſe hollow Scars about them, as Marks of the narrow Eſcape they had had, and never felt any Inconvenience afterwards.

Tho' Providence hath produc'd a Creature ſo terrible to other Animals, yet it ſeems to have provided it with the Rattle at its Tail, that the Noiſe thereof might give Warning to them to get out of its Way.

I deſir'd an Experiment ſhould be try'd before ſeveral Phyſicians, which was accordingly done in the Garden belonging to their College in *London*. The Captain, by keeping the Head faſt with a forked Stick, and making a Nooſe, which he put about the Tail of the Snake, ty'd it faſt to the End of another Stick, wherewith he took him out of the Box and laid him upon the Graſs-plat; then a Dog being made to tread upon him, he bit the Dog, who thereupon howled very bitterly, and went away ſome few Yards diſtant from the Snake, but in about one Minute of Time he grew paralytick in the hinder Legs, after the manner of Dogs who have the *Aorta Deſcendens* ty'd. He dy'd in leſs than three Minutes Time, as is related by Mr. *Ranby* in an Account

count of this Experiment in *Philoſ. Tranſ.* N°. 401. p. 377. and by Captain *Hall*, N°. 399, p. 309. Virginia

In my Opinion, the whole Myſtery of their enchanting or charming any Creature is chiefly this, that when ſuch Animals as are their proper Prey, namely, ſmall Quadrupedes, or Birds, *&c.* are ſurpris'd by them, they bite them, and the Poiſon allows them time to run a ſmall Way, as our Dog did, or perhaps a Bird to fly up into the next Tree, where the Snakes watch them with great Earneſtneſs till they fall down, or are perfectly dead, when having lick'd them over with their Spawl or Spittle, they ſwallow them down, as the following Accounts relate.

Colonel *Beverley*'s Account of the Rattle-Snake.

Some People in *England* (ſays Colonel *Beverley*, in his Hiſtory of *Virginia*, Edit. 2. p. 260. *Lond.* 1722. 8*vo.*) are ſtartled at the very Name of the Rattle-Snake, and fanſy every Corner of that Province ſo much peſter'd with them that a Man goes in conſtant Danger of his Life that walks abroad in the Woods; but this is as groſs a Miſtake as moſt of the other ill Reports of this Country; for in the firſt place, this Snake is very rarely ſeen, and when that happens it never does the leaſt Miſchief, unleſs you offer to diſturb it, and thereby provoke it to bite in its own Defence: But it never fails to give you fair Warning by making a Noiſe with its Rattle, which may be heard at a convenient Diſtance. For my own part, I have travell'd the Country as much as any Man in it of my Age by Night and by Day, above the Inhabitants as well as among them, and yet before the firſt Impreſſion of this Book I had never ſeen a Rattle-Snake alive and at liberty in all my Life. I had ſeen

Virginia. them indeed after they had been kill'd or pent up in Boxes to be ſent to *England*. The Bite of this Viper, without ſome immediate Application, is certainly Death; but Remedies are ſo well known that none of their Servants are ignorant of them. I never knew any kill'd by theſe or any other of their Snakes, altho' I had a general Knowledge all over the Country, and had been in every Part of it. They have ſeveral other Snakes which are ſeen more frequently, and have very little or no Hurt in them, *viz.* ſuch as they call Black-Snakes, Water-Snakes, and Corn-Snakes. The black Viper-Snake, and the Copper-belly'd-Snake, are ſaid to be as venomous as the Rattle-Snake, but they are as ſeldom ſeen. Theſe three poiſonous Snakes bring forth their Young alive, whereas the other three ſorts lay Eggs, which are hatch'd afterwards, and that is the Diſtinction they make, eſteeming only thoſe to be venomous which are viviparous. They have likewiſe the Horn-Snake, ſo call'd from a ſharp Horn it carries in its Tail, with which it aſſaults any thing that offends it with that Force, that, as it is ſaid, it will ſtrike its Tail into the butt End of a Muſket, from whence it is not able to diſengage itſelf.

All ſorts of Snakes will charm both Birds and Squirrels; and the *Indians* pretend to charm them (the Snakes.) Several Perſons have ſeen Squirrels run down a Tree directly into a Snake's Mouth. They have likewiſe ſeen Birds fluttering up and down, and chattering at theſe Snakes till at laſt they have drop'd down juſt before them.

In the End of *May*, 1715, ſtopping at an Orchard by the Road-ſide to get ſome Cherries, being three of us in Company, we were entertain'd

tain'd with the whole Proceſs of a Charm be- Virginia.
tween a Rattle-Snake and a Hare, the Hare being better than half grown. It happen'd thus: One of the Company, in his ſearch for the beſt Cherries, eſpy'd the Hare ſitting, and altho' he went cloſe by her, ſhe did not move, till he (not ſuſpecting the Occaſion of her Gentleneſs) gave her a Laſh with his Whip; this made her run about ten Foot, and there ſit down again. The Gentleman not finding the Cherries ripe, immediately return'd the ſame Way, and near the Place where he ſtruck the Hare he eſpy'd a Rattle-Snake. Still not ſuſpecting the Charm, he goes back about twenty Yards to a Hedge to get a Stick to kill the Snake, and at his Return found the Snake remov'd, and coil'd in the ſame Place from whence he had mov'd the Hare. This put him into immediate Thoughts of looking for the Hare again, and ſoon eſpy'd her about ten Foot off the Snake, in the ſame Place to which ſhe had ſtarted when he whip'd her. She was now lying down, but would ſometimes raiſe herſelf on her Fore-feet, ſtruggling as it were for Life, or to get away, but could never raiſe her hinder Parts from the Ground, and then would fall flat on her Side again, panting vehemently. In this Condition the Hare and Snake were when he call'd me, and tho' we all three came up within fifteen Foot of the Snake, to have a full View of the whole, he took no Notice at all of us, nor ſo much as gave a Glance towards us. There we ſtood, at leaſt half an Hour, the Snake not altering a Jot, but the Hare often ſtruggling and falling on its Side again, till at laſt the Hare lay ſtill, as dead, for ſome Time; then the Snake moved out of his Coil, and ſlid gently

Virginia.

and ſmoothly on towards the Hare, his Colours at that Inſtant being ten times more glorious and ſhining than at other Times; as the Snake mov'd along, the Hare happen'd to fetch another Struggle, upon which the Snake made a Stop, lying at his Length till the Hare had lain quiet again for a ſhort Space, and then he advanc'd again till he came up to the hinder Parts of the Hare, which in all this Operation had been towards the Snake; there he made a Survey all over the Hare, raiſing Part of his Body above it, then turn'd off and went to the Head and Noſe of the Hare; after that to the Ears, took the Ears in his Mouth, one after the other, working each apart in his Mouth, as a Man does a Wafer to moiſten it; then return'd to the Noſe again, and took the Face into his Mouth, ſtraining and gathering his Lips ſometimes by one Side of his Mouth, ſometimes by the other. At the Shoulders he was a long time puzzled, often hauling and ſtretching the Hare out at length, and ſtraining forward firſt one ſide of his Mouth, then the other, till at laſt he got the whole Body into his Throat; then we went to him, and taking the Twiſt-band off from my Hat, I made a Nooſe and put it about his Neck: This made him at length very furious, but we having ſecur'd him, put him into one End of a Wallot and carry'd him on Horſeback five Miles to Mr. *John Baylor*'s Houſe, where we lodg'd that Night, with a Deſign to have ſent him to Dr. *Cock* at *Williamsburgh*, but Mr. *Baylor* was ſo careful of his Slaves, that he would not let him be put into his Boat for fear he ſhould get looſe and miſchief them; therefore the next Morning we kill'd him, and took the Hare out of his Belly. The Head

Head of the Hare began to be digeſted, and the Hair falling off, having lain about eighteen Hours in the Snake's Belly. Virginia.

I thought this Account of ſuch a Curioſity would be acceptable, and the rather becauſe, tho' I live in a Country where ſuch Things are ſaid frequently to happen, yet I never could have any ſatisfactory Account of a Charm, tho' I have met with ſeveral Perſons who have pretended to have ſeen them. Some alſo pretend that thoſe ſort of Snakes influence Children, and even Men and Women by their Charms. But this that I have related of my own View, I aver (for the Satisfaction of the Learned) to be punctually true, without enlarging or wavering in any Reſpect, upon the Faith of a Chriſtian.

In my Youth I was a Bear-hunting in the Woods above the Inhabitants, and having ſtraggled from my Companions, I was entertain'd at my Return with the Relation of a pleaſant Rencounter between a Dog and a Rattle-Snake about a Squirrel. The Snake had got the Head and Shoulders of the Squirrel into his Mouth, which being ſomething too large for his Throat, it took him up ſome Time to moiſten the Furr of the Squirrel with his Spawl to make it ſlip down. The Dog took this Advantage, ſeiz'd the hinder Parts of the Squirrel, and tugg'd with all his Might. The Snake on the other ſide would not let go his Hold for a long time, till at laſt fearing he might be bruis'd by the Dog's running away with him, he gave up his Prey to the Dog. The Dog eat the Squirrel and felt no Harm.

Another Curioſity concerning this Viper, which I never met with in Print, I will alſo relate from my own Obſervation.

Some

Virginia. Some time after my Obſervation of the Charm, my Waiting-boy being ſent abroad on an Errand, alſo took upon himſelf to bring home a Rattle-Snake in a Nooſe. I cut off the Head of this Snake, leaving about an Inch of the Neck with it. This I laid upon the Head of a Tobacco Hogſhead (one *Stephen Lankford*, a Carpenter, now alive, being with me.) Now you muſt note, that theſe Snakes have but two Teeth, by which they convey their Poiſon, and they are placed in the upper Jaw, pretty forward in the Mouth, one on each Side. Theſe Teeth are hollow and crooked, like a Cock's Spur; they are alſo looſe or ſpringing in the Mouth, and not faſten'd in the Jaw Bone, as all the other Teeth are; the Hollow has a Vent alſo through by a ſmall Hole, a little below the Point of the Teeth. Theſe two Teeth are kept lying down along the Jaw, or ſhut like a Spring-Knife, and don't ſhrink up, as the Talons of a Cat or Panther. They have alſo over them a looſe thin Film or Skin of a Fleſh Colour, which riſes over them when they are rais'd; which I take to be only at the Will of the Snake to do Injury. This Skin does not break by the Riſing of the Tooth only, but keeps whole till the Bite is given, and then is pierc'd by the Tooth, by which the Poiſon is let out. The Head being laid upon the Hogſhead, I took two little Twigs, or Splinters of Sticks, and having turn'd the Head upon its Crown, open'd the Mouth, and lifted up the Fang or ſpringing Tooth on one Side ſeveral times; in doing of which I at laſt broke the Skin: The Head gave a ſudden Champ with its Mouth breaking from my Sticks, in which I obſerv'd that the Poiſon ran down in a Lump like Oil round the Root of the

the Tooth; then I turn'd the other Side of the Head, and resolv'd to be more careful to keep the Mouth open on the like Occasion, and observe more narrowly the Consequence; for it is to be observ'd, that tho' the Heads of Snakes, Terrapins (a sort of Tortoise) and such like Vermine be cut off, yet the Body will not die in a long time after; the general Saying is, till the Sun sets. After opening the Mouth on the other Side, and lifting up that Fang also several times, he endeavour'd to give another Bite or Champ, but I kept his Mouth open, and the Tooth pierc'd the Film and emitted a Stream like one full of Blood in Blood-letting, and cast some Drops upon the Sleeve of the Carpenter's Shirt, who had no Waistcoat on. I advised him to put off his Shirt, but he would not, and receiv'd no Harm, and tho' nothing could then be seen of it upon the Shirt, yet in washing there appear'd five green Specks, which every Washing appear'd plainer and plainer, and lasted as long as the Shirt did, which the Carpenter told me was about three Years after. The Head we threw afterwards down upon the Ground, and a Sow came and eat it before our Faces and receiv'd no Harm. Now I believe had this Poison lighted upon any Place of the Carpenter's Skin that was scratch'd or hurt it might have poison'd him. I take the Poison to rest in a small Bag or Receptacle in the Hollow at the Root of these Teeth, but I never had the Opportunity afterwards to make a further Discovery of that. Virginia.

I will likewise give you a Story of the violent Effects of this sort of Poison, because I depend on the Truth of it, having it from an Acquaintance of mine of good Credit, one Colonel

Virginia. Colonel *James Taylor* of *Metapony*, ſtill alive. He being with others in the Woods a ſurveying, juſt as they were ſtanding to light their Pipes, they found a Rattle-Snake, and cut off his Head and about three Inches of the Body; then with a green Stick which he had in his Hand, about a Foot and an half long, the Bark being newly peel'd off, urg'd and provok'd the Head till it bit the Stick in Fury ſeveral times. Upon this the Colonel obſerv'd ſmall green Streaks to riſe up along the Stick towards his Hand; he threw the Stick upon the Ground, and in a quarter of an Hour the Stick of its own accord ſplit into ſeveral Pieces, and fell aſunder from End to End. This Account I had from him again at the writing hereof. *Beverley*'s *Hiſtory of Virginia*, p. 260 to 267.

Father *Labat* likewiſe tells us (in his *Nouveau Voyage aux Iſles de l'Amerique*, Tom. IV. p. 96 and 106, Edit. *Paris*, 1722, in 8*vo.*) that Serpents when they bite their Prey retire to avoid being hurt by them, and when dead cover them with their Spittle, extend their Feet along their Sides and Tails, if Quadrupedes, and then ſwallow them.

A certain Viper-Catcher who ſuffer'd himſelf to be bitten before forty Gentlemen of the Univerſity of *Cambridge* laſt Month (*July*, 1737) for the ſlender Reward of Twelvepence he receiv'd of every one of the Spectators, having provok'd a Viper to faſten upon his Wriſt, ſaid he felt at that Inſtant a moſt exquiſite Pain as high as his Elbow, and was in no ſmall Conſternation, tho' he had been bitten a great many times before, both accidentally in catching Vipers, and deſignedly for a Reward, and particularly before ſome Gentlemen of the *Royal Society*.

He

He kept ſtroaking down his Arm to the Wriſt from the time he was wounded, but apply'd nothing to it except common Sallad Oil, and did not do this till half an Hour after he was bitten, and his Arm was pretty much ſwell'd, and the next Day he appear'd perfectly well. Virginia.

Give me Leave to add, in relation to the Horn-Snake, that I ſaw a Letter lately which Mr. *Wilkinſon*, Fellow of *Emanuel-College*, receiv'd from his Brother, then at *Virginia*, who aſſur'd him that Trees had been kill'd by this Snake's ſtriking his Horn into them; which does not ſeem more improbable than the ſplitting of a Stick that has been penetrated by the Tooth of a Rattle-Snake: But as to the Buſineſs of Charming, I have very little Faith in it, unleſs as I have hinted, in treating of the *Eaſt-India* Serpents, that Birds may be delighted with the ſparkling Eyes of Snakes, as they are with the Fowler's Glaſs, or as a Moth is with the Flame of a Candle, and be taken in flying to the Snake to ſatisfy their Curioſity.

As to the feather'd Race, ſays Mr. *Clayton*, already cited, there are three ſorts of Eagles; the largeſt I take to be that they call the grey Eagle, being much of the Colour of our Kite or Glead. Fowls, and Birds. Eagles.

The ſecond is the bald Eagle, for the Body and Part of the Neck being of a dark brown, the upper Part of the Neck or Head is cover'd with a white ſort of Down, whereby it looks very bald, whence it is ſo named.

The third is the black Eagle, reſembling moſt the *Engliſh* Eagle. They build their Neſts generally at the Top of ſome old Tree, naked of Boughs, and nigh the River-ſide, and the People fell the Tree generally when

Virginia. they take the Young. They are moſt frequently ſitting on ſome tall Tree by the River-ſide, whence they may have a Proſpect up and down the River, as I ſuppoſe to obſerve the Fiſhing-Hawks; for when they ſee the Fiſhing-Hawk has ſtruck a Fiſh, immediately they take Wing, and 'tis ſometimes very pleaſant to behold the Flight; for when the Fiſhing-Hawk perceives herſelf purſu'd ſhe will ſcream and make a terrible Noiſe, till at length ſhe lets fall the Fiſh to make her own Eſcape, which the Eagle frequently catches before it reach the Earth or Water. Theſe Eagles kill young Lambs, Pigs, *&c.*

Fiſhing-Hawk. The Fiſhing-Hawk is an abſolute Species of a King's-Fiſher, but full as large or larger than our Jay, much of the Colour and Shape of a King's-Fiſher, tho' not altogether ſo curiouſly feather'd. It has a large Crop as I remember. There is a little King's-Fiſher, much the ſame in every reſpect with ours.

If I much miſtake not, I have ſeen both Goſs, Hawk, and Faulcon; beſides, there are ſeveral ſorts of the leſſer kind of Stannels.

There is likewiſe the Kite and the Ring-tale.

I never heard the Cuckow there to my Remembrance.

Owls. There's both a brown Owl and white Owl, much about as large as a Gooſe, which often kills their Hens and Poultry in the Night. The white Owl is a very delicate feather'd Bird, all the Feathers upon her Breaſt and Back being ſnow-white, and tip'd with a Punctal of jet-black; beſides, there is a Barn-Owl, much like ours, and a little ſort of Screech-Owl.

There's

There's both the Raven and the Carrion-Crow. I do not remember I saw any Rooks there. Virginia. Ravens.

The Night-Raven, which some call the *Virginian* Batt, is about the Bigness of a Cuckow, feather'd like them, but very short Legs, not discernable when it flies, which is only in the Evening, scudding like our Night-Raven.

There's a great sort of ravenous Bird that feeds upon Carrion, as big very nigh as an Eagle, which they call a Turky-Bustard; its Feathers are of a duskish black, it has red Gills, resembling those of a Turky, whence it has its Name. It is nothing of the same sort of Bird with our *English* Turky-Bustard, but is rather a Species of the Kites, for it will hover on the Wing something like them, and is carnivorous. The Fat thereof, dissolved into an Oil, is recommended mightily against old Aches and Sciatica Pains. Bustard.

I think there are no Jackdaws, nor any Magpies. They there prize a Magpye as much as we do their red Bird.

The Pica Glandaria, or Jay, is much less than our *English* Jay, and of another Colour, for it is all blue where ours is brown, the Wings marbled as curiously as ours are; it has both the same Cry and sudden jetting Motion. Jay.

There are great Variety and Curiosity in the Wood-peckers. There's one as big as our Magpye, with blackish brown Feathers, and a large scarlet Tuft on the top of the Head. There are four or five sorts of Wood-peckers more variegated with green, yellow, and red Heads, others spotted black and white, most lovely to behold. Wood-pecker.

Virginia. Turkies. There are wild Turkies extreme large: They talk of Turkies that have been kill'd which have weigh'd betwixt fifty and ſixty Weight. The largeſt that ever I ſaw weigh'd ſomething better than thirty-eight Pound. They have very long Legs, and will run prodigiouſly faſt. I remember not that ever I ſaw any of them on the Wing except it were once. Their Feathers are of a blackiſh ſhining Colour, that look in the Sun-ſhine like a Dove's Neck.

Poultry without Rumps. Hens and Cocks are for the moſt part without Tails and Rumps; and as ſome have aſſur'd me, our *Engliſh* Hens, after ſome time being kept there, have their Rumps rot off; which I am the apter to believe being all their Hens are certainly of an *Engliſh* Breed. I am ſorry I made no Anatomical Obſervations thereof, and Remarks about the Uſe of the Rumps in Birds, which at preſent I take to be a couple of Glands, containing a ſort of Juice for the varniſhing the Feathers, having obſerv'd all Birds have much Recourſe with their Bills to the Rumps when they dreſs their Plumes, whereby they ſcud thro' the Air more nimbly in their Flight.

Partridges. Partridges there are much ſmaller than ours, and reſort in Covies, as ours do. Their Fleſh is very white, and much excels ours, in my Mind; *ſed de guſtibus non eſt diſputendum.*

Doves. Their Turtle-Doves are of a duſkiſh blue Colour, much leſs than our common Pigeon; the whole Train is longer much than the Tails of our Pigeons, the middle Feather being the longeſt. There is the ſtrangeſt Story of a vaſt Number of theſe Pigeons that came in a Flock, a few Years before I came thither; they ſay they came through *New-England*, *New-York*, and *Virginia*, and were ſo prodigious

digious in Number as to darken the Sky for several Hours in the Place over which they flew, and brake massive Bows where they light, and many like things which I have had asserted to me by many Eye-witnesses of Credit, that to me it was without doubt, the Relaters being very sober Persons, and all agreeing in a Story. Nothing of the like ever happen'd since, nor did I ever see past ten in a Flock together, that I remember. I am not fond of such Stories, and had suppress'd the relating of it but that I have heard the same from very many. Virginia.

The Thrush and Fieldfare are much like ours, and are only seen in Winter there, according as they are here. Thrush.

Their Mocking-Birds may be compar'd to our Singing-Thrushes, being much of the same Bigness. There are two sorts, the grey and the red; the grey has Feathers much of the Colour of our grey Plovers, with white in the Wings like a Magpye. This has the much softer Note, and will imitate in its singing the Notes of all Birds that it hears, and is accounted much the finest singing Bird in the World. This Mocking-Bird, having its Name from mimicking all other Birds in Singing, is a wonderful mettled Bird, bold and brisk, and yet seems to be of a very tender Constitution, neither singing in Winter, nor in the midst of Summer; and with much Difficulty are any of them brought to live in *England*. Mocking-Bird.

The red Mocking-Bird is of a duskish red, or rather brown; it sings very well, but has not so soft a Note as the grey Mocking-Bird.

Of the *Virginia* Nightingale, or red Bird, there are two sorts; the Cocks of both sorts are Nightingale.

Virginia. are of a pure ſcarlet, the Hens of a duſkiſh red. I diſtinguiſh them into two ſorts, for the one has a tufted Cops on the Head, the other is ſmooth-feather'd. The Boys catch them and ſell them to the Merchants for about Six-pence a-piece, by whom they are brought to *England*. They are ſomething leſs than a Thruſh.

Starling. There is a Bird very injurious to Corn they call a Blackbird. I look on it a ſort of Starling, for they cry ſomething like them, but do not ſing, are much about the ſame Bigneſs, have Fleſh blackiſh like theirs. They reſort in great Flocks together. They are as black as a Crow all over to their Bills, only ſome of them have ſcarlet Feathers in the Pinions of their Wings. *Query*, whether a diſtinct Species.

Larks. They have a Lark nothing differing from our common Lark. They have another Bird which they call a Lark, that is much larger, as big as a Starling; it has a ſoft Note, feeds on the Ground, and, as I remember, has the ſpecifical Character of a long Heel. It is more inclined to yellow, and has a large half Moon on its Breaſt of yellow. If it have not a long Heel, *Query* whether a Species of the Yellow-hammer.

Martin. They have a Martin, very like, only larger than ours, that builds after the ſame manner. The Honourable Colonel *Bacon* has remarked for ſeveral Years, that they conſtantly come thither upon the 10th of *March*, one or two of them appearing before, being ſeen hovering in the Air for a Day or two, then go away, and, as he ſuppoſed, return'd with the great Flock. The Colonel delighted much in this Bird, and made Holes like Pigeon Holes at the End of his Houſe with Boards purpoſely for them. Their

Their Swallow differs but little from ours. Virginia.

They have a Bird they call a blue Bird, of a curious azure Colour, about the Bigneſs of a Chafinch. Swallow. Blackbird.

There are other ſorts of Finches, variegated with orange and yellow Feathers, very beautiful. Finches.

Sparrows, not much different from the *Engliſh*, but build not in the Eaves of Houſes, that ever I ſaw. Sparrows.

The Snow-Bird, which I take to be much the ſame with our Hedge-Sparrow. This is ſo call'd becauſe it ſeldom appears about Houſes, but againſt Snow or very cold Weather. Snowbird.

The Humming-Bird, which feeds upon the Honey of Flowers. I have been told by ſome Perſons that have kept of theſe Humming-Birds alive, and fed them with Water and Sugar, they are much the ſmalleſt of all Birds, have long Bills and curiouſly-colour'd Feathers, but differ much in Colour. Humming Bird.

Herons, three or four ſeveral ſorts, one larger than the *Engliſh*, feather'd much like a *Spaniſh* Gooſe. Herons.

Another ſort that only comes in Summer, Milk white, with red Legs, very lovely to behold.

The Bittern is there leſs than in *England*, and does not make that ſounding Noiſe, that ever I heard. Bittern.

Curlews, ſomething leſs than our *Engliſh*, tho' bigger than a Wimbrel. Curlews.

The Sand-piper, much reſembling the *Engliſh*. Sand-piper

The Snipe, two ſorts, one reſembling ours, the other much leſs. Snipe.

The

Virginia.

Tewits. The Tewits are ſmaller than the *Engliſh*, and have no long Toppins, but juſt like a young one that begins to fly.

Wild Swans, Geeſe, and Ducks. There are a great Number of wild Swans, wild Geeſe, and *Brent*-Geeſe all Winter in mighty Flocks, wild Ducks innumerable, Teal, Wigeon, Sheldrakes, *Virginia* Didapers, the black Diver, *&c.*

Cormorants. Gulls. There are in *Virginia* a great many Cormorants, ſeveral ſorts of Gulls, and in and about the Bay many Bannets.

Fiſh. There is no Place abounds with Sea and River Fiſh more than *Virginia*. In *February*, *March*, *April*, and *May*, there are Shoals of Herrings, Herrings come up into their very Brooks, ſome of the Size of ours, but for the moſt part much Cod fiſh, Stingraſs, *&c.* larger. There are alſo Plenty of Cod-fiſh, and the Stingraſs is ſaid to be peculiar to this Country, being ſo called from having a Sting in its Tail. It is eſteem'd good Food. In their Rivers there are the Old-wife, the Sheepshead, an excellent Fiſh, Trouts, green Fiſh, Trouts, Sturgeons, Sturgeons in great Plenty, Place, Flounders, Carp, Whitings, Carp, Pikes, Mullets and Perch: Perch, *&c.* And for Shell-fiſh they have Oyſters, Crabs, Oyſters. Cockles, and Shrimps: Of thoſe that are not Whales. eaten they have in their Seas Whale, Dog-fiſh, Sharks, Porpus's, Gar-fiſh, and Sword-fiſh.

Toad-fiſh. There is alſo a Fiſh they call the Toad-fiſh, from his ſwelling monſtrouſly when he is taken Rock-fiſh. out of the Water, and the Rock-fiſh, ſome Species whereof are poiſonous, and have been fatal to thoſe that have eaten them; tho' others, which are not eaſy to be diſtinguiſh'd from the former, are very wholſome Food.

Skip-jack. The Skip-jack, ſo nam'd from his ſkipping out of the Water, is tolerably good Food. And

The

The Tobacco-pipe-fiſh, ſo call'd from its being long and ſlender like a Tobacco-pipe. Virginia. Tobacco-pipe fiſh.

Colonel *Beverley*, alſo, who has furniſh'd us with the aboveſaid Deſcription of the Rattle-Snake, gives us the following Account of ſome of the reſt of the *Virginian* Animals, and their Management of them, (*viz.*)

When I come to ſpeak of their Cattle (ſays that Gentleman) I can't forbear charging my Countrymen with exceeding ill Huſbandry in not providing ſufficiently for them all Winter, by which Means they ſtarve all their young Cattle, or at leaſt ſtint their Growth; ſo that they ſeldom or never grow ſo large as they would do if they were well manag'd; for the Humour is there, if People can but ſave the Lives of their Cattle, tho' they ſuffer them to be never ſo poor, in the Winter, yet they will preſently grow fat again in the Spring, which they eſteem ſufficient for their Purpoſe. And this is the Occaſion that their Beef and Mutton are ſeldom or never ſo large or ſo fat as in *England*; and yet with the leaſt feeding imaginable they are put into as good Caſe as can be expected; and it is the ſame with their Hogs. Cattle.

Their Fiſh is in vaſt Plenty and Variety, and extraordinary good in their Kind. Beef and Pork are commonly ſold there from one Penny to Two-pence the Pound, or more, according to the Time of Year; their fatteſt and largeſt Pullets at Six-pence a-piece, their Capons at Eight-pence or Nine-pence a-piece, their Chickens at three or four Shillings the Dozen, their Ducks at Eight-pence or Nine-pence a-piece, their Geeſe at Ten-pence or a Shilling, their Turky-Hens at Fifteen or Eighteen-pence, and their Turky-Cocks at two Shillings or half a Crown; but Oyſters and Fiſh. Price of Fleſh and Fowl.

Virginia. wild Fowl are not ſo dear as the Things I have reckon'd before, being in their Seaſon the cheapeſt Victuals they have. Their Deer are commonly ſold from five to ten Shillings, according to the Scarcity and Goodneſs.

Inſects. All the troubleſome Vermine that ever I heard any body complain of are either Frogs, Snakes, Muſqueto's, Chinches, Seed-ticks, or Red-worms, by ſome call'd Potatoe-Lice; of all which I ſhall give an Account in their Order.

Toads and Frogs. Some People have been ſo ill inform'd as to ſay, that *Virginia* is full of Toads, tho' there never yet was ſeen one Toad in it. The Marſhes, Fens, and watry Grounds are indeed full of harmleſs Frogs, which do no Hurt, except by the Noiſe of their croaking Notes; but in the upper Parts of the Country, where the Land is high and dry, they are very ſcarce. In their Swamps and running Streams they have Frogs of an incredible Bigneſs, which are call'd Bull-Frogs, from the Roaring they make. Laſt Year I found one of theſe near a Stream of freſh Water of ſo prodigious a Magnitude, that when I extended its Legs I found the Diſtance betwixt them to be ſeventeen Inches and a half. If any are good to eat theſe muſt be the Kind.

Muſquetos Muſqueto's are long-tail'd Gnats, ſuch as are in all Fens and low Grounds in *England*, and I think have no other Difference from them than the Name. Neither are they in *Virginia* troubled with them any where but in their low Grounds and Marſhes. Theſe Inſects, I believe, are ſtronger and continue longer there by Reaſon of the warm Sun than in *England*. Whoever is perſecuted with them in his Houſe, may get rid of them by this eaſy Remedy:

Remedy: Let him but ſet open his Windows at Sun-ſet and ſhut them again before the Twilight be quite ſhut in, all the Muſqueto's in the Room will go out at the Windows. Virginia.

Chinches are a ſort of flat Bug, which lurks in the Bedſteads and Bedding, and diſturbs People's Reſt a-Nights. Every neat Houſewife contrives there by ſeveral Devices to keep her Beds clear of them. But the beſt Way I ever heard effectually to deſtroy them is by a narrow Search among the Bedding early in the Spring, before theſe Vermine begin to nit and run about; for they lie ſnug all the Winter, and are in the Spring large and full of the Winter's Growth, having all their Seed within them, and ſo they become a fair Mark to find, and may with their whole Breed be deſtroy'd. They are the ſame as they have in *London* near the Shipping. Bugs.

Seed-ticks and Red-worms are ſmall Inſects that annoy the People by Day as Muſqueto's and Chinches do by Night; but both theſe keep out of your Way if you keep out of theirs; for Seed-ticks are no where to be met with but in the Track of Cattle, upon which the great Ticks faſten and fill their Skins ſo full of Blood that they drop off, and wherever they happen to fall they produce a kind of Egg, which lies about a Fortnight before the Seedlings are hatch'd. Theſe Seedlings run in Swarms up the next Blade of Graſs that lies in their Way, and then the firſt thing that bruſhes that Blade of Graſs gathers off moſt of theſe Vermine, which ſtick like Burs upon any thing that touches them. They void their Eggs at their Mouth. Ticks.

Red-worms lie only in old dead Trees and rotten Logs, and without ſitting down upon Red-worms.

Virginia. such a Man never meets with them, nor at any other Season but only in the midst of Summer. A little warm Water immediately brings off both Seed-ticks and Red-worms, tho' they lie ever so thick upon any Part of the Body. But without such Remedy they will be troublesome; for they are so small that nothing will lay hold of them but the Point of a Penknife, Needle, or such like; but if nothing be done to remove them, the Itching they occasion goes away after two Days.

Sheep. Their Sheep increase well and bear good Fleeces, but they generally are suffer'd to be torn off their Backs by Briars and Bushes instead of being shorn, or else are left rotting upon the Dunghil with their Skins.

Bees. Bees thrive there abundantly, and will very easily yield to the careful Housewife a full Hive of Honey, and besides lay up a Winter Store sufficient to preserve their Stocks.

Cattle and Pasture. The Beeves, when any Care is taken of them in the Winter, come to good Perfection. They have noble Marshes there, which, with the Charge of draining only, would make as fine Pastures as any in the World, and yet there is hardly an hundred Acres of Marsh drain'd throughout the whole Country.

Hogs. Hogs swarm like Vermine upon the Earth, and are often accounted such, insomuch that when an Inventory of any considerable Man's Estate is taken by the Executors the Hogs are left out, and not listed in the Appraisement. The Hogs run where they list, and find their own Support in the Woods without any Care of the Owner, and in many Plantations it is well if the Proprietor can find and catch the Pigs or any Part of a Farrow when they are young to mark them; for if there be any mark'd

mark'd in a Gang of Hogs they determine the Property of the reſt, becauſe they ſeldom miſs their Gangs, but as they are bred in Company ſo they continue to the End, except ſometimes the Boars ramble. Virginia.

In the Month of *June* annually there riſe up in the Salts vaſt Beds of Seedling-Worms, which enter the Ships, Sloops, or Boats whereever they find the Coat of Pitch, Tarr, or Lime worn off the Timber, and by degrees eat the Plank into Cells like thoſe of an Honey-Comb. Theſe Worms continue thus upon the Surface of the Water from their Riſe in *June* until the firſt great Rains after the middle of *July*, but after that do no freſh Damage till the next Summer Seaſon, and never penetrate farther than the Plank or Timber they firſt fix upon. Ship Worms.

The Damage occaſion'd by theſe Worms may be four ſeveral Ways avoided.

1*ſt*, By keeping the Coat (of Pitch, Lime, and Tallow, or whatever elſe it is) whole upon the Bottom of the Ship or Veſſel; for theſe Worms never faſten nor enter but where the Timber is naked.

2*dly*, By anchoring the large Veſſels in the Strength of the Tide during the Worm-Seaſon, and haling the ſmaller a-ſhore, for in the Current of a ſtrong Tide the Worms cannot faſten.

3*dly*, By burning and cleaning immediately after the Worm Seaſon is over, for then they are but juſt ſtuck into the Plank, and have not bury'd themſelves in it, ſo that the leaſt Fire in the World deſtroys them entirely, and prevents all Damage that would otherwiſe enſue from them.

4*thly*,

Virginia.

4*thly*, By running up into the Freſhes with the Ship or Veſſel during the five or ſix Weeks that the Worm is thus above Water; for they never enter or do any Damage in freſh Water, or where it is not very ſalt.

CHAP.

CHAP. V.

Of the Virginian *Soil and Vegetables*, viz. *of their Foreſt and Fruit Trees, Plants, Corn, Herbage, Roots, and Huſbandry; and of their Stones, Earth, and Minerals.*

THIS Country, upon the firſt Diſcovery of it, was found to conſiſt, like many others, either of Foreſts or Bogs. The Foreſts contain'd abundance of noble Timber of various Kinds, which grew to an unuſual Height and Bulk, much beyond any thing we ſee in *Europe*; the Trees ſtanding at ſuch a Diſtance from each other that a Coach and Six might drive through them with Pleaſure. The chief of them were Oaks, Cedars, Firrs, Cypreſs, Elm, Aſh, and Walnut, which had no Boughs to a very great Height; the Oaks being ſo large as to meaſure two Foot ſquare, and ſixty Foot high. There was no Underwood or Buſhes among the Timber; but a great deal of this in their Bogs and Moraſſes, mix'd with long Graſs, Flags, and Sedge. They had alſo Beech, Poplar, Hazel, Eldern, and Willow, with Trees which yield Gums and ſeveral ſorts of ſweet Wood; and Woods uſed in dying, with Saſſafras, Sarſaparilla, *&c.*

Virginia.

Soil and Vegetables.

Foreſt Trees.

Among

Virginia.

Fruits.

Grapes. Among their Fruits they had Grapes that grew wild, and the *European* Grape comes to great Perfection here, and yet they have never made any Quantities of Wine; the Reaſon uſually given for which is, that it will not keep.

Cherries. Cherries are very plentiful, being of three ſorts, one of which grows in Bunches like Grapes, another ſort is black, and a third is call'd the *Indian* Cherry.

Plumbs. They have ſeveral ſorts of Plumbs of their own Growth from the Bigneſs of a Damſin to that of a Pear, the largeſt much reſembling the Taſte of an Apricot; and they have a wild Plumb like our white Plumb; but *Engliſh* Plumbs do not ripen kindly here.

Peaches. Peaches are very large, and ſo plentiful that they are given to the Hogs in ſome Places:

Apples. And there is no Place where Apples and Pears abound more. They have alſo the Chinquamine, a Fruit that reſembles a Cheſnut; the

Indian Fruits. Macoquez, not unlike an Apple; the Mattaqueſumack, or Fig; the Mattacocks, a ſort

Figs. of Strawberry; and the common Figs grow very well here, tho' the Soil is not favourable

Oranges. to Oranges and Lemons. There are a ſort of

Quinces. Acorns that yield a ſweet Oil, and Quinces are ſo plentiful that they make a great deal of Liquor as well as Marmalade of them.

Graſs. Their Graſs is long coarſe Stuff, of which they ſcarce ever make Hay; but their Cattle brouſe upon it both Winter and Summer, having very little Fodder beſides, except the Leaves of the *Indian* Corn, which are given

Silk-Graſs them very ſparingly. Silk-Graſs grows here ſpontaneouſly, and the Soil is extremely pro-

Flax. per for Hemp and Flax; and yet they have no Manufacture of Silk or Linnen.

As

Virginia.

As to their Bread Corn it is of two sorts, 1. *English* Wheat; and 2. Maiz, or *Indian* Corn. The *English* Wheat, Mr. *Clayton* observes, generally yields between fifteen and thirty fold Increase, the Ground being only once ploughed, and that without any Dung or Manure; whereas it is esteem'd a good Crop that yields eight fold Increase in *England*, so much more fruitful is the *Virginian* Soil than ours. Corn.

Indian Corn.

The *Indian* Corn is not unlike our Peas in Taste, but grows in a great Ear or Head as big as the Handle of a large Horsewhip, having from three hundred to seven hundred Grains in one Ear, and sometimes one Grain produces two or three such Ears or Heads. It is of various Colours, red, white, yellow, blue, green, and black, and some speckled and striped, but the white and yellow are most common. The Stalk is as thick as an ordinary walking Cane, and grows six or eight Foot high in Joints, having a sweet Juice in it, of which a Syrup is sometimes made, and from every Joint there grow long Leaves of the Shape of Sedge Leaves. The Manner of planting it is in Holes or Trenches about five or six Feet distant from each other; the Earth is open'd with a Hough (and of late Years with a Plow) four Inches deep, and four or five Grains thrown into each Hole or Trench, about a Span distant from each other, and then cover'd with Earth; they keep it weeding from time to time, and as the Stalk grows high they keep the Mold about it like the Hillocks in a Hop Ground. They begin to plant in *April*, but the chief Plantation is in *May*, and they continue to plant till the middle of *June*. What is planted in *April* is reap'd in *August*, what is planted in *May* is reap'd in

Husbandry

Virginia.

September, and the laſt in *October*. They make both Bread and ſtrong Liquor of it, and ſeveral ſorts of Diſhes, of which Hommony, already mention'd, is the chief.

Mr. *Clayton* obſerv'd, that they had only cultivated their higheſt and barreneſt Lands when he was there, leaving their richeſt Vales untouch'd, becauſe they underſtood not any thing of draining; ſo that the richeſt Meadow Lands, which are one Third of the Country, are boggy Moraſſes and Swamps, whereof they make little Advantage, but loſe in them abundance of their Cattle, eſpecially at the firſt of the Spring, when the Cattle are weak and venture too far after young Graſs. Whereas a vaſt Improvement might be made of theſe Moraſſes. The Generality of *Virginia* is a ſandy Land, with a ſhallow Soil; ſo that after they have clear'd a freſh Piece of Ground out of the Woods it will not bear Tobacco paſt two or three Years, unleſs Cow-pen'd; for they manure their Ground by keeping their Cattle, as in the South you do your Sheep every Night, confining them in Hurdles, which they remove when they have ſufficiently dung'd one Spot of Ground, but they cannot improve much thus: Beſides, it produces a ſtrong ſort of Tobacco, in which the Smoakers ſay they can plainly taſte the Fulſomneſs of the Dung; therefore every three or four Years they muſt be for clearing a new Piece of Ground out of the Woods, which requires much Labour and Toil, it being ſo thick grown all over with maſſy Timber. Thus their Plantations run over vaſt Tracts of Ground, each being ambitious to engroſs as much as he can, that he may be ſure to have enough to plant, and for their Stocks and Herds of Cattle to range and feed

Soil.

Plantations too large and ill managed.

feed in. Plantations of a thouſand, two thouſand, or three thouſand Acres are common, whereby the Country is thinly inhabited, their Living ſolitary and unſociable, Trading confus'd and diſpers'd, beſides other Inconveniences. Whereas they might improve two hundred or three hundred Acres to more Advantage, and would make the Country much more healthy; for thoſe that have three thouſand Acres have ſcarce clear'd ſix hundred Acres thereof, which is peculiarly term'd the Plantation, being ſurrounded with the two thouſand four hundred Acres of Woods; ſo that there can be no free or even Motion of the Air, but the Air is kept either ſtagnant, or the lofty ſulphureous Particles of the Air, that are higher than the Tops of the Trees, which are above as high again as the Generality of the Woods in *England*, deſcending when they paſs over the clear'd Spots of Ground, muſt needs in the violent Heat of Summer raiſe a preternatural Ferment, and produce bad Effects. Nor is it any Advantage to their Stocks or Crops; for did they but drain their Swamps and low Lands, they have a very deep Soil, that would endure planting twenty or thirty Years, and ſome would ſcarce ever be worn out; for they might lay them all Winter, or when they pleas'd, in Water; and the Product of their Labour would be double or treble, whether Corn or Tobacco, tho' (when I have diſcours'd the ſame to ſeveral, and in part ſhewn them how their particular Grounds might be drain'd at a very eaſy Rate) they have either been ſo conceited of their old Way, and ſo ſottiſh as not to apprehend, or ſo negligent as not to apply themſelves thereto. But on the Plantation where I liv'd, I drain'd a good large Swamp,

Virginia.

Virginia. Swamp, which fully anſwer'd Expectation. The Gentlewoman where I liv'd was a very ingenious Lady, who one Day diſcourſing the Overſeer of her Servants about pitching the enſuing Year's Crop, the Overſeer was naming one Place where he deſign'd to plant thirty thouſand Plants, another Place for fifteen thouſand, another for ten thouſand, and ſo forth; the whole Crop deſign'd to be about an hundred thouſand Plants: Having obſerv'd the Year before he had done the like, and ſcatter'd his Crop up and down the Plantation at Places a Mile and a half aſunder, which was very inconvenient, and whereby they loſt much Time, I interpos'd, and aſk'd why they did not plant all their Crop together? The Fellow ſmil'd, as it were at my Ignorance, and ſaid, There was very good Reaſon for it. I reply'd that was it I enquir'd after; he returned, The Plantation had been an old planted Plantation, and being but a ſmall Plat of Ground, was almoſt worn out, ſo that they had not Ground all together that would bring forth Tobacco. I told him then, that they had better Ground than ever yet they had planted, and more than their Hands could manage. He ſmil'd again, and aſked me where? I then nam'd ſuch a Swamp. He then ſaid ſcornfully, He thought what a Planter I was; that I underſtood better how to make a Sermon than manage Tobacco. I reply'd, with ſome Warmneſs, tho' I hoped ſo, that was Impertinence, and no Anſwer. He then ſaid, That the Tobacco there would drown, and the Roots rot. I reply'd, That the whole Country would drown if the Rivers were ſtopt, but it might be laid as dry as any Land on the Plantation. In ſhort, we diſcourſed it very warmly,

warmly, till he told me, He underſtood his own Buſineſs well enough, and did not deſire to learn of me. But the Gentlewoman attended ſomewhat better to my Reaſoning, and got me one Day to go and ſhew her how I projected the Draining of the Swamp, and thought it ſo feaſible, that ſhe was reſolv'd to have it done, and therefore deſir'd me I would again diſcourſe her Overſeer; which I did ſeveral times, but he would by no means hearken thereto, and was ſo poſitive, that ſhe was forced to turn him away, and to have her Servants ſet about the Work: And with three Men in thirteen Days I drain'd the whole Swamp, it being ſandy Land, ſoaks and drains admirably well, and what I little expected, laid a Well dry at a conſiderable Diſtance. Now to teach her how ſhe might make her Tobacco that grew in the Swamp leſs, for it produced ſo very large that it was ſuſpected to be of the *Aranoko* kind, I told her tho' the Complaint was rare, yet there was an excellent Remedy for that in letting every Plant bear eight or nine Leaves inſtead of four or five, and ſhe would have more Tobacco and leſs Leaves. Now you muſt know they top their Tobacco, that is, take away the little top Bud when the Plant has put forth as many Leaves as they think the Richneſs of the Ground will bring to a Subſtance; but generally when it has ſhot forth four or ſix Leaves, and when the top Bud is gone, it puts forth no more Leaves, but ſide Branches, which they call Suckers, which they are careful ever to take away that they may not impoveriſh the Leaves. I have been more tedious in the Particulars, the fuller to evince how reſolute they are, and conceitedly bent Virginia.

to

Virginia. to follow their own Practice and Custom rather than to receive Directions from others, tho' plain, easy, and advantageous. There are many other Places as easy to drain as this, tho' of larger Extent, and richer Soil, for some of which I have given Directions, and have only had the Return perhaps of a Flout afterwards. Even in *James* Town Island, which is much of an oval Figure, there is a Swamp runs diagonal-wise over the Island, whereby are lost at least one hundred and fifty Acres of Land, which would be Meadow, and turn to as good Account as if it were in *England*: Besides, it is the great Annoyance of the Town, and no doubt but makes it much more unhealthy. If therefore they but scour'd the Channel, made a pretty ordinary Trench all along the middle of the Swamp, and placed a Sluce at the Mouth where it opens into the back Creek, for the Mouth of the Channel there is narrow, has a good hard Bottom, and is not past two Yards deep when the Flood is out, as if Nature had design'd it before-hand, they might thus drain all the Swamp absolutely dry, or lay it under Water at their pleasure.

But now to turn to the Reflections of improving and manuring of Land in *Virginia*. Hitherto, as I have said, they have used none but that of Cow-penning, yet I suppose they might find very good Marle in many Places. I have seen both the red and blue Marle at some Breaks of Hills. This would be the propereſt Manure for their sandy Land, if they spread it not too thick, theirs being, as I have said, a shallow sandy Soil, which was the Reason I never advised any to use Lime, tho' they have very good Lime of Oyster-Shells,

Shells, but that's the propereſt Manure for cold Clay Land, and not for a ſandy Soil. But as moſt Lands have one Swamp or another bordering on them, they may certainly get admirable Slitch wherewith to manure all their Up-lands: But this, ſay they, will not improve Ground, but clods and grows hard. 'Tis true it will do ſo for ſome time, a Year or two at the firſt; but did they caſt it in Heaps, and let it lie for two or three Years, after a Froſt or two had ſeiz'd it, and it had been well pierced therewith, I doubt not but it would turn to good Account. Virginia.

They neither houſe nor milk any of their Cows in Winter, having a Notion that it would kill them; yet I perſuaded the aforemention'd Lady where I liv'd, to milk four Cows the laſt Winter that I ſtaid in the Country, whereof ſhe found ſo good Effect, that ſhe aſſur'd me ſhe would keep to my Advice for the future; and alſo, as I had further urged, houſe them too, for which they have mighty Conveniences, their Tobacco-Houſes being empty ever at that Time of the Year, and may eaſily be fitted in two or three Days time, without any Prejudice, whereby their Cattle would be much ſhelter'd from thoſe pinching ſharp Froſts that ſome Nights on a ſudden become very ſevere. I had another Project (for the Preſervation of their Cattle prov'd very ſucceſsful) I urged the Lady to ſow her Wheat as early as poſſible ſhe could, ſo that before Winter it might be well rooted, to be early and flouriſhing at the firſt of the Spring; ſo that ſhe might turn thereon her weak Cattle, and ſuch as ſhould at any time be ſwamp'd, whereby they might be recruited and ſav'd, and it would do the Wheat good alſo. Daries.

Virginia. alſo. I adviſed her likewiſe to ſave and carefully gather her *Indian* Corn Tops and Blades, and all her Straw, and whatever elſe could be made Fodder for her Cattle; for they get no Hay, tho' I was urging that too, and to ſow Saint-foin; for being a ſandy Soil, I am confident it would turn to very good Account. They have little or no Graſs in Winter, ſo that their Cattle are pin'd and ſtarv'd, and many that are brought low and weak when the Spring begins venture too far into the Swamps after the freſh Graſs, where they periſh; ſo that ſome Perſons loſe ten, twenty, or thirty Head of Cattle in a Year.

Huſbandry of Tobacco. But as it is the Excellence of the *Virginian* Tobacco which diſtinguiſhes this from all Countries, it is fit I ſhould give ſome further Account of their Management in the Huſbandry and Curing of this Plant, which they have brought to that Perfection.

The Tobacco Seeds are firſt ſown in Beds, where having remain'd a Month, the Plants are tranſplanted into little Hillocks, like thoſe in our Hop Grounds, the firſt rainy Weather: And being grown a Foot high there, within the Space of another Month they top them and prune off all the bottom Leaves, leaving only ſeven or eight on the Stalks, that they may be the better fed, and theſe Leaves in ſix Weeks time will be in their full Growth. The Planters prune off the Suckers, and clear them of the Horn-Worm twice a Week, which is call'd Worming and Suckering, and this Work laſts three Weeks or a Month, by which time the Leaf from green begins to turn browniſh, and to ſpot and thicken, which is a Sign of its ripening. As faſt as the Plants ripen they cut them down, and leave them in the

the Field for half a Day, then heap them up and let them lie and ſweat a Night, and the next Day carry them to the Tobacco-Houſe, where every Plant is hang'd up at a convenient Diſtance from each other, for about a Month or five Weeks; at the End of which Time, they ſtrike or take them down in moiſt Weather when the Leaf gives, or elſe it will crumble to Duſt; after which they are laid upon Sticks, and cover'd up cloſe in the Tobacco-Houſe for a Week or a Fortnight to ſweat, and then opening the Bulk in a wet Day the Servants ſtrip them and ſort them, the top Leaves being the beſt, and the bottom the worſt Tobacco. The laſt Work is to pack it in Hogſheads, or bundle it up, which is alſo done in a wet Seaſon; for in the Curing Tobacco, wet Seaſons are as neceſſary as dry to make the Leaf pliant. Virginia.

To this Account of the *Virginian* Soil and Vegetables, I ſhall here add Colonel *Beverley*'s Obſervations on the ſame Subject. Colonel *Beverley*'s Account of the Soil and Vegetables.

The Soil (ſays this Gentleman) is of ſuch Variety, according to the Difference of Situation, that one Part or other of it ſeems fitted to every ſort of Plant that is requiſite either for the Benefit or Pleaſure of Mankind. And were it not for the high Mountains on the North-Weſt, which are ſuppos'd to retain vaſt Magazines of Snow, and by that Means cauſe the Wind from that Quarter to deſcend a little too cold upon them, 'tis believ'd that many of thoſe delicious Summer Fruits, growing in the hotter Climates, might be kept there green all the Winter without the Charge of Houſing, or any other Care than what is due to the natural Plants of the Country when tranſplanted into a Garden: But as that would be no con-

Virginia. siderable Charge, any Man that is curious might with all the Ease imaginable preserve as many of them as would gratify a moderate Luxury; and the Summer affords genial Heat enough to ripen them to Perfection.

Various Soils. There are three different kinds of Land, according to the Difference of Situation, either in the lower Parts of the Country, the Middle, or that on the Heads of the Rivers.

1. The Lands towards the Mouths of the Rivers are generally of a low, moist, and fat Mold, such as the heavier sort of Grain delights in, as Rice, Hemp, *Indian* Corn, *&c.* This also is varied here and there with Veins of a cold, hungry, sandy Soil of the same Moisture, and very often lying under Water. But this also has its Advantages, for on such Land generally grow the Huckle-berries, Cran-berries, Chinkapins, *&c.* These low Lands Trees. are for the most part well stor'd with Oaks, Poplars, Pines, Cedars, Cypress, and sweet Gums, the Trunks of which are often thirty, forty, fifty, some sixty or seventy Foot high, without a Branch or Limb. They likewise produce a great Variety of Ever-greens, unknown to me by Name, besides the beauteous Holly, sweet Mirtle, Cedar, and the live Oak, which for three quarters of a Year is continually dropping its Acorns, and at the same time budding and bearing others in their stead.

Springs, *&c.* The Land higher up the Rivers throughout the whole Country is generally a level Ground, with shallow Valleys full of Streams and pleasant Springs of clear Water, having interspers'd here and there among the large Levels some small Hills and extensive Vales. The Mold, in some Places, is black, fat, and thick laid, in others looser, lighter and thin. The Foundation

dation of the Mold is also various, sometimes Clay, then Gravel and rocky Stone, and sometimes Marle. The Middle of the Necks or Ridges between the Rivers is generally poor, being either a light Sand, or a white or red Clay with a thin Mold; yet even these Places are stor'd with Chesnuts, Chinkapins, Acorns of the shrub Oak, and a reedy Grass in Summer, very good for Cattle. The rich Lands lie next the Rivers and Branches, and are stor'd with large Oaks, Walnuts, Hickories, Ash, Beech, Poplar, and many other sorts of Timber of surprising Bigness. Virginia.

The Heads of the Rivers afford a Mixture of Hills, Vallies, and Plains, and some richer than other, whereof the Fruits and Timber Trees are also various. In some Places lie great Plats of low and very rich Ground, in others large Spots of Meadows and Savanna's, wherein are hundreds of Acres without any Tree at all, but yield Reeds and Grass of incredible Height: And in the Swamps and sunken Grounds grow Trees as vastly big as I believe the World affords, and stand so close together, that the Branches or Boughs of many of them look into one another; but what lessens their Value is that the greatest Bulk of them are at some Distance from Water Carriage. The Land of these upper Parts affords greater Variety of Soil than any other, and as great Variety in the Foundations of the Soil or Mold, of which good Judgment may be made by the Plants and Herbs that grow upon it. The Rivers and Creeks do in many Places form very fine large Marshes, which are convenient Supports for their Flocks and Herds. The Uplands.

Of spontaneous Flowers they have an unknown Variety; the finest Crown Imperial in Flowers.

Virginia.

the World; the Cardinal Flower, ſo much extoll'd for its ſcarlet Colour, is almoſt in every Branch; the Moccaſin Flower, and a thouſand others not yet known to *Engliſh* Herbaliſts. Almoſt all the Year round the Levels and Vales are beautify'd with Flowers of one kind or other, which make their Woods as fragrant as a Garden.

There is alſo found the fine Tulip-bearing Laurel-Tree, which has the pleaſanteſt Smell in the World, and keeps bloſſoming and ſeeding ſeveral Months together; it delights much in gravelly Branches of Chryſtal Streams, and perfumes the very Woods with its Odour. So alſo do the large Tulip-Tree, which we call a Poplar; the Locuſt, which reſembles much the Jeſſamine, and the Perfuming Crab-Tree, during their Seaſon.

Kitchen Gardens.

A Kitchen Garden don't thrive better or faſter in any Part of the Univerſe than there. They have all the culinary Plants that grow in *England*, and in greater Perfection than in *England*. Beſides theſe, they have ſeveral Roots, Herbs, Vine-fruits, and Sallad-flowers peculiar to themſelves, moſt of which will neither increaſe nor grow to Perfection in *England*: Theſe they diſh up various Ways, and find them very delicious Sauce to their Meats both roaſt and boil'd, freſh and ſalt; ſuch are the *Indian* Creſſes, Red-buds, Saſſafras-flowers, Cymnels, Melons, and Potatoes.

Apples.

You may raiſe Apples from the Seed, which never degenerate into Crabs there, but produce as good, or perhaps better Fruit than the Mother Tree (which is not ſo in *England*) and are wonderfully improv'd by grafting and managing; yet there are very few Planters that

that graft at all, and much fewer that take any care to get choice Fruits. Virginia.

The Fruit-Trees are wonderfully quick of Growth, so that in six or seven Years time from the Planting a Man may bring an Orchard to bear in great Plenty, from which he may make store of good Cyder, or distill great Quantities of Brandy, for the Cyder is very strong and yields abundance of Spirit; yet they have very few that take any care at all for an Orchard; nay, many that have good Orchards are so negligent of them as to let them go to ruin, and expose the Trees to be torn and bark'd by the Cattle. Cyder.

Peaches, Nectarines, and Apricots, as well as Plums and Cherries, grow there upon standard Trees. They commonly bear in three Years from the Stone, and thrive so exceedingly that they seem to have no need of grafting or inoculating, if any body would be so good a Husband. And truly I never heard of any that did graft either Plum, Nectarine, Peach, or Apricot in that Country till very lately. Peaches, &c.

Peaches and Nectarines I believe to be spontaneous somewhere or other on that Continent, for the *Indians* have and ever had greater Variety and finer sorts of them than the *English*. The best sort of these cling to the Stone, and will not come off clear, which they call Plum-Nectarines and Plum-Peaches, or Cling-stones. Some of these are twelve or thirteen Inches in the Girt. These sorts of Fruits are raised so easily there that some good Husbands plant great Orchards of them purposely for their Hogs, and others make a Drink of them, which they call Mobby, and either drink it as Cyder, or distill Mobby.

Virginia. distill it off for Brandy. This makes the best Spirit next to Grapes.

Grapes. Grape Vines of the *English* Stock as well as those of their own Production bear most abundantly if they are suffer'd to run near the Ground, and increase very kindly by Slipping, yet very few have them at all in their Gardens, much less endeavour to improve them by Cutting and Laying. But lately some Vineyards have been attempted, and one is brought to Perfection, yielding seven hundred and fifty Gallons a Year. The Wine drinks at present greenish, but the Owner doubts not of good Wine in a Year or two more, and takes great Delight that way.

When a single Tree happens in clearing the Ground to be left standing with a Vine upon it, open to the Sun and Air, that Vine generally produces as much as four or five others that remain in the Woods. I have seen in this Case more Grapes upon one single Vine than would load a *London* Cart. And for all this the People, till of late, never remov'd any of them into their Gardens, but contented themselves, throughout the whole Country, with the Grapes they found thus wild.

Flowers. A Garden is no where sooner made than there, either for Fruits or Flowers. Tulips from the Seed flower the second Year. All sorts of Herbs have there a Perfection in their Flavour beyond what I ever tasted in a more Northern Climate: And yet they have not many Gardens in that Country fit to bear the Name of Gardens.

Corn. All sorts of *English* Grain thrive and increase there as well as in any other Part of the World; as for Example, Wheat, Barley, Oates, Rye, Peas, Rape, *&c.* And yet they

they don't make a Trade of any of them. Their Peas indeed are troubled with Wivels, which eat a Hole in them; but this Hole does neither damage the Seed nor make the Peas unfit for Boiling: And such as are sow'd late, and gather'd after *August*, are clear of that Inconvenience. Virginia.

Rice has been try'd there, and is found to grow as well as in *Carolina*; but it labours under the same Inconvenience, the Want of a Community to husk and clean it, and after all to take it off the Planters Hands. Rice.

Flax, Hemp, Cotton, and Silk-worms have thriven there formerly, when Encouragement was given for making Linnen, Silk, *&c.* But now all Encouragement of such Things is taken away, or entirely dropt by the Assemblies; and such Manufactures are always neglected when Tobacco bears any thing of a Price. Flax.

Silk-grass is there spontaneous in many Places. I need not mention what Advantage may be made of so useful a Plant, whose Fibres are as fine as Flax, and much stronger than Hemp. Silk-grass.

The Woods produce great Variety of Incense and sweet Gums which distill from several Trees; as also Trees bearing Honey and Sugar; but there is no Use made of any of them, either for Profit or Refreshment. Gums. Sugar-Trees.

All sorts of naval Stores may be produced there, as Pitch, Tarr, Rosin, Turpentine, Plank-timber, and all sorts of Masts and Yards, besides Sails, Cordage, and Iron; and all these may be transported by an easy Water Carriage. Naval Stores.

CHAP.

CHAP. VI.

The History of Virginia.

Virginia. History.

THE North-East Part of the Continent of *America* was first discover'd, as has been observ'd already, by *Sebastian Cabot*, a Native of *Bristol*. He was the Son of *John Cabot*, a *Genoese* or *Venetian* Pilot, who resided in that City, and had made a great many Voyages in the Service of the Court of *England*, or of *English* Merchants, and gain'd a mighty Reputation for his Skill in maritime Affairs, which induc'd King *Henry* VII. to employ him, in the Year 1497, to find out a North-West Passage to *China*; which tho' *Cabot* was not so fortunate to accomplish, yet he discover'd all the North-East Coast of *America*, from Cape *Florida* in 25 Degrees North Latitude to 67 and an half, from whence *England* claim'd a Right to that Country prior to the *Spaniards* or any other *European* Power: And the Reason no Attempt was made to plant or send Colonies to *North-America* for a considerable time, *Cabot* himself informs us, was the Wars that happen'd immediately after. See *Hackluit's Collection of Voyages*, Vol. III. p. 6 and 7.

Virginia discover'd by *Cabot*.

It seems strange, however, that neither in the Reign of *Henry* VII. or in that of his Son, *Henry* VIII. or in the Reign of *Edward* VI. or

or Queen *Mary*, nor till the latter End of the Reign of Queen *Elizabeth*, which was near an hundred Years after this Diſcovery of *Cabot*'s, the *Engliſh* ſhould endeavour to make any Settlements in this Country; but I preſume we were diverted from it for ſome time by our Wars with *Scotland* or *France*, as *Cabot* intimates, and afterwards by the various Changes that were made in Religion, which engag'd our whole Attention at home, till the Proteſtant Religion was eſtabliſh'd here by Queen *Elizabeth*: And when this was effected, ſhe was engag'd in ſupporting the Proteſtants of *France*, the *Low-Countries*, and *Scotland*, againſt the Popiſh Powers; ſo that it was late in her Reign before ſhe was at leiſure to caſt her Eyes upon *North-America*. Virginia. No Colonies ſent thither till 100 Years afterwards

In the mean time the *Spaniards* from *Mexico* invaded *Florida*, and made themſelves Maſters of that Part of it which lies upon the Gulph of *Mexico*, as far as the *Atlantick Ocean*. The *French* alſo made ſome Attempts to ſettle themſelves near Cape *Florida*, but were driven from thence by the *Spaniards*, who notwithſtanding abandon'd this Country themſelves for many Years, except the South-Weſt Part of it, which they retain'd on account of its Silver Mines, giving it the Name of *New-Mexico*: For the *Spaniards* ſeem'd to ſlight every Country in *America* how fruitful ſoever, that did not produce Gold or Silver; and this I preſume was the Reaſon that it remain'd in a manner deſerted for ſo many Years, and might have remain'd ſo much longer if Queen *Elizabeth* had not at length obſerv'd, that the moſt effectual Way to diſtreſs the *Spaniards* was to interrupt their Trade with *America*, and in-

Virginia.

tercept the Galleons that annually brought their Plate from thence.

Mr. *Ralegh* first attempted to fix Colonies there.

This induced her to fit out several Squadrons of Men of War under the Command of *Drake*, *Hawkins*, *Ralegh*, and other brave Sea Commanders, to cruize on the Coast of *North-America*, and surprise their Ports and Shipping there; in which Expeditions the *English* became well acquainted with this fruitful and beautiful Country of *Florida*: And Mr. *Ralegh* being inform'd there were Gold Mines in it, obtain'd a Patent or Grant from Queen *Elizabeth*, in the Year 1584, of all such Parts of it as he should discover and plant from 33 to 40 Degrees North Latitude: And because this was the first Patent that ever was granted to any *Englishman*, authorizing him to send Colonies to the Continent of *America*, and will furnish us with abundant Matter for our Reflections as to the Justice and Expedience of possessing ourselves of that Country, I shall here give an Abstract of it.

Mr. *Ralegh*'s Patent to send Colonies to *America*.

" *ELIZABETH*, by the Grace of " GOD, of *England*, *France*, and *Ireland*, " Queen, Defender of the Faith, *&c.* To " all People to whom these Presents shall " come, greeting. Know ye, that of our " special Grace and mere Motion, we have " given and granted, and by these Presents, " for us, our Heirs and Successors, do give " and grant to our trusty and well-beloved " *Walter Ralegh*, Esq; and to his Heirs and " Assignes for ever, free Liberty at all times, " for ever hereafter, to discover and view " such remote *heathen and barbarous Lands* " *and Territories not actually possess'd of any* " *Christian Prince, or inhabited by Christian* " *People*, as to him or them shall seem good:

" And

" And the ſame to have, hold, occupy and " enjoy to him, his Heirs and Aſſignes, for " ever, with all Prerogatives, Juriſdictions, " Royalties, Privileges, and Franchiſes there- " unto belonging by Sea or Land: And the " ſaid *Walter Ralegh*, his Heirs and Aſſignes, " are hereby impower'd to build and fortify " on ſuch Lands, *&c.* at their Diſcretion, " any Statute againſt the departing or remain- " ing out of the Realm, or any other Statutes " to the contrary notwithſtanding. Virginia. The Dominion of all heathen Countries granted him, not poſſeſs'd by Chriſtians.

" And we do likewiſe impower the ſaid " *Walter Ralegh*, his Heirs and Aſſignes, to " take and lead in the ſaid Voyage, or to " inhabit there as many of our Subjects as " ſhall willingly accompany him or them, " with ſufficient Shipping and Neceſſaries " for their Tranſportation. So that they be " not reſtrain'd by us, or our Succeſſors.

" And further, the ſaid *Walter Ralegh*, " his Heirs and Aſſignes, ſhall hold, occupy, " and enjoy all ſuch Lands and Countries ſo " to be diſcover'd and poſſeſs'd, and the " Cities, Towns, Caſtles, and Villages in " the ſame, with the Royalties, Franchiſes, " and Juriſdictions thereof, with full Power " to diſpoſe of them in Fee ſimple, or other- " wiſe, to any of our Subjects, *reſerving to us*, " *our Heirs and Succeſſors, the fifth Part of* " *all the Gold and Silver Ore that ſhall be* " *acquir'd or gotten in ſuch Countries:* And " the ſame ſhall be holden of us, our Heirs " and Succeſſors by Homage, and the Pay- " ment of the ſaid fifth Part in lieu of all " Services. Rendering a Fifth of the Gold in lieu of all Services to the Crown.

" And moreover, We do by theſe Pre- " ſents grant, that the ſaid *Walter Ralegh*, " his Heirs and Aſſignes, may encounter,

Virginia. " expulſe, and reſiſt all ſuch Perſons as ſhall, " without his or their Licence, attempt to " inhabit in the ſaid Countries, or within two " hundred Leagues of the Places where they " ſhall abide or fix themſelves, *within the* " *Space of ſix Years next enſuing*; or who " ſhall attempt to annoy him or them by Sea " or Land, impowering the ſaid *Walter* " *Ralegh*, his Heirs and Aſſignes, to take " and ſurpriſe all ſuch Perſons, with their " Ships, Veſſels, Goods, and Furniture, as " without their Licence ſhall be found traf- " ficking in any Harbour, within the Limits " aforeſaid, and to detain and poſſeſs them " as lawful Prize.

" And we do further grant to the ſaid *Wal-* " *ter Ralegh*, his Heirs and Aſſignes, full " Power and Authority to correct, puniſh, " pardon, and govern, as well in Caſes capital " as criminal and civil, all ſuch of our Sub- " jects as ſhall adventure themſelves in the " ſaid Voyages, or inhabit ſuch Lands or " Countries, according to ſuch Laws and " Statutes as ſhall be eſtabliſh'd by him and " them for the better Government of the ſaid " People, ſo as ſuch Laws be as agreeable to " the Laws of *England* as may be, and be " not contrary to the Chriſtian Faith profeſs'd " in the Church of *England*, and ſo as the " ſaid People remain ſubject to the Crown " of *England*.

" Witneſs Ourſelf at *Weſtminſter*, 25 *March* " in the twenty-ſixth Year of the Queen, " *Anno* 1584.

While this Commiſſion was preparing, Mr. *Ralegh* formed a Society among his Friends and Acquaintance, who contributed large Sums, and provided two Ships to go upon this Diſcovery,

Discovery, with all manner of Necessaries for such an Enterprize: The Command of which being given to Captain *Philip Amidas* and Captain *Arthur Barlow*, they set sail from the West of *England* on the 27th of *April* 1584, and the 10th of *May* arriv'd at the *Canaries*, from whence they bent their Course to the *Caribbee Islands*, which they made on the 10th of *June*, keeping a more Southerly Course than they need to have done, as they themselves observ'd afterwards, apprehending that the Current sat so strong to the Northward on the Coast of *Florida* or *Virginia*, that there was no stemming it; and that Mistake made them go two or three thousand Miles out of their Way: However, they arriv'd at the Island of *Wokokon*, near the Coast of *Virginia*, or rather of *North-Carolina* (of which this Country is now reckon'd a Part) and took possession thereof in the Name of Queen *Elizabeth*, whom they proclaim'd rightful Queen and Soveraign of the same, to the Use of Mr. *Ralegh*, according to her Majesty's Grant. But they soon discover'd it to be but an Island of twenty Miles in Length, and six in Breadth, and lying in 34 Degrees odd Minutes North Latitude; the Land producing Cedars, Cypress, Pines, and vast Quantities of Grapes; nor was there any Want of Deer, Hares, Rabbets, and wild Fowl.

Virginia.

Two Ships sent to *Virginia*.

They arrive at the Island of *Wokokon*

After they had continu'd here three Days, an *Indian* came on Board them, and was entertain'd in the Ship, after which he catch'd some Fish and presented to the *English*; and the next Day *Granganimo*, the Brother of *Wingina*, King of *Wingandacoa* (as the neighbouring Continent was call'd) came down with forty or fifty of his People to the Sea-side.

Whereupon

Virginia.

Whereupon several *English* Officers went over to him, and were invited to sit down with him on the Mats that were spread for that Purpose, the Prince striking his Head and his Breast, and making a great many Signs to signify they were heartily welcome, as they apprehended. Whereupon they made him some small Presents, as they did to four of his People, who sat on the lower End of the same Mat; but the Prince took away the Things from his Men, intimating that they were his Servants, and that all Presents were to be made to him: And having taken Leave of the *English*, he return'd with more of his People two Days after, bringing Deer-Skins, Buff, and other Peltry to trade with them. Whereupon they shew'd *Granganimo* all their Merchandize, of which nothing pleas'd him so much as a bright Pewter Dish: He took it up, clap'd it upon his Breast, and having made a Hole in the Brim, hung it about his Neck, intimating it would be a good Shield against his Enemies Arrows. This Pewter Dish they exchang'd for twenty Skins, worth twenty Nobles, and a Copper Kettle for fifty Skins, worth as many Crowns. They offer'd also a very advantageous Exchange for their Axes, Hatchets, and Knives, and would have given any thing for their Swords, but the *English* would not part with them.

They traffick with the *Indians*

Mutual Civilities.

Two or three Days after, the King's Brother came on Board their Ships, and eat and drank with them; and seem'd to relish their Wine and Food very well; and some few Days after he brought his Wife and Daughter and several more of his Children with him. His Wife had good Features, but was not tall; she appear'd exceeding modest, and had a Cloke or Mantle of a Skin with the Furr next her Body,

Body, and another Piece of a Skin before her. About her Head she had a Coronet of white Coral, and in her Ears Pendants of Pearls about as big as Peas, hanging down to her Middle, and she had Bracelets on her Arms. Her Husband also wore a Coronet or Band of white Coral about his Head sometimes, but usually a Coronet of Copper, or some other shining Metal, which at first our Adventurers imagin'd to be Gold, but were mistaken. His Hair was cut short, but his Wife's was long. The rest of his Habit was like his Wife's. The other Women of the better Sort, and the Prince's Children, had several Pendants of shining Copper in their Ears. The Complexion of the People in general being tawny and their Hair black. The Prince's Wife was usually attended by forty or fifty Women to the Sea-side; but when she came on Board (as she did often) she left them on Shore, and brought only two or three with her. Virginia.

The King's Brother, they observ'd, was very just to his Engagements; for they frequently deliver'd him Merchandize upon his Word, and he ever came within the Day and deliver'd what he had promis'd for them. He sent them also every Day, as a Present, a Brace of Bucks, with Hares, Rabbets, and Fish the best in the World, together with several sorts of Fruits, such as Melons, Walnuts, Cucumbers, Gourds, Peas, and several kinds of Roots, as also Maiz, or *Indian* Corn.

Afterwards seven or eight of the *English* Officers went in their Boat up the River *Occam*, twenty Miles to the Northward, and came to an Island call'd *Roanoak*, where they were hospitably entertain'd by *Granganimo*'s Wife

Virginia. Wife in his Abſence. She preſſed them to ſtay on Shore all Night, and when they refus'd ſhe was much concern'd they ſhould be apprehenſive of any Danger, and ſent the Proviſion on Board their Boat which ſhe had provided for their Supper, with Mats for them to lie upon: And the Captain who wrote this Relation, it ſeems, was of opinion they might ſafely have continu'd on Shore; *for a more kind and loving People he thought there could not be in the World*, as he expreſs'd himſelf.

The *Virginians* an inoffenſive hoſpitable People.

Theſe *Indians* having never ſeen any *Europeans* before, were mightily taken with the Whiteneſs of their Skins, and took it as a great Favour if an *Engliſhman* would permit any of them to touch his Breaſt. They were amaz'd alſo at the Magnitude and Structure of their Ships, and at the Firing of a Muſket they trembled, having never ſeen any Fire-Arms before.

The *Engliſh* continu'd to trade with the *Indians* till they had diſpoſed of all the Goods they had brought, and loaded their Ships with Skins, Saſſafras and Cedar. They procur'd alſo ſome Pearls from them, and a little Tobacco, which they found the *Indians* very fond of. After which they parted with this People in a very friendly Manner, and return'd home to *England*, taking with them *Manteo* and *Wancheſe*, two *Indians*, who appear'd deſirous to embark for *England* with them; and having made a very profitable Voyage, they gave Mr. *Ralegh* and the reſt of their Employers ſuch a glorious Account of the Country as made them impatient till they had provided Ships for another Voyage. The Tobacco the Captains *Amidas* and *Barlow* brought home with them in this Voyage was the

The *Engliſh* return home.

the first that had been seen in *England*, and was soon cry'd up as a most valuable Plant, and a soveraign Remedy for almost every Malady. But to proceed. Virginia.

Mr. *Raleigh* and his Friends having fitted out a Fleet consisting of seven Ships, and given the Command of it to Sir *Edward Greenvile*, they set sail from *Plymouth*, on the 9th of *April* 1585, and made the *Canary Islands* on the 14th of the same Month, from whence they steer'd to the *Antilles*, which they made the 7th of *May*, and on the 12th came to an Anchor at the Island of *Porto Rico*, where they put their Men on Shore and took in fresh Water and Provisions; and setting sail again on the 29th of *May* they arriv'd at the Island of *Wokokon* on the 26th of *June*, where the Admiral's Ship was cast away going into the Harbour, but himself and the Crew saved. A second Voyage by Sir *Edward Greenvile*. They arrive at *Wokokon*.

The Admiral with several of his Officers, attended with a good Guard, went over to the Continent on the 11th of *July*, and came to the Town of *Secotan*, where they were hospitably entertain'd by the Natives; but some pilfering *Indian* having stol'n a Silver Cup from the *English*, which the Natives promis'd to restore and neglected to do it, the Admiral, in his Return, plunder'd one of their Towns and burnt it, with all the Corn growing in their Fields; at which the Country being incens'd, the Admiral set sail from the Island of *Wokokon* on the 21st of *July*, and arriv'd at Cape *Hatteras*, where *Granganimo*, Brother to King *Wingina*, came on Board the Fleet, and had a friendly Conference with the Admiral; after which the *English* landed on the Island of *Roanoak*, in the Mouth of *Albermarle* River. Here the Fleet remained about six Weeks, Make Discoveries on the Continent. Burn an *Indian* Town. Sail to the Island of *Roanoak*.

Virginia.

Weeks, during which Time Sir *Richard Greenvile* took a View of the neighbouring Continent again, and made Experiments of the Goodneſs of the Soil by ſeveral ſorts of Grain he ſow'd, which came up very kindly during his Stay there: And on the 25th of *Auguſt* he ſet ſail for *England*, leaving one hundred and eight Men upon the Iſland of *Roanoak*, under the Command of Captain *Ralph Lane*, with Directions to make further Diſcoveries, promiſing them ſuch Supplies and Re-inforcements as might enable them to ſubdue the neighbouring Continent.

A Colony of an hundred and eight Men left there.

Sir *Edward Greenvile* returns to *England* The *Engliſh* make Diſcoveries to the Northward.

Sir *Edward Greenvile* was no ſooner ſail'd for *England* but Mr. *Lane* made Preparations with his Boats (for I don't perceive one Ship was left him) to diſcover the Continent to the North and Weſt; and to the North he view'd the Coaſt from the Iſland of *Roanoak* almoſt to Cape *Henry*, at the Entrance of the Bay of *Cheſepeak*, being about an hundred and forty Miles, in which he met with no Oppoſition from the Natives; but afterwards communicating his Deſign of making a Diſcovery as far to the Weſtward up the River *Morotock*, or *Albermarle*, to his Friend King *Wingina*, the Soveraign of the oppoſite Continent, that Prince was alarmed and gave notice to the neighbouring Princes, his Allies, to be upon their guard; for the *Engliſh* intended nothing leſs, as he conceiv'd, than to make an entire Conqueſt of their Country, and to extirpate the Inhabitants, or to make them Slaves; and Orders were immediately diſpatch'd through the whole Country to carry off or deſtroy all their Corn and Proviſions, and to retire from the Banks of the River *Morotock* with their

Propoſe the doing the ſame to the Weſtward, which alarms the *Indians*.

their Wives and Families, that the *Engliſh* might find no Subſiſtance. Virginia.

However, King *Wingina*, or *Pamiſpan*, as he is ſometimes call'd, ſtill pretended great Friendſhip for the *Engliſh*, and promis'd Mr. *Lane* to furniſh him with Guides in this Expedition; and to incite him to undertake it told him, there were great Quantities of Gold to be found towards the Head of the River *Morotock*, about thirty or forty Days Journey to the Weſtward, and that ſome few Days March beyond the Head of that River, they would arrive at a great Ocean; for as the *Engliſh* had made *Wingina* acquainted with their intended Expedition, weakly imagining they ſhould be ſupported in the Enterprize by his Advice and Aſſiſtance, the penetrating *Indian* diſcerning that the principal Views of the *Engliſh* were to rob them of their Treaſures, to make a Conqueſt of the Country, and find a Paſſage to ſome Ocean they apprehended lay Weſt of *Virginia*, encourag'd Captain *Lane* to believe that their Expectations would not be diſappointed, but that they would find Gold or ſome Mineral like it in their Mountains, and arrive at the Ocean they mentioned within the Space of forty Days, where they would meet with Pearls of an uncommon Size; for he propoſed by ſuch Repreſentations to draw the *Engliſh* far up the River into the inland Country, where they would run a great Hazard of being famiſh'd before they could get back to *Roanoak*; their Fire-Arms being ſuch a Terror to the *Indian* Princes, that they deſpaired of overcoming theſe Invaders but by ſome ſuch Stratagem. A Confederacy form'd againſt the Colony.

Mr. *Lane* not imagining King *Wingina*, his *Indian* Friend, had Sagacity enough to

Virginia.

diſcover the Bottom of his Deſigns, but ſtill had the ſame Friendſhip for the *Engliſh* he had hitherto profeſs'd, enter'd upon the Expedition to the Weſtward with the Guides *Wingina* had lent him; and not doubting but he ſhould be able to purchaſe Corn and Fleſh of the Natives who inhabited the Banks of the River *Morotock*, he took little Proviſion with him; but to his great Surprize he found the whole Country abandon'd, and that there was no Food to be met with: And as he advanced he obſerved the Natives made Fires to give Notice of his Approach, and fled with all their Effects. So that our Adventurers, after they had rowed four Days up the River, were reduc'd to great Straits, having nothing left to ſubſiſt on but the Fleſh of two Maſtiff Dogs they kill'd. Whereupon they haſtened to the Mouth of the River again, to which they were by good Fortune carry'd down in much leſs Time than they went up, and arriv'd at the Iſland of *Roanoak* on *Eaſter-day*, 1586, where they found *Wingina* and his *Indians*, who ſtill made great Profeſſions of Friendſhip for the *Engliſh*, but immediately entered into another Conſpiracy with their Allies to deſtroy them: And the firſt Step *Wingina* took towards it was to prohibit the Natives to furniſh the *Engliſh* with Proviſions; for Want of which he was ſenſible they muſt divide themſelves into ſeveral Parties to procure Food by Hunting and Fiſhing. Then he appointed a general Rendezvous of the *Indians* near the Coaſt, ordering them on the 10th of *June*, in the Night-time, to embark in their Canoes and make a Deſcent on the Iſland of *Roanoak*; at which Inſtant he promiſed them to ſet fire to the Hutts of the *Engliſh*, and as they would be reduc'd to a ſmall

The Country deſtroy'd and abandon'd by the Natives.

The Party ſent on the Diſcovery in danger of being ſtarved.

A ſecond Conſpiracy againſt them.

small Number by their sending Detachments to the neighbouring Islands in search of Food, he did not doubt but the Natives would be able to knock those on the Head who remain'd at *Roanoak*, when they should run out of their Houses naked and unarm'd to avoid the Flames. But this Conspiracy being discover'd to Captain *Lane* by *Skyco*, the Son of *Menatonon*, an *Indian* Prince, with whom Captain *Lane* had contracted an intimate Friendship, the Captain resolved to be before-hand with *Wingina*, and on the last of *May* surprised him with several more of the *Indian* Chiefs and cut them in Pieces. And on the 8th of *June* following, Sir *Francis Drake* arriv'd on the Coast with a Fleet of Men of War under his Command, which had been employ'd in attacking and plundering the *Spanish* Towns and Harbours in *North-America*. Virginia. Admiral *Drake* arrives at *Roanoak*.

The Admiral being directed to give the Colony at *Roanoak* all the Assistance he could, agreed to leave with them a Ship and some Men and Provisions, to enable them to make further Discoveries on the Continent; but understanding in what ill Terms they were with the Natives, and that it would be impossible to establish a Colony there without a much greater Force now the *Indians* were become their Enemies, he order'd them to return to *England* the following *August*, which was no sooner agreed on than there arose a Storm, in which the whole Fleet was in danger of Shipwreck, and the Ship and Provisions the Admiral had given them was driven out to Sea and lost. Whereupon he thought fit to take Mr. *Lane* and his Company to *England* with him; and thus ended the first Attempt of Mr. *Ralegh* to settle a Colony on the *American* Coast. Takes up the Colony and carries them home.

It

Virginia.

A Ship with Provisions arrives.

It was but a very few Days after Sir *Francis Drake* had carry'd away Captain *Lane* and his Company from the Island of *Roanoak*, before a Ship arriv'd with Men, Ammunition, and Provisions for the Colony; but not finding any *European* there or in the adjacent Islands or Continent, they concluded the Colony had been destroy'd, and return'd to *England*.

Sir *Edward Greenvile* arrives with three Ships.

About a Fortnight after the last Ship had left the Island of *Roanoak*, Sir *Edward Greenvile* arriv'd there with three Ships, and a much more ample Supply of Ammunition and Provisions, and made all the Enquiry he was able after the Colony, but could hear nothing of them; however, he left fifteen Men, with Ammunition and Provision for two Years, and return'd to *England*.

Leaves fifteen Men at *Roanoak*.

Another Colony of 150 Men sent to *Roanoak* under Captain *White*.

In the Beginning of the Year 1587, Sir *Walter Ralegh* fitted out three Ships more, on Board of which he put one hundred and fifty Men, besides Mariners, giving the Command of them to Captain *John White*, whom he appointed Governor, but added twelve Assistants, incorporating them by the Name of *The Governor and Assistants of the City of* Ralegh *in* Virginia. This little Squadron set sail from *Portsmouth* on the 28th of *April*, 1587, and the 19th of *June* following made the *Caribbee Islands*, landing the Planters at the Island of *Santa Cruz* to refresh them and take in fresh Water: And re-imbarking their People three Days after, they set sail again and arriv'd at Cape *Fear* (in *Carolina*) on the 16th of *July*, where they were in great danger of being cast away; for they did not see the Cape till they were within a Cable's Length of it. From Cape *Fear* they stood to the Northward, and arriv'd at Cape *Hatteras*, near the Island

Virginia.

Iſland of *Roanoak*, on the 22d of *July*; whereupon they ſent a Party of Men to ſearch the Iſland of *Roanoak* for the fifteen Men Sir *Richard Greenvile* had left there the Year before, but could find none of them, nor any Signs of their having been there, unleſs the Bones of one Man they ſuppoſed had been kill'd. But at the North End of the Iſland they found the Fort which had been erected by Captain *Lane*, and the firſt Colony with ſeveral of their Houſes undemoliſh'd; the lower Rooms however were over-run with Melons, and Deer feeding on them.

None of the fifteen Men to be found.

Sir *Walter Ralegh* had order'd Captain *White* and the Colony not to fix themſelves at *Roanoak*, but to ſail Northward as far as the Bay of *Cheſepeak*, and erect a Town there; but this was oppos'd by *Ferdinando* the *Spaniſh* Pilot, to whoſe Care the Fleet was committed, under Pretence that it was too late in the Year to look out for another Port. Whereupon Governor *White* and the reſt of the Planters determin'd to ſtay at *Roanoak*, and to repair the Fort and Houſes they found there. They had not been on Shore a Week before Mr. *George How*, one of the Court of Aſſiſtants, ſtraggling a Mile or two from the Fort, was deſperately wounded with ſixteen Arrows by a Party of *Indians*, who had conceal'd themſelves in the Reeds and Flags by the Sea-ſide, and ſeeing him diſabled, they beat out his Brains with their wooden Swords and Clubs.

An *Engliſhman* ſurpris'd and kill'd by the *Indians*.

On the 30th of *July*, twenty Men, under the Command of Captain *Stafford*, were detach'd to the Iſland of *Croatan*, with *Manteo* the *Indian*, whoſe Mother and Relations dwelt in that Iſland, to enquire after the fifteen Men, and to renew their ancient Friendſhip with

A Detachment ſent to *Croatan*.

Virginia.

with the People of that Iſland. The Natives ſeem'd at firſt prepared to oppoſe Captain *Stafford*'s Landing; but upon his marching towards them with his Muſketeers they fled. Whereupon *Manteo* call'd to his Countrymen, telling them the *Engliſh* came as Friends; and the *Indians* knowing his Voice return'd, and throwing away their Bows and Arrows, bid the Captain welcome, and afterwards conducted him to their Town, entertaining him and his People in the beſt manner they could; but they deſir'd the *Engliſh* would give them ſome Badge or Mark whereby they might be diſtinguiſh'd from their *Indian* Enemies when they met with them out of the Iſland, for Want of which ſeveral of their Friends had been hurt and wounded the Year before by Captain *Lane* and his People. This Captain *Stafford* agreed to, and afterwards directed the *Croatans* to go over to the Continent and acquaint the Inhabitants of *Secotan*, *Pomeiok*, &c. that if they would accept of the Friendſhip of the *Engliſh*, and enter into an Alliance with them, all paſt Injuries ſhould be forgot, which the Chiefs of the *Croatans* promis'd to do, and to return within ſeven Days with the Anſwer of the *Weroances*, or Heads of thoſe Tribes (to which our Adventurers were pleas'd to give the Titles of *Kings*.)

Some Account of the fifteen *Engliſh* that were loſt.

They underſtood alſo from the Inhabitants of *Croatan*, that the fifteen Men Sir *Edward Greenvile* had left at *Roanoak* the Year before, had been ſurpris'd by the People of *Secotan* and ſome other *Indian* Powers, who coming over to the Iſland as Friends, took an Opportunity to ſet fire to their Houſes, and murder'd ſome of them as they run out unarm'd to avoid the Flames: However, eight or nine of

of the *Engliſh* eſcap'd to the Water-ſide, and went over in their Boat to a little Iſland on the Right-hand of Cape *Hatteras*; that the *Engliſh* ſome time after remov'd from the ſaid Iſland, but whither they went or what became of them they could not tell. Virginia.

Captain *Stafford* afterwards return'd, and acquainting Governor *White* with what he had done, it was reſolved to wait ſeven Days for the Anſwer of the *Weroances* of *Secotan*, *&c.* before they enter'd upon further Action. But the ſeven Days being expir'd, and none of the *Weroances* of *Secotan*, &c. appearing, nor any Anſwer to their Meſſage being brought by the Men of *Croatan*, as they had promis'd, the Governor took four and twenty Men with him, well arm'd, and went over to the Continent on the 8th of *Auguſt*, in the Evening, determining to be reveng'd on the People of *Secotan* and their Allies for driving the fifteen *Engliſh* from *Roanoak*, and murdering Mr. *Howe*: and having been inform'd where one of their principal Towns was, he attack'd it in the Night-time, with an Intent to deſtroy all the Men in it; but inſtead of his Enemies he found his Friends of *Croatan* poſſeſs'd of the Place, and hurt and wounded ſeveral of them before he diſcover'd his Miſtake; for the People of *Secotan*, after they had murder'd *Howe*, expecting this Viſit, had retir'd to the in-land Country with Precipitation, and left their Corn, Tobacco, and Fruits behind them, which the People of *Croatan* had been gathering in: And this was the Reaſon they did not return within the ſeven Days, as they had promiſed. They readily acknowledg'd therefore, that the Miſchief they had receiv'd was by Miſtake, and that they themſelves were

An Expedition againſt *Secotan*.

The *Indians* on the Sea-coaſt run away.

Virginia. the Occaſion of it by not keeping their Words.

Governor *White* being return'd to *Roanoak* on the 13th of *Auguſt*, *Manteo* the *Indian* was baptiz'd, and conſtituted Lord of the Iſland of *Roanoak*, and of the oppoſite Continent of *Deſamongapeak*, as Sir *Walter Ralegh* had order'd; and on the 18th of the ſame Month, Mrs. *Eleanor Dare*, Wife of Mr. *Ananias Dare*, one of the Court of Aſſiſtants, and Daughter of Governor *White*, was deliver'd of a Daughter, afterwards baptiz'd by the Name of *Virginia*. And now all the Planters Stores and Proviſions being landed, and the Ships ready to ſail, the Colony determin'd to ſend back two of the Court of Aſſiſtants to *England* to ſolicit for further Re-inforcements and Supplies, thoſe they had with them not being thought ſufficient to eſtabliſh a Colony on the Continent, as the *Indians* were moſt of them their profeſs'd Enemies. But at length it was thought moſt proper to depute Governor *White* himſelf, who had the greateſt Intereſt at the Court of *England*, and on whoſe Diligence and Application they could moſt rely: And with great Reluctancy he was prevail'd on to undertake this Office, apprehending his Reputation might ſuffer if he left the Colony and return'd to *England* before he had effected any thing.

Manteo baptiz'd, and made Governor of *Croatan*

Mrs. *Dare* deliver'd of her Daughter *Virginia*.

Governor *White* ſent to *England* for Supplies.

Captain *White* ſetting ſail for *England* arriv'd there at a time when the Nation was alarm'd with the Rumour of the intended *Spaniſh* Invaſion, which was attempted the following Summer, 1588, to oppoſe which the Queen and the whole Kingdom were employ'd, eſpecially *Drake*, *Ralegh*, and the reſt of the Sea Commanders. And as the State ſeem'd to be in imminent Danger, all leſſer Enterprizes were

White arrives in *England* a little before the *Spaniſh* Invaſion, in 1588.

were neglected or poſtpon'd, and conſequently Governor *White*'s Application in Behalf of the unhappy Colony he had left in *America* was very little attended to, inſomuch that he was not able to obtain Leave for any Ships to be ſent thither till the Beginning of the Year 1590: And then all that he could procure was an Order that three ſmall Men of War, which were going to cruize againſt the *Spaniards* in the *Weſt-Indies*, ſhould take ſome Re-inforcements and Proviſions on Board for the Colony at *Roanoak*; which Order they were far from obeying as they ought to have done, for they only took Governor *White* on Board, refuſing to carry either Planters or Proviſions thither. Sir *Walter Ralegh* either had not Intereſt enough at this time to cauſe his Orders to be obey'd, or was employ'd in Enterprizes wherein he expected to acquire more Wealth or Glory than in ſupporting his *Virginian* Colony, which occaſion'd his neglecting thoſe unfortunate People who had been induc'd to hazard their Lives and all that was dear to them in his Service.

Virginia.

Above two Years before he could get any Ships ſent to *Roanoak*.

Mr. *White* relates, that the Commanders of the Men of War with whom he went to *America*, having ſpent moſt of the Summer in cruizing among the *Spaniſh* Iſlands, did not arrive at *Roanoak* till the middle of *Auguſt*, 1590; and that ſearching the Iſland of *Roanoak* they found, by ſome Inſcriptions cut on the Trees and Beams of the Houſes, that the Colony was remov'd to the Iſland of *Croatan*. But before they remov'd they had buried their Cheſts, and great Part of their Effects, which the *Indians* afterwards dug up and ſpoil'd. Governor *White*, with much Importunity, procur'd the Conſent of the Captains of the

The Colony remov'd to *Croatan*.

Virginia.

Men of War to follow the Colony to *Croatan*. But the Weather growing tempeſtuous, they were in great danger of Shipwreck, and loſt moſt of their Anchors and Cables. Whereupon they ſail'd directly to *England*, and left the Colony to ſhift for themſelves; and whether they were famiſh'd, or cut in Pieces by the *Indians*, or periſh'd in attempting to get home by Sea, I could never learn, for they have not been heard of from that Day to this. This muſt render People exceeding cautious how they engage in ſuch Enterprizes on the Faith and Promiſes of Courtiers to ſupport them. The Safety of the State, a Project of more Importance, or the Proſpect of gaining greater Treaſures another way, are too often thought ſufficient Reaſons for abandoning our diſtreſſed Friends: And indeed, during the Year 1588, when the whole Kingdom was at ſtake, there might be ſome Colour for Sir *Walter*'s not ſending Re-inforcements to his Colony; but when that was over, and an Invaſion no longer fear'd, he might, one would have thought, have caſt an Eye towards a Company of Men who had run the greateſt Hazards, relying upon his Word and Honour to ſuſtain them. He might, ſurely, have re-inforc'd his Colony, or brought them back, conſidering the Figure he then made in the Court of *England* and the royal Navy: But I doubt, the Capture of the Galleons, the Plunder of *Cades*, and the Gold Mines of *Guiana*, which he went in ſearch of ſoon after, put the *Virginian* Colony too much out of his Head, after he found himſelf diſappointed in his principal View of poſſeſſing Mountains of Gold in *Virginia*.

Where they periſh'd, being abandon'd by Sir *Walter Ralegh*.

Sir

Virginia.

Sir *Walter* also seems chargeable with Levity as well as Avarice, since after he had obtain'd the Property of *Virginia* by Letters Patents from Queen *Elizabeth*, and had sent several Colonies thither, he became in a short time so regardless of that Country, or the Fate of those who had embark'd in that Enterprize in Confidence of being supported by him, that he went in search of other Gold Mines in *Guiana*, *the Magazine of all rich Metals* (as he terms it) and made some Voyages in Person thither, in which he was however miserably disappointed, and discover'd great Weakness and Credulity in the Accounts he has left behind him of that Country; for he was made to believe there was more Gold and precious Stones in *Guiana* than in *Mexico* and *Peru*, tho' it appears there is less of either there than in any Part of *Spanish America*. He was made to believe also, that one of the Nations of *Guiana* were a headless People, and that their Mouths were in the middle of their Breasts, and their Eyes in their Shoulders; of which he tells us, there was no doubt to be made, he having been assur'd of it from a Cloud of Witnesses. Whatever Prudence and Conduct Sir *Walter* may have discover'd on other Occasions, the Prospect of Gold Mines and Mountains of precious Stones he expected to find in *Guiana* seem to have disorder'd his Brain to a very great degree; for after repeated Disappointments, he never desisted his Search till at length it prov'd fatal to him. See *Hackluit*, Vol. II. p. 631, 634, 672, 692.

Sir *Walter* charg'd with Levity as well as Avarice.

Goes in search of Gold Mines at *Guiana*.

Purchase indeed relates, that while he was endeavouring in Person to discover the Gold Mines of *Guiana*, he did order some Vessels to enquire after his Colony at *Roanoak*, but was

Virginia. was deceiv'd by thoſe he employ'd, who never went the Voyage, except one *Mace*, who undertook it in the Year 1602, and was kill'd by the Natives on his going on Shore with ſeveral of his Crew, the reſt eſcaping with Difficulty.

Thus it appears but too evident, that Sir *Walter Ralegh*'s Expectations of diſcovering immenſe Treaſures in *Guiana* were in a great meaſure the Ruin of our firſt Attempts to ſettle Colonies in *Virginia*.

He ſeems in Raptures when he firſt viſited thoſe Shores, which he endeavours to make his Friends believe were all Gold and precious Stones.

I am aſſur'd, ſays Sir *Walter*, by ſuch *Spaniards* as have ſeen *Manoa*, the imperial City of *Guiana*, and which they (the *Spaniards*) call *El Dorado*, or the Golden City, that for the Greatneſs, the Riches, and excellent Situation, it exceeds all the World. All the Veſſels and Utenſils of the Emperor's Houſe are of Gold and Silver, with Statues of Gold, reſembling Giants. There are alſo the Figures of all Animals, Beaſts, Birds, and Fiſhes, as big as the Life. There is not any Vegetable but they have the Figure of it in Gold; and golden Billets lie pil'd up on Heaps, in Imitation of Fire-wood. And in another Place he relates, that there were Mountains of Diamonds in *Guiana*; which it is evident he believ'd himſelf, tho' in fact there was never any ſuch City as *Manoa*, or ſuch an Emperor as he mentions, and very little Gold to be met with in *Guiana*, as the *French* and *Dutch* will inform us, who have Settlements in that very Country, which he places between the Equator and 5 Degrees of North Latitude, or between the

the Rivers *Oronoque* and *Amazon*. However, his Expectations of finding it what he deſcribes was no doubt the Reaſon of his neglecting thoſe Colonies which he had ſent to *Virginia*: That he was conſcious of the Diſtreſs they muſt be reduc'd to appears by his telling the *Spaniards*, in one of the Voyages he made to *Guiana*, that he was bound for *Virginia*, to relieve the People he left there: And he informs us, that he had an Intention to have viſited them in his Return from *Guiana*, if the Winds had favour'd him. Virginia.

And it is not the moſt improbable Conjecture, that the Reaſon Queen *Elizabeth* did not aſſiſt him with her Ships and Forces to ſubdue this golden Country, as he had repreſented it to be, was, that he had deceiv'd her once before, by repreſenting *Virginia* as ſuch, which he now neglected. She had found his weak Side. She diſcerned his Avarice and Credulity, and did not think fit to hazard her Ships or Subjects till ſhe had better Proofs of the Reality of thoſe Treaſures. Theſe are ſome of the Reaſons that this Princeſs made no further Attempts to ſettle Colonies in *America* in her Reign, tho' ſhe liv'd a dozen Years or more after *White*'s laſt Expedition to *Virginia*. She was too wiſe a Princeſs to be deceiv'd twice by one Perſon in the ſame Caſe, and no private Adventurers would undertake to ſend Colonies thither after they ſaw ſuch a Body of Men abandon'd by their Employers.

As Sir *Walter* himſelf obſerves, it was the Hopes of Gold that was the principal and almoſt only Motive to theſe Undertakings. Our People had obſerv'd the Succeſs of the *Spaniards*, and imagin'd that Gold and Silver Mines were as common in *America* as Lead

Mines

Virginia.

Mines are in *Europe*. The firſt Adventurers, whether *Engliſh* or *Spaniſh*, had no View or Thought of finding any thing elſe in that new World but Gold and Silver, that would anſwer the Expence and Hazard of ſuch Voyages. They did not dream at that Time, that the *Virginian* Tobacco would be as profitable as a Gold Mine, as we found it afterwards to be, when we purchaſed with it moſt of the Merchandize of *Europe*, as with ready Money. Nor did they foreſee that extenſive and profitable Traffick that is now carry'd on between *Europe* and the Plantations; which is, in Reality, of greater Advantage to ſome Powers than the Mines of *Peru* and *Mexico* are to the *Spaniards*.

I have been the more particular in this Part of the Hiſtory relating to the firſt Attempts of the *Engliſh* to ſettle Colonies on the Coaſt of *Virginia*, becauſe I find Colonel *Beverley* and Mr. *Oldmixon*, who have written the Hiſtory of it, have omitted many material Facts, and do not ſeem to have enter'd into the real Motives of deſerting that Enterprize in the Reign of Queen *Elizabeth*.

Some Errors in Mr. *Oldmixon*'s Hiſtory.

Mr. *Oldmixon* alſo has committed ſome Miſtakes in the ſhort Relation he gives us; for firſt he tells us, that ſeveral of the Colony left at *Roanoak*, under the Command of Captain *Lane*, were cut off by the Natives, whereas there was not one of Captain *Lane*'s Men kill'd by them. He adds alſo, that they remain'd at *Roanoak* till *Auguſt*, 1586, when it appears Sir *Francis Drake* took them on Board in *June*, 1586, and carry'd them to *England*.

He makes Captain *White* to conſtitute a Government, conſiſting of a Governor and twelve

twelve Counſellors, whereas *White* himſelf was appointed Governor by Sir *Walter Ralegh*, and twelve Aſſiſtants given him before he left *England*, who were incorporated by the Name of *The Governor and Aſſiſtants of the City of* Ralegh *in* Virginia. Virginia.

He relates, that Mrs. *Dare*, who was deliver'd of the firſt Child on the Coaſt of *Virginia*, was the Daughter of Mr. *Ananias Dare*; but it ſeems ſhe was the Daughter of Governor *White*, and Wife of Mr. *Dare*, one of the Court of Aſſiſtants.

The Colony is likewiſe repreſented to be in great Diſtreſs before Governor *White* return'd to *England*, whereas he did not remain at *Roanoak* above two or three Months at moſt, returning to *England* the latter End of the Year 1587, in which time the Proviſions they carry'd with them could not be ſpent; and it appears to have been Autumn, when the Corn and Fruits were ripe, of which they receiv'd large Supplies from the Continent while Governor *White* was there, and had then Plenty of Fiſh upon the Coaſt. The Reaſon of ſending Governor *White* to *England* was to procure a Re-inforcement of Troops, and Supplies of Ammunition and Proviſions, without which it was foreſeen they could not eſtabliſh themſelves on the Continent, as they were then in a State of Hoſtility with the *Indians*, who would neither treat or traffick with them after they found the *Engliſh* intended to uſurp the Dominion of their Country, and had taken upon them to put to death ſome of their *Weroances*, or great Men.

Mr. *Oldmixon* relates alſo, that after two Years, Governor *White* procur'd three Ships to be fitted out with Men and Proviſions for

Virginia

the Colony at *Roanoak*; whereas according to Mr. *White*'s own Account of that Matter, all that he could procure of the Government was, to permit three Men of War, which were going to cruize in the *Spaniſh Weſt-Indies*, to call at *Roanoak*, and complains that they refus'd to take either Men or Proviſions on Board, and would not ſo much as let him carry a Servant with him.

Mr. *Oldmixon* adds, that the Misfortunes of this Colony were the Occaſion that no further Attempts were made to plant *Virginia* in this Reign; whereas it is agreed on all hands, that no-body knew what their Fate was till a great while afterwards. Sir *Walter* did not ſuppoſe the *Virginian* Colony was loſt in the Year 1594, for in that very Year he tells us, he had ſome Thoughts of calling on them in his Return from *Guiana*; and *Purchaſe* obſerves he ſent a Bark to enquire after them ſo late as the Year 1602.

An Enquiry by what Right Chriſtian Princes invade Pagan Countries.

Give me Leave, before I proceed further in this Hiſtory, to make ſome Reflections on that Authority Chriſtian Princes and States have heretofore aſſum'd and exercis'd (and which ſome ſtill claim) of invading and uſurping the Dominion of all infidel Nations, and treating the Natives as their Slaves and Vaſſals, and to conſider the Right they pretend to of excluding both Chriſtians and Pagans from all Countries whither they have ſent any Colonies.

The Pope ſeems firſt to have aſſum'd an Authority of diſpoſing of ſuch Countries as were in the Poſſeſſion of Infidels or Hereticks by Virtue of the Powers he pretends to derive from JESUS CHRIST: And in this all Chriſtian Princes appear to have acquieſced when he granted the Eaſt to the *Portugueſe*

and

and the Weſt to the *Spaniards*. No *European* Power pretended to diſturb either of thoſe Crowns in the Enjoyment of what they poſſeſs'd themſelves of in the heathen World for many Years. But the Pope's Power of tranſferring infidel Kingdoms to whom he pleaſed was no ſooner call'd in queſtion than every ſoveraign Prince in *Europe* aſſum'd the like Authority, and in all their Patents for Diſcovery granted their Subjects the Dominion and Property of every Pagan Country they ſhould invade, being induc'd to it, I preſume, by that *Turkiſh* Maxim, *That Dominion is founded in Grace*, or in other Words, *that Unbelievers could have no Right to this World any more than the next*. This ſeems to have been the univerſal Opinion both of Proteſtants and Papiſts when Queen *Elizabeth* granted Sir *Walter Raleigh* a Patent to ſubdue and govern thoſe Pagan Countries he ſhould diſcover; the Tenour of that Patent implying as much: Tho' at this Day we are as generally agreed, that Chriſtian Princes have nothing to do to invade or enſlave heathen Nations, but that Pagan Princes and States have as good a Right to their Countries, their Liberties and Poſſeſſions as the beſt and moſt powerful Chriſtian Monarchs have to their Dominions in this Part of the World; and conſequently all the Invaſions and Uſurpations that have been made upon the heathen World by Chriſtians were unjuſt, and the Conqueſt of them upon ſuch unjuſt Grounds could give none of them a Right to the Territories of thoſe Pagan Powers, or to the Properties of their Subjects, ſo long as there were any Heirs remaining to claim their reſpective Rights; which the *Spaniards*, *Portugueſe*, and *Dutch*, Virginia.

Virginia. ſeem to have been ſo conſcious of, that they in a manner extirpated the Nations they conquer'd to defeat all prior Claims, and thus by an Exceſs of Villany have, as they imagine, deriv'd a Right to themſelves by way of Occupancy: The Poſſeſſor being deem'd by ſome to have the beſt Right where none can ſhew a better, eſpecially after a long and uninterrupted Poſſeſſion. But this can never be found Doctrine ſurely in regard to Kingdoms, inaſmuch as it encourages wicked Uſurpers to be ſtill greater Villains in order to eſtabliſh themſelves. One would rather be inclined to believe that any neighbouring Nation had a Right to ſuch ruined and abdicated Kingdoms, and that it was incumbent on all other Powers to unite in driving the Uſurper from a Country he had thus barbarouſly invaded and deſtroy'd.

On the other hand it is ſaid, that *America* was but thinly inhabited in compariſon of this Part of the World, and there was Room enough both for them and us: That no Prince or private Man can have a Right to exclude all others from a Country too large for the preſent Poſſeſſors to enjoy or cultivate: And that by teaching the Natives Huſbandry and other Arts, we ſhew'd them the Way to live elegantly, and to make five hundred Acres of Land of more Value than twenty thouſand, which were before nothing but Bogs or Foreſts, and inhabited by wild Beaſts more than Men. It could never be the Deſign of the Creation that the Earth ſhould remain the Property of a few Huntſmen, unimprov'd and uncultivated, as *America* muſt have done if the *Europeans* had been excluded from ſending Colonies thither.

To

To this it is reply'd, that we ought not however to have intruded ourſelves by Force to the Prejudice of the original Inhabitants, but to have proceeded in the Method ſome of the Ancients did. We ought to have inſinuated ourſelves into their good Opinion, to have ſhewn them the Beauty and Excellence of the Chriſtian Religion, and the benevolent Principles it taught: We ought to have convinc'd them how beneficial the *European* Arts and Sciences would be to them and their Country, and then we ſhould not have fail'd of being receiv'd with Kindneſs, and even Veneration, as *Ceres* and *Bacchus* anciently were: We ſhould have been look'd upon as good Angels, or at leaſt as the great Benefactors of Mankind; and admitted and even invited to ſhare their Country with them for the ſake of the Improvements we might make in it. But admitting we had a Right to fix ourſelves in any vacant Parts of *America*, we certainly could have none to drive the Natives from the reſt, and inſult and tyrannize over them: And I have not obſerv'd any Inſtance from our firſt Attempts to ſettle Colonies there to this Day, where we have treated the Natives with Humanity and Benevolence, but they have been ready to reſign to us as much of their reſpective Countries as we could plant and cultivate, upon very moderate Conſiderations. Virginia.

And as for that other piece of Tyranny ſo generally practis'd by the *Spaniards*, *Dutch*, and *Portugueſe*, namely, the excluding the Natives from converſing or trafficking with any other People but their own, and the debarring all other Nations from entering their Ports, I cannot ſee the Juſtice of it. Every free People in this Part of the World have certainly the

Virginia.

the Liberty of trading with thoſe of another without aſking Leave of the *Spaniards* or the *Dutch*, notwithſtanding thoſe Powers may have Colonies in ſome Part of the ſame Continent or Iſlands. How their poſſeſſing a Town or two upon the *Indian* Coaſt can give them a Right of excluding all other *European* Nations from reſorting thither and trafficking with the Natives, or what Right any *European* Powers can have to lie with their Ships before the *Indian* Harbours, and to oppoſe and even murder the Natives for attempting to ſell the Produce of their Country to Foreigners, as the *Dutch* do in the *Eaſt-Indies*, and the *Spaniards* in *America*, is not eaſy to conceive.

Such Reflections as theſe are not only natural but unavoidable upon enquiring into the Original of our *American* Colonies.

I proceed now to the remaining Part of the *Virginian* Hiſtory; and tho' I cannot approve the Conduct of our own Nation in all Places, yet it will appear that we have uſed leſs Violence and Oppreſſion in the Settlements we have made than any other Nation, and in many Places have fairly contracted with the Inhabitants for what we have obtain'd, and given them what they eſteem'd a valuable Conſideration for the Lands they transfer'd to us.

The *Virginian* Hiſtory continu'd.

In the Year 1602, on the 26th of *March*, Captain *Gilbert* alſo ſet ſail from *Plymouth* with thirty-two Mariners and Landmen; the Landmen being commanded by Captain *Goſnold*, and deſign'd for a Colony. They arriv'd in that Part of *Virginia* now call'd *New-England*, being in 42 Degrees North Latitude, on the 14th of *May* following, where there came on Board them ſeveral of the Natives in a *European* Boat,

Boat, ſome of them alſo being cloathed like *Europeans*, the Boat and Cloaths having been given them by ſome Fiſhermen who frequented *Newfoundland*; but moſt of them had Mantles of Deer-ſkins. They afterwards ſail'd to the Southward, and came to a Promontory call'd Cape *Cod*, from the Shoals of Cod-fiſh they met with there, and that Name it retains to this Day. Here Captain *Goſnold* went on Shore, and found Peas, Strawberries, and other Fruits growing, and ſaw a great deal of good Timber. They ſail'd from this Point to the Southward, and arriv'd at another Promontory, which they call'd *Gilbert's Point*, the Name of the Captain of the Ship, the Shores appearing full of People. Some of them came on Board, and tho' they were peaceable enough, they were obſerv'd to be thieviſh. The *Engliſh* afterwards bending their Courſe to the South-Weſt, they came to an uninhabited Iſland in 41 Degrees, to which they gave the Name of *Martha's Vineyard*; and to another Iſland, a little further to the Southward, they gave the Name of *Elizabeth Iſland*, and theſe Iſlands are ſtill call'd by thoſe Names. Virginia.

Upon *Elizabeth Iſland*, lying about four Miles from the Continent, Captain *Goſnold* propos'd to ſettle with his little Colony, and to that End went on Shore there on the 28th of *May*. He found the Iſland cover'd with Timber and Underwood, among which were Oak, Aſh, Beech, Walnut, Hazel, Cedars, Cypreſs, and Saſſafras. And as to Fruits, here were Cherries, Vines, Gooſberries, Strawberries, Raſberries, Ground-nuts, and Peas, and alſo Variety of Roots and Sallad-Herbs. Here, in the middle of a freſh Water Lake, which ſurrounded a little rocky Iſland, containing

Virginia.

taining an Acre of Ground, they began to erect a Houſe and Fort capable of receiving twenty Men.

A Fort erected by the *Engliſh*

While this was doing, Captain *Goſnold* ſail'd over to the Continent, where he found a great many People, and was treated very courteouſly by them, every one making a Preſent of what he had about him, ſuch as Skins, Furrs, Tobacco, Chains and Necklaces of Copper, Shells, and the like, for which the *Engliſh* gave them ſome Toys, and return'd to their Fort.

Two or three Days afterwards, one of the *Indian* Chiefs, with fifty ſtout Men arm'd with Bows and Arrows, came over from the Continent to the Iſland in their Country Boats, and there being then but eight *Engliſhmen* on Shore, they ſtood upon their guard till the Natives gave them to underſtand they came in a friendly manner to viſit them. Whereupon they were invited to eat and drink, and ſat down to Dinner with the *Engliſh* on their Heels, expreſſing a great deal of Good-humour. The *Indians* made them another Viſit two or three Days after, when they behav'd themſelves very peaceably alſo; but one of the Natives having ſtoln a Shield, was made to return it, and they ſeem'd apprehenſive the *Engliſh* would revenge it; but finding them ſtill eaſy and ſociable, they were merry together, and parted again in a friendly manner. But as two of the *Engliſh* were ſtraggling by the Sea-ſide two Days after, to get Crabs, four *Indians* attack'd them, and wounded one of the *Engliſh* with an Arrow; whereupon the other *Engliſhman* diſarm'd the Aggreſſor, and the reſt run away. This ſeems to have been the only Quarrel there was between the *Engliſh* and the *Indians*

in

in this Voyage; however, the Colony which was design'd to be left there, who were twenty in Number, being apprehensive it would be difficult for them to subsist till Supplies and Re-inforcements came from *England*, if the Natives should prove their Enemies, especially as their Provisions, upon Examination, appear'd much shorter than was expected, it was resolved to abandon their little Fort in the Island, and return (all of them) to *England*. Having therefore taken on Board some Cedar and Sassafras, Beaver-skins, Deer-skins, black Fox-skins, and other Peltry they had receiv'd of the Natives for the Goods they carry'd thither, they set sail from the Island of *Elizabeth* on the 18th of *June*, arriving at *Exmouth* in *Devon*, on the 23d of *July* following, without having lost one Man: But they made no Attempt to find their unhappy Countrymen, who had been left at *Roanoak*, in the Year 1587.

Virginia.

The *English* abandon their Fort and return to *England*.

The next Year (1603) the Reverend Mr. *Hackluit*, Prebend of the Cathedral of *Bristol*, a Gentleman of an enterprizing Genius, who compiled the first Collection of Voyages that ever was publish'd in *English*, having convers'd with some of the last Adventurers, propos'd to the Merchants of *Bristol* the sending some Ships on the same Voyage; which they consented to, and he agreed to become an Adventurer with them: But as Sir *Walter Ralegh* had a Patent for the planting *Virginia*, it was thought proper to send Mr. *Hackluit* and some others to him to obtain his Leave for making the Voyage; which he readily granted under his Hand and Seal, together with all the Profits they should make by it, having no longer any Thoughts of planting that Country himself.

Mr. *Hackluit* and others licens'd to trade to *Virginia* by Sir *Walter Ralegh*.

Virginia.

Captain *Pringe*'s Voyage.

Being thus authoris'd to traffick to *Virginia*, our Adventurers fitted out a ſmall Veſſel, call'd the *Speedwell*, Burthen fifty Ton, and man'd with thirty Hands, of which *Martin Pringe*, an expert Mariner, was appointed Commander. They alſo ſent another ſmall Bark with him of twenty-ſix Ton, and carrying fourteen Hands; both which Veſſels being victual'd for eight Months, they put on Board a Cargo conſiſting of Cloathing both Linnen and Woollen, Hats, Shoes, Stockings, Carpenters Tools, Implements of Huſbandry and Gardening, Looking-glaſſes, Pins, Needles, Thread, and other Haberdaſhers Wares; Knives, Sciſſars, Fiſh-hooks, Bells, Beads, and other glittering Toys, which they apprehended moſt acceptable to the *Indians*; with which they ſet ſail from *King's-road*, near *Briſtol*, on the 20th of *March*, 1603-4; but being put back by contrary Winds, they run into *Milford-Haven*, where they lay till the 10th of *April* (in which Interval they heard of the Death of Queen *Elizabeth*, that happen'd on the 24th of *March* 1603-4) when ſetting ſail again, they arriv'd on the Coaſt of *Virginia* (now *New-England*) in 43 Degrees North Latitude; from whence they bent their Courſe South-Weſt till they came into 41 Degrees, and going on Shore there, cut a good Quantity of Saſſafras and carry'd it on Board; but leaſt they ſhould be ſurpris'd in the Woods by the Natives while they were at work, they erected a little Fort or Redoubt, wherein they left their Effects and four or five Men to guard them while the reſt were at work. The Natives came and traffick'd with the *Engliſh*, forty or fifty in a Company, and ſometimes upwards of an hundred, who eat and drank and were very merry with

Queen *Elizabeth* dies.

with our Adventurers, especially when they observ'd a Lad in their Company playing upon a Gittar. They would get round about him, and taking Hands, dance twenty or thirty in a Ring, after the *American* Manner. Our Adventurers observ'd, that the Natives were more afraid of two Mastiff Dogs they carry'd with them than of twenty Men; and when they design'd to get rid of their Company they let loose one of these Mastiffs; whereupon the Natives would shriek out and run away to the Woods; but 'tis probable this Usage, and the erecting a Fortification in their Country, made the *Indians* at length look upon the *English* as their Enemies; for our Adventurers inform us, that a Party of *Indians* came and surrounded their Fort a few Days after, when most of them were absent, and would probably have surpris'd it, if the Captain of the Ship had not fir'd two Guns and alarm'd the Workmen in the Woods, who thereupon return'd to the Relief of the Fort. The *Indians* pretended indeed they had no hostile Intentions. But our People never car'd to trust them afterwards. And the Day before the *English* embark'd, the Natives came down again in great Numbers and set fire to the Woods where they had cut the Sassafras; which, 'tis probable, was design'd to let the *English* know, they would preserve nothing in their Country which should invite such Guests to visit them again; for no doubt the great Guns and Fire-Arms had render'd the *English* very terrible to them as well as their Dogs. Virginia.

As to the Produce of the Soil, Captain *Pringe* made the same Observations as Captain *Gosnold* had done in the former Voyage, adding, that the Natives wore their Hair ty'd up and adorn'd

Virginia. with a great many Feathers, Flowers, and glittering Toys; and that the Men had nothing before their Nudities but a Piece of Skin of a Hand-breadth, which was faſten'd to their Girdles before and behind and brought between their Legs, and to theſe Girdles, which were made of Snake-ſkins, they alſo hung their Tobacco-Pouches. They ſaw but two of their Women, who wore Aprons made of Skins that reach'd down to their Knees, and had Mantles of Bear-ſkins, which they hung on one Shoulder. Their Boats were made of the Bark of the Birch-Tree, much of the Form of ours, but larger, and ſew'd together with Oſier-Twigs, the Seams being cover'd with a kind of Roſin or Turpentine of a very fragrant Smell: And theſe Veſſels were ſo exceeding light, that one of them, which would carry nine Men, did not weigh ſixty Pounds.

The latter End of *July*, our Adventurers loaded their leaſt Bark with Saſſafras, and ſent her home to *England*; and on the 9th of *Auguſt* they ſet ſail with their other Ship, having gotten a Cargo of Skins and Furrs, for which they truck'd away the Cloathing and Hard-ware they carry'd thither. They arriv'd at the *Soundings*, in the Chaps of the Channel, within five Weeks after they left the Coaſt of *Virginia*, where they met with contrary Winds, ſo that they did not come to *King's-road* till the 2d of *October*, 1603; the *Speedwell*, the biggeſt Ship, having been out ſix Months in this Voyage, and the leaſt Ship, call'd the *Diſcoverer*, five Months and an half.

Prince returns to England.

The Lords *Southampton* and *Arundel* ſend a Ship to *Virginia*.

In the Year 1605, two enterprizing Noblemen (*viz.*) *Henry* Earl of *Southampton*, and *Thomas* Lord *Arundel*, equip'd a Ship call'd the *Archangel*, and gave the Command of it

to

Virginia.

to Captain *George Weymouth*, who set sail from the *Downs* on the 31st of *March*, and came upon the Coast of *Virginia*, or rather *New-England*, on the 14th of *May* following, being then, as he found by Observation, in 43 Degrees of North Latitude. From whence he stood to the Southward, and arriv'd at a good Harbour, not far from the Mouth of *Hudson's River*, in 41 Degrees odd Minutes; and because they discover'd this Harbour on *Whitsunday*, they gave it the Name of *Pentecost Harbour*.

Capt. *Weymouth's* Voyage.

Here they traded with the Natives to great Advantage, getting forty Beaver-skins for the Value of five Shillings in Knives and other Cutlers Wares. Several of the *Indians* came on Board and were entertain'd, and some of the *English* went on Shore, and lay in the *Indian* Houses all Night; but always took that Caution to keep some of the Natives on Board as Hostages; and these People not using the like Caution, when the *English* had finish'd their Business they surpris'd three or four of the Natives and detain'd them on Board, resolving to carry them to *England*; of which their Friends being appris'd, used various Stratagems to make Reprisals by taking some of the *English*, but had no Opportunity; for our Adventurers never went on Shore afterwards but in a Body and well arm'd, nor would they venture far into the Country, having discover'd an Ambuscade of several hundred *Indians* that lay ready to intercept their Retreat; whereupon our Adventurers cry out mightily of the treacherous Disposition of the *Indians*, whereas they themselves were much more guilty of Treachery in surprising and running away with several of the Natives. It

Some of the *Indians* surpris'd and brought away by the *English*.

was

Virginia.

was natural to expect the *Indians* would revenge this piece of Violence if they could have met with an Opportunity, either upon themselves or the next *Europeans* that visited their Coast; and whenever they have upon the like Provocations endeavour'd to do themselves Justice, our People never fail to exclaim against the Treachery and Barbarity of the *Indians*, who have much more Reason to complain of the *Europeans* for their Invasions and Treachery than we have to exclaim against them for retaliating such Injuries.

There happen'd nothing more worth mentioning in this Voyage, but that our Adventurers having made a very good Market, set sail for *England* on *Sunday* the 16th of *June*, and made the Islands of *Scilly*, near the Land's End of *England*, on the 16th of *July* following.

Captain *Weymouth* returns to *England*.

The enterprizing and mercantile Part of the Nation being by this time sufficiently appriz'd that a very advantageous Commerce might be carry'd on with *North-America*, tho' they should not meet with Gold and Silver, as the *Spaniards* had done in that Part of the World, and Sir *Walter Ralegh*'s Patent being forfeited by his Attainder in the first Year of this Reign, several Gentlemen and Merchants petition'd his Majesty King *James* I. for a Patent to enable them to raise a joint Stock, in order to settle Colonies in *Virginia*, observing that this could never be done effectually but by a Company or Corporation.

King *James*'s Patent for planting *Virginia*.

Whereupon King *James*, by his Letters Patents, dated the 10th of *April*, 1606, reciting, That Sir *Thomas Gates* and Sir *George Summers*, Knights, *Richard Hackluit*, Clerk, Prebend of *Westminster*, *Edward Maria Wingfield*, *Thomas Hanham*, and *Ralegh Gilbert*, Esquires,

Esquires, *William Parker* and *George Popham*, Gentlemen, and divers others his loving Subjects, had petition'd him for Leave to send Colonies to *Virginia*, and such other Parts of *America* as either appertain'd to this Crown, or *which were not actually possess'd by any other Christian Prince or People*, and lying between 34 and 45 Degrees of Northern Latitude, and within an hundred Miles of the Sea-coast; and, for the speedy Accomplishment of the said Plantation, intended to divide themselves into two several Companies, the one consisting of the Adventurers of the City of *London*, who were desirous to fix themselves between the 34th and 41st Degrees of North Latitude; and the other, consisting of the Adventurers of the Cities of *Bristol* and *Exeter*, and the Town of *Plymouth*, who were desirous to settle between 38 and 45 Degrees on the Coast of *Virginia* in *America*. His Majesty, in order to promote so noble a Work, which might tend to the Glory of GOD by propagating the Christian Religion among the Infidels and Savages, and bring them to Humanity and Civility, did graciously accept their Petition: And for himself, his Heirs and Successors, did grant and agree, that the said Sir *Thomas Gates*, Sir *George Summers*, *Richard Hackluit*, and *Edward Maria Wingfield*, Adventurers of the City of *London*, and all others that should associate with them, should be call'd *the first Colony*, and might begin their first Plantation at any Place upon the said Coast of *Virginia* or *America*, where they should think fit, between 34 and 41 Degrees of Latitude; and should have all the Lands, Woods, Rivers, Ports, Fishings and Hereditaments whatsoever to the same belonging or appertaining, Virginia.

Virginia. appertaining, from the firſt Seat of their Plantation for fifty Miles either way along the Coaſt North and South, and an hundred Miles to the Weſtward within Land, with all the Iſlands over-againſt the ſaid Coaſt, for the Space of an hundred Miles at Sea, with all the Lands, Ports, Rivers, Harbours, Fiſhings and Mines thereto belonging or appertaining; and Liberty to build, plant, and fortify thereon: And that no other Subjects of this Crown ſhould be permitted to ſettle themſelves on the Lands to the Weſtward of this Colony without their Leave. And his Majeſty did grant to the aforeſaid *Thomas Hanham*, *Ralegh Gilbert*, *William Parker*, and *George Popham*, of the Cities of *Briſtol* and *Exeter*, and Town of *Plymouth*, in the County of *Devon*, and all others that ſhould aſſociate with them, that they ſhould be call'd *the ſecond Colony*, and might begin their firſt Plantation upon the ſaid Coaſt of *Virginia* or *America*, where they ſhould think fit, between 38 and 45 Degrees of Latitude, and enjoy all the Lands, Ports, Rivers, Fiſhings, and Hereditaments thereto belonging, with the like Extent of Land and Sea from the Seat of their Plantation, as was granted to the firſt Colony.

And it was provided, that the reſpective Colonies ſhould not plant within the Space of one hundred Miles of each other.

That each Company ſhould have a Council conſiſting of thirteen Perſons, in whom the Government ſhould be lodg'd; but limited by certain Articles under the Privy-Seal.

They were impower'd alſo to dig Mines in and beyond their reſpective Limits to the Weſtward, paying the Crown a Fifth of all Gold, and a Fifteenth of all Copper Ore they ſhould get.

get. They were alſo impower'd to ſeize all Ships that ſhould trade within their reſpective Limits, to coin Money, raiſe Forces for their Defence, &c. Virginia.

The *London* Adventurers, or the firſt Company, were no ſooner authoriz'd to ſend Colonies to *Virginia* by this Patent but they fitted out three Veſſels (*viz.*) one of an hundred Tons, another of forty, and a Pinnace of twenty Tons, in which were ſent an hundred and ten Landmen, with Arms, Ammunition, Tools and Implements for Building, Fortification and Tillage, Cloathing, Toys, and other Merchandize, to traffick with the *Indians*, and every thing proper for planting a Colony: The Command of this little Squadron being committed to Captain *Chriſtopher Newport*, an excellent Seaman, and one who was uſed to *Weſt-India* Voyages; but the Orders for the Government of the Colony, and the Names of the Members of the Council, who were to have the Adminiſtration of Affairs when they arriv'd in *Virginia*, were ſeal'd up, and directed not to be open'd till they went on Shore. Three Ships ſent out by the *London* Adventurers.

They ſet ſail from *London* on the 20th of *December*, 1606, but the Wind not being favourable, they made it the 5th of *January* before they reach'd the *Downs*, and were detain'd here and upon the Coaſt of *England* ſeveral Weeks more. After which they bent their Courſe to the *Canary Iſlands*, where they took in freſh Water, and then ſail'd to the *Caribbee Iſlands*, where they arriv'd on the 23d of *February*. They ſet their Men on Shore on ſeveral of theſe Iſlands, and remain'd amongſt them a Month and upwards, but chiefly on the Iſland of *Nevis*, where their

Virginia.

Men liv'd upon the Proviſions they found in the Iſland.

On the 3d of *April* they ſet ſail from *Nevis*, and on the 26th of the ſame Month diſcover'd the Land of *Virginia*, and the ſame Day were ſo fortunate as to enter the Bay of *Cheſepeak*, between the two Capes; the Southermoſt of which they nam'd Cape *Henry*, and the Northermoſt Cape *Charles*, in Compliment to the two Princes, the King's Sons; which Capes are about ſeven Leagues (not nine Leagues, as I ſaid by Miſtake in deſcribing their Situation) aſunder.

They could not poſſibly have found a better Place for their Purpoſe (tho' they were driven thither by a Storm, and hit upon it by Accident) there being more commodious Rivers and Harbours in this Bay than in any Part of *North-America*; the Want whereof, in a great meaſure, defeated Sir *Walter Ralegh*'s Attempts of ſettling Colonies on this Coaſt.

They land at Cape *Henry*, in 37 Degrees North Latitude.

They landed firſt on the South Side, near Cape *Henry*, which lies in 37 Degrees North Latitude, and found it a very fruitful and delightful Country; which while ſome of the Gentlemen were taking a View of with uncommon Pleaſure after the Fatigue of a tedious and tempeſtuous Voyage, they fell into an Ambuſcade of *Indians*, who ſhot a Shower of Arrows from the Woods and deſperately wounded two of the *Engliſh*; but upon the firing a Volley of ſmall Shot they took to their heels and fled, giving Notice by Fires from Place to Place of the Arrival of our Adventurers.

A Skirmiſh with the Natives.

The Water, upon ſounding the South Side of the Entrance of the Bay, being found ſo ſhallow

ſhallow that their Ships could not come near the Shore, it was reſolved to try the oppoſite Coaſt, where they found the Channel cloſe to the Land to be eight or ten Fathom deep. Whereupon they nam'd that Point of Land *Point Comfort*, and brought their Ships thither, having the Day before erected a Croſs at Cape *Henry*, and formally taken poſſeſſion of the Country in the Name of King *James* I.

Virginia.

Point Comfort.

Poſſeſſion taken of the Country.

At their Landing on Cape *Comfort*, five of the Natives appear'd at a diſtance, and ſeem'd very much afraid of the *Engliſh*, till Captain *Newport* made Signs of Peace and Friendſhip, when they laid down their Bows and Arrows, and came forwards with a great deal of Courage, inviting the *Engliſh* to their Town, which they pointed to, and call'd by the Name of *Kecoughtan*; and a Party of our Adventurers going thither with them were entertain'd very hoſpitably. They brought them alſo Pipes and Tobacco to ſmoak, and danced and ſung after the Manner of their Country, to divert their new Gueſts; of whom, however, they ſeem'd to have ſome Apprehenſions, for when the *Engliſh* firſt came to the Town, they ſet up a lamentable Howling, and laying their Faces to the Ground tore it up with their Nails; which the *Engliſh* then look'd upon as ſome religious Ceremony, but I am apt to think, by their Howling and Geſtures, they rather expreſs'd their Fears that thoſe Foreigners would one Day ſubdue their Country, being acquainted with the Execution they had done with their Fire-Arms in the firſt Encounter they had with their Countrymen on the other Side the Bay. The Entertainment being ended, Captain *Newport* made the Natives

The *Engliſh* entertain'd by the Natives.

Virginia. ſome Preſents of Beads and other Toys, and then return'd to his Ship.

As to the Colony, the firſt Buſineſs they enter'd upon after they landed was to open their Orders, where they found the following Gentlemen appointed of the Council (*viz.*) *Bartholomew Goſnold*, *Edward Wingfield*, *Chriſtopher Newport*, *John Smith*, *John Ratcliffe*, *John Martin*, and *George Kendall*, of whom *Wingfield* was choſen Preſident, but they thought fit to leave Captain *Smith* out of the Council; for it ſeems the reſt of the Gentlemen were ſo ſet againſt him that they had confin'd him Priſoner ever ſince their leaving *England*; which *Purchaſe* inſinuates was occaſion'd by their Envy at his ſuperior Talents, and becauſe the Company in *England* ſeem'd to rely more on his Skill and Experience than on any of the reſt: And it appears, that the Planters themſelves were ſo convinc'd of his Abilities afterwards, that they were oblig'd not only to admit him into their Council, but in a manner to reſign the Adminiſtration into his Hands, after they had by their perpetual Jarrs and weak Management almoſt ruin'd the Company's Affairs. To proceed.

On the 4th of *May*, Captain *Newport* had an Interview with one of their *Weroances*, or Kings, as the *Engliſh* call them, nam'd *Paſpahe*, and the Day following with *Rapahanna*, the *Weroance* or Chief of another Tribe, who invited the *Engliſh* to his Town, and treated them handſomely. The next three or four Days they ſail'd up the River *Powhaton*, to which they gave the Name of *James River*, in ſearch of a proper Place to ſettle the Colony; and having pitch'd upon one between forty and fifty

fifty Miles from the Mouth of the River, they landed all the Men there that were intended to be left in the Country, and began to erect a ſlight Fort, which they barricado'd with Trees, and built ſome few Huts, to which they gave the Name of *James Town*. Virginia.

The Place they choſe was a Peninſula, two Thirds thereof being encompaſs'd by the River *Powhaton*, and the other Third by a ſmall narrow River, capable however of receiving Veſſels of an hundred Tons almoſt as far as the main River, and at Spring Tides it over-flows and runs into the River *Powhaton*, making the Place a perfect Iſland, containing about two thouſand Acres of firm Land, beſides a great deal of marſhy Ground; which Situation was look'd upon as a great Security againſt the Attacks of the *Indians*. The Colony fix at *James Town*.

The very firſt Night the *Engliſh* landed, the Natives ſurrounded the Iſland with their Canoes; but finding our Adventurers upon their guard and ready to receive them they fled. On the 18th of *May*, the *Weroance Paſpahe*, in whoſe Country they were ſettled, came to their Quarters, attended by an hundred armed *Indians*; and obſerving the *Engliſh* ſtand to their Arms, would have had them laid them down; but the Colony apprehending he had ſome hoſtile Intentions refuſed, and one of his Company ſtealing a Hatchet, the Perſon from whom he took it ſtruck the Savage, and took it from him; whereupon his Countrymen were preparing to revenge the Affront, and the *Engliſh* to defend their Companion, when the *Weroance* ſuddenly roſe up and departed in a great Rage: However, he ſent a Buck to the Fort as a Preſent ſoon after, and pretended to be their Friend, offering them

Virginia. them as much of his Country as they desir'd for a Plantation; but I find the Colony remain'd jealous of this *Weroance*, suspecting he only waited for an Opportunity to surprise them.

On the 15th of *June*, 1607, their Fort was finish'd, being of a triangular Figure, with three Bastions and four or five Pieces of Artillery mounted on each. And now they thought themselves strong enough to resist all the Power of the Natives. They planted also two Pieces of Ground on the Peninsula with *Indian* Corn to serve them the succeeding Winter; and Captain *Newport*, on the 22d of *June*, 1607, return'd to *England*, leaving in the Colony one hundred and four effective Men, who soon began to find the Want of the Ships, from which they had hitherto purchased Bread, Flower, and strong Liquors, and remain'd in pretty good Health: But the Fruits of the Country being now the principal Part of their Food, and very little good Liquor stirring, many of the Colony fell sick of Fluxes and Fevers, and several dy'd, among whom were Captain *Gosnold*, one of the Council, and some other Gentlemen of Quality; and others were cut off by the Natives in the Woods, as they wander'd in search of Fruits or Game, and the rest were in a manner shut up and besieg'd in their Fort, where with continual Watching, bad Diet, and Want of good Lodging, they were reduc'd to a very miserable Condition, and by the Month of *September* had bury'd fifty of the Colony: The rest also had perish'd if the Natives had continu'd their Attacks; but it seems they were now become more pacifick, and consented to traffick with the *English* again, giving them

Captain *Newport* returns to *England*.

The Colony reduc'd to great Distress.

them Veniſon, Wild-fowl, Corn, and other Proviſions for their Merchandize. But every Man endeavouring to under-ſell his Neighbour, and the *Indians* imagining they had been cheated and impos'd upon therefore in their former Bargains, broke off all Commerce and Intercourſe with the Colony again, and they were a ſecond time reduc'd to a ſtarving Condition. Whereupon every one turn'd his Eyes upon Captain *Smith* as the only Man that could extricate them out of theſe Difficulties; and having depos'd their Preſident, they made choice of another, who committed the Conduct of their Affairs entirely to the Captain. This Gentleman having made ſome Addition to their Fortifications, to ſecure the Colony againſt the Attacks of the *Indians*, and made their Houſes and Lodgings more commodious, he took ſeven arm'd Men with him in his Boat, and went down the River in order to purchaſe Corn of the more diſtant Tribes of *Indians*, who refuſing alſo to ſell him any, he went to their Houſes and took their Corn away by Force. Whereupon three or four ſcore of the Savages aſſembled, and marching with their Idol carry'd before them charg'd the *Engliſh* with their Bows and Arrows. The Captain return'd their Compliment with a Volley of his Muſkets, loaden with Piſtol Shot. Whereupon they ran away, leaving their Idol behind them; and this brought them to a Capitulation, wherein they agreed, That upon reſtoring their God they would furniſh them with as much Corn as they wanted: And having loaded his Boat, he return'd in Triumph to the Fort, where he found the Preſident and ſome others had form'd a Deſign to abandon the Plantation, and return

Captain *Smith* goes in ſearch of Proviſions.

Takes it by Force from the Natives on their Refuſal to ſell him any.

A Deſign form'd to abandon the Fort.

Virginia.

return in the Pinnace to *England*: But having now Plenty of Corn, and abundance of Wild-fowl in the Rivers, as the Winter came on theſe Thoughts were laid aſide for the preſent; and Captain *Smith* proceeded on another Expedition to make Diſcoveries and bring in more Corn for the Colony, in which he had ſeveral ſucceſsful Encounters with the Forces of the *Weroance* of *Powhaton*; but going on Shore in a certain Creek with only two of his Men, he fell into an Ambuſcade of his Enemies, the two Men were kill'd, and himſelf falling into a Bog was taken Priſoner by *Apaconkanough*, *Powhaton*'s General, and being brought before that Prince, he order'd his Brains to be beaten out with Clubs, a uſual Execution among the Savages: However, his Life was ſav'd by the Interceſſion of *Pacahunta*, *Powhaton*'s Daughter, who was ſo enamour'd with the Captain that ſhe took him in her Arms, and vow'd ſhe would die with him if he ſuffer'd, and at length prevail'd upon her Father not only to give him his Life but his Liberty, and furniſh him with whatever he wanted; and the Captain returning to the Fort was frequently viſited by this Lady, who reveal'd to him the Stratagems of his Enemies, and defeated the Deſigns of the *Indians* againſt the Fort, tho' 'tis ſaid ſhe was not more than fourteen or fifteen Years of Age when ſhe tranſacted theſe Affairs.

Smith taken by the King of *Powhaton*.

His Life ſaved by *Pacahunta Powhaton*'s Daughter, and a Peace made between the Natives and the Colony.

In the mean time the Colony had laid another Plot to abandon the Plantation, which the Captain return'd juſt time enough to prevent; but upon his Arrival, *Powhaton*'s People bringing to the Fort great Plenty of Corn, Veniſon, wild Fowl, and all manner of Proviſions, all of them alter'd their Minds, and

and determin'd to wait till they receiv'd fresh Supplies from *Europe*: Nor was it long after Captain *Smith*'s Return to the Fort before Captain *Newport* came from *England* with Supplies of Men and Provisions; but the *Phenix*, commanded by Captain *Nelson*, which came in Company with him till they made the Land of *Virginia*, was driven back as far as the *Caribbee Islands* by stormy Weather, and did not arrive at *James-Town* till some time afterwards. Virginia. Captain *Newport* arrives.

Captain *Newport* had receiv'd Directions from the Company in *England* to endeavour to cultivate a Friendship with the *Indian* Princes, and particularly with *Powhaton*, who is stiled Emperor by our Adventurers, the rest paying him some kind of Homage, tho' all of them seem to have been Soveraigns in their respective Territories.

To *Powhaton*, therefore, the Company sent a Crown of gilded Copper, a Bed, and Chair of State, with Robes and other Ensigns of Majesty, ordering the Colony to see him solemnly crown'd, upon Condition that he would acknowledge the King of *Great-Britain* his Soveraign, without resigning however any Part of his Dominions to him or his Subjects, except what they should purchase of him or his Vassals for a valuable Consideration; which *Powhaton* agreeing to, Captain *Newport* and Captain *Smith* marched with three or four score more of the Colony to *Powhaton*'s Capital, where they crown'd and enthron'd the *Indian* Monarch in the best manner their Circumstances would admit of; and the other Princes, who attended his Coronation, had Presents made them, and promis'd also to acknowledge the King of *Great-Britain* their *Powhaton* crown'd.

Virginia. Soveraign, ſeveral of them accepting of Copper and other Merchandize for ſuch Parts of their reſpective Territories as they yielded to the *Engliſh*; but great Complaints were made by ſome againſt Captain *Newport*'s Conduct in paying too great a Submiſſion towards *Powhaton*, and ſuffering him to take all manner of *Engliſh* Merchandize at his own Price, whereby the Value of *Engliſh* Goods was ſunk; and would purchaſe nothing to any Advantage: And *Powhaton* and his vaſſal Princes became exceeding inſolent in their Demands. The Captain is alſo cenſur'd for embezzling the Proviſions he brought for the Uſe of the Colony, and ſelling thoſe very Proviſions the Company ſent them at extravagant Prices, making a perfect Tavern of his Ship for three or four Months he remained in the Country, and eating up Part of thoſe Stores with his Seamen which were deſign'd for the Supply of the Colony, whereby they were reduc'd to great ſtraits as ſoon as he was gone, and muſt have periſh'd if Captain *Smith* had not taken ſome extraordinary Meaſures for their Preſervation; for the Colony relying on the late Treaty of Alliance concluded with the *Indians*, imagin'd they ſhould be ſupply'd with Corn and Fleſh from the Country by way of Barter or Truck for their Goods, and had neglected to plant Corn, or lay up any Proviſions againſt a Time of Need; from which they were chiefly diverted by an Affair which they apprehended would make all their Fortunes at once, namely, the gathering the gilded Sand they found in a neighbouring Rivulet, which they took to be Gold, and were ſo confident of it that they loaded Captain *Newport*'s Ship home with it, tho'

The Colony ſend home common Sand for Gold Duſt.

it

Virginia.

it prov'd to their great Diſappointment common Duſt. But they ſent home alſo certain Specimens of Pitch, Tar, Glaſs, and Soap-Aſhes, which had been made by ſome *Poles* and *Germans* the Company hir'd to go to *Virginia* to promote theſe Manufactures; and theſe might have turn'd to good Account if the Colony had not been diverted from proceeding in them by other Purſuits.

Pitch, Tar, and Glaſs made in *Virginia*.

In the mean time Captain *Smith* obſerving to what low Circumſtances the Colony was reduc'd again, and that the *Indians* refus'd to ſell them Proviſions unleſs at extravagant Prices, he made ſeveral Incurſions into the Country, and compel'd the Natives to bring him in both Corn and Fleſh at the former Prices, repreſenting to the Council that the *Indians* were not to be dealt with in any other manner; they muſt either reſolve to abandon the Country or exert their Authority, and ſhew the *Indians* they were in a Condition to force Proviſions from them, if they were refus'd. This he look'd upon as the only way to preſerve the Colony from ſtarving, and to plant the Country to Advantage: And the Council not being able to find out any other Expedients for their Preſervation, thought fit to concur in the Captain's Meaſures. He afterwards proceeded to rebuild *James-Town*, which had been deſtroy'd by a Fire while he and Captain *Newport* were attending on *Powhaton*. He alſo cauſed a ſufficient Quantity of *Indian* Corn to be planted, to ſerve them the following Year: And the Ship *Phenix* arriving ſoon after with Proviſions from *Europe*, the Colony was now in no Want of any thing. Whereupon Captain *Smith* left the Council to take care of the Fort, and went with a Party upon

The *Engliſh* take Corn by Force from the Natives.

Virginia.

upon further Diſcoveries up the ſeveral Bays and Rivers; at which all the *Indian* Nations were greatly alarm'd, no longer doubting but the Deſign of the *Engliſh* was to make an entire Conqueſt of their Country, and therefore oppoſed him wherever they thought themſelves ſtrong enough, and laid Ambuſcades in the Woods and Bogs to cut off his Retreat; but he was ſo fortunate as to eſcape all their Stratagems, defeated ſeveral Bodies of *Indians*, and made *Paſpahe* and ſeveral more of their Chiefs Priſoners. In theſe Excurſions he diſcover'd the Country of the *Monacans*, that of the *Acomacks* on the Eaſtern Side of the Bay of *Cheſepeak*, the Nations of *Wicomoco* and *Patowmack*, and even the *Saſquehannah Indians* at the Head of the Bay of *Cheſepeak*; and ſo harraſs'd the Territories of the Emperor *Powhaton* that he and his vaſſal Princes were glad to make their Submiſſion, and to accept of ſuch a Peace as *Smith* was pleas'd to grant them.

Captain *Smith* makes further Diſcoveries.

Defeats ſeveral *Indian* Princes.

I ſhall not go about to juſtify this Conduct of *Smith* any further than it was neceſſary; but if we would *lay the Saddle upon the right Horſe*, the original Cauſe of theſe Outrages muſt be aſcrib'd either to the Company in *England*, who made ſo little Proviſion for the Colony that they had no way to ſubſiſt but by Rapine, or upon ſome of thoſe they employ'd, who took no care to plant Corn, or lay-in Proviſions at the proper Seaſons, whereby they were reduc'd to the wretched Circumſtances already mention'd: And the Roguery of the Captains and Agents employ'd to carry over Supplies to the Colony was ſtill another Occaſion of their Diſtreſs; for it ſeems they frequently apply'd ſuch Stores to their own Uſe,

Uſe, and what was worſe, ſold them to the Colony at extravagant Rates; and under all theſe Wants and Miſmanagements it was no wonder there were Diviſions amongſt them, which was another Reaſon they had no better Succeſs, and were forced to plunder the Country inſtead of planting it. Virginia.

Captain *Smith* obſerves, that two Thirds of the Adventurers came over with a View of finding every thing provided to their Hands without any Care or Labour of their own, and were ſubſiſted by the Labours of the other induſtrious Third, till he compell'd them all to take a Share in the Work, and then he ſoon planted Ground enough to ſubſiſt the Colony in Plenty: And by moderate Exerciſe and good Food ſaw them not only reſtor'd to their Healths, but in a very flouriſhing Condition; and as there was now no longer any Neceſſity of procuring Food from the *Indians* by Violence, they liv'd and traffick'd very amicably together; and the *Weroances* ſuffer'd him to make ſeveral other Settlements in their Country. When their Affairs were in this proſperous Situation, there arriv'd ſix or ſeven Ships from *England*, with between three and four hundred Planters, and ſuch ample Supplies of Ammunition and Proviſion as would have enabled the Colony to have made an entire Conqueſt of *Virginia*, or at leaſt to have procur'd what Terms they ſaw fit of the *Indians*, if they had been under any Command; but as things were manag'd, this Supply only brought the Affairs of the Colony into Confuſion.

For the Company in *England* imagining that the Diviſions among the Council in *Virginia*, in whom the Government there was lodg'd,

Virginia.

lodg'd, were the Occaſion of moſt of the Miſmanagements that had happen'd, procur'd a new Patent from King *James*, whereby they were impower'd to appoint a Governor, with a more ample Authority than they had by the preceding Patent, and prevail'd on the Lord *De la War* to accept of the Government of their new Colony, who thereupon made Sir *Thomas Gates*, Sir *George Summers*, and Captain *Newport* his Deputies till his Arrival: And theſe Gentlemen ſet ſail from *England* with nine Ships and five hundred Men in the Month of *May*, 1609. All the three Deputy Governors being embark'd in one Ship, were unfortunately caſt away on the Iſlands of *Bermudas*, being then uninhabited, but they and all their People eſcap'd to the Shore, where finding Plenty of Proviſions they took poſſeſſion of theſe Iſlands for the Crown of *England*; and from Sir *George Summers* they have been ever ſince call'd *The Summer Iſlands*.

Lord *De la War* appointed Governor.

Sir *George Summers* and the two other Deputies caſt away on the Iſlands of *Bermudas*.

In the mean time the reſt of their Fleet arriv'd ſafe in the Bay of *Cheſepeak*, with the Re-inforcement abovemention'd, where they found Captain *Smith* Preſident; but gave out they were not obliig'd to obey him, ſince there was another Commiſſion granted, which had ſuperſeded his, and they expected the Arrival of the Deputy Governors every Day.

Part of their Fleet arrive in *Virginia*.

However, Captain *Smith* kept them in tolerable Order while he remain'd amongſt them; and made ſome new Settlements, particularly at *Nanſamund* and the Falls of *James River*; but being unfortunately blown up with Gun-powder, as he was out upon Diſcovery, he was ſo mangled and wounded that he was forced to return to *England*; after which there happen'd ſuch Diviſions among the *Engliſh*

again

again that every thing was neglected which tended either to their Defence or Subſiſtance; and they were reduc'd by the Sword, Sickneſs or Famine, from five hundred to three or four ſcore, when Sir *Thomas Gates* and Sir *George Summers* arriv'd from *Bermudas* to their Relief, having built two Veſſels with ſuch Materials as they found upon that Iſland, to tranſport them and their People to *Virginia*; but meeting with nothing but Complaints from the Colony, and ſeeing little Likelihood of ſucceeding in the Plantation, as they wanted Proviſions and all other Neceſſaries, they agreed to return to *England* with the Colony; and were actually ſailing out of the Bay when the Lord *De la War* arriv'd from *England*, and oblig'd them all to go back to *James-Town*. Virginia.

The Lord *De la War*, upon his Arrival, reprimanded the Planters for their Diviſions, Idleneſs, and ill Conduct, which had occaſion'd their Misfortunes, adviſing them to reform, or he ſhould be compell'd to draw the Sword of Juſtice and cut off the Delinquents, declaring, however, he had much rather draw his Sword in their Defence and Protection; and telling them, for their Encouragement, that he had brought them ſuch Plenty of Proviſions that they would be in no danger of wanting for the future, if they were not wanting to themſelves in providing ſuch Things as the Country produced. Then he proceeded to conſtitute a Council, conſiſting of Sir *Thomas Gates*, his Lieutenant General, Sir *George Summers*, his Admiral, the Honourable *George Percy*, one of his Captains, Sir *Ferdinando Weinman*, his Maſter of the Ordinance, and *Chriſtopher Newport*, his Vice-Admiral. Theſe

and

Virginia.

and the reſt of his Officers having taken the Oaths to the Government, and entered on their ſeveral Employments, his next Care was to furniſh his People with Fleſh; for notwithſtanding there were not leſs than five or ſix hundred Hogs in the Plantation when Captain *Smith* went to *England*, there was not one left alive at this time: They had been either eaten by the Colony or kill'd by the *Indians*, who, to diſtreſs them, had alſo driven all the Deer and other Game out of the Country; and the *Engliſh* were ſo ill provided with Nets, that tho' there was Plenty of Fiſh in their Rivers, they knew not how to take them.

The Company had ſent over a Supply of Cloathing, Biſcuit, Flower, Beer, and other Liquors; but taking it for granted that they had Hogs, Veniſon, Fowl and Fiſh enough in the Country, had made no Proviſion of Fleſh. Whereupon Sir *George Summers*, the Admiral, was diſpatch'd to *Bermudas* to bring over live Hogs from thence; for theſe Sir *George* found Plenty of in that Iſland when he was caſt away there, tho' there were no People upon it. The Governor alſo ſet ſome to fiſhing within the Bay, and others without, where there were Shoals of Cod-fiſh, but their Nets and Tackle were ſo defective that they could not catch many; whereupon he endeavour'd to ſettle a Correſpondence with *Powhaton* and other *Indian* Princes, that he might purchaſe Fleſh of them for *Engliſh* Goods, and in ſome of theſe Negotiations he ſucceeded, particularly with the King of *Patowmack*, one of the moſt potent of the *Indian* Princes. But notwithſtanding he repreſented to *Powhaton* that he had already promiſed to acknowledge the King of *England* for his Soveraign, accepted

of

of a Crown and Scepter, and other Enſigns of Royalty from him, with Preſents of great Value, this Prince would give him no other Anſwer, but that he expected the *Engliſh* ſhould depart his Country, or confine themſelves within the Limits of *James-Town* Iſland, and not range through every Part of the Country, as they continued to do, only with a View of ſubduing it, as he apprehended; threatning to iſſue his Orders to cut them off and deſtroy them, if ever they were found without the Limits he preſcrib'd them; and commanded the Meſſengers his Lordſhip ſent to him not to ſee his Face again unleſs they brought him a Coach and ſix Horſes, for in theſe he had been inform'd by ſome *Indians*, who had been in *England*, their great *Weroances* were drawn in. Virginia. *Powhaton* threatens the *Engliſh*

The Lord *De la War* finding he was to expect no Friendſhip from *Powhaton*, determined he ſhould fear him: Having taken an *Indian* Priſoner, therefore, he cut off his Right-hand, and ſent him to his Maſter *Powhaton*, letting him know that he would ſerve all his Subjects in that manner, and burn all the Corn in his Country (which was ripe at this time) if he did not forbear all Acts of Hoſtility for the future; which had ſo good an Effect that the Colony lived in Peace and Plenty for ſome time, every Day making freſh Diſcoveries, and forming new Alliances with ſome *Indian* Princes. And thus the Company's Affairs being happily eſtabliſh'd again by the Conduct of the Lord *De la War*, Sir *Thomas Gates* was ſent to *England* to give an Account of the State of the Colony, the Ships being freighted home with Cedar, black Walnut, and Iron Ore; which Returns ap- Lord *De la War* brings him to Terms.

Virginia.

pear'd ſo inconſiderable, that the Company were in ſuſpenſe whether they ſhould not ſend for the Lord *De la War* and the Colony home: However, they firſt deſir'd Sir *Thomas Gates*'s Opinion upon it, who told them, that theſe were not the only Returns they were to expect; that if they would ſend over Men who underſtood how to make Pitch and Tar, and plant Hemp and Flax, they might furniſh *England* with all manner of naval Stores; and that it would be very eaſy alſo to ſet up a Manufacture of Silk, the Country abounding in Mulberry-Trees as well as Silk-Graſs; that the Soil was exceeding fruitful, producing Corn, Graſs, Grapes, and other Fruits in abundance; that *European* Cattle and Poultry multiply'd prodigiouſly, and there was great Plenty of Veniſon, Fiſh and Fowl, which they could never want when they ſhould be provided with Boats, Nets, and Engines to take them: The Company need then be at very little Charge to ſupport the Colony. On the contrary, they would in a ſhort time meet with Returns anſwerable to their Expectations. Whereupon the Company reſolv'd to proceed with Alacrity to improve their *Virginian* Plantation; in which Reſolution they were confirm'd by the Lord *De la War*, who return'd to *England* about this time (*Anno* 1610.) for the Recovery of his Health.

Naval Stores to be had in *Virginia*. And Silk.

Lord *De la War* returns to *England*.

He acquainted the Company, that he had no Intention to abandon their Service; but as ſoon as his Health was reſtor'd he would return to his Government again. In the mean time he had left Mr. *George Percy* his Deputy Governor, a Man of great Honour and Reſolution, in whoſe Conduct they might confide till Sir *Thomas Gates* ſhould return thither: That

That Captain *Argoll* had settled a Trade with several of the *Indian* Chiefs; and for the Defence of the Colony he had erected three Forts more than he found there, *viz.* two near *Point Comfort*, and a third at the Falls of *James River*, adjoining to which were large Fields he had ordered to be planted with *Indian* Vines, and Roots; so that there was no Danger of the Colony's being in any Distress for the future, if they were not wanting to themselves. Virginia.

On the 10th of *May*, 1611, Sir *Thomas Dale* arriv'd at *Virginia* with three Ships and Supplies of Men, Cattle, and Provisions, and immediately set his People to work to plant Corn (which the Colony had neglected, tho' it was late in the Spring) and had a tolerable good Crop. *Dale* carries over a Supply.

Sir *Thomas Gates* arriv'd in *August* following with six Ships, three hundred and fifty Planters, and a proportionable Supply of Cattle, Ammunition and Provisions, taking the Government upon him as Deputy to the Lord *De la War*, who still remain'd sick in *England*. This Gentleman planted and fortify'd *Henrico* County, to the Westward of *James-Town*, and made Lines, defended with Palisadoes, to preserve their Cattle from the *Indians*; for still King *Powhaton* refused the Alliance of the *English*, and harrass'd and plunder'd their Plantations which lay expos'd. Whereupon Captain *Argoll* took an Opportunity of surprising his celebrated Daughter, the Princess *Pocahunta*, in the Year 1612, and carry'd her to *James-Town*, where she was treated however according to her Quality, and the eminent Services she had done the *English*: And still continuing her good Offices, the *Gates*'s Administration.

Virginia. King her Father was, after two Years, reconciled to the Colony, and consented to her marrying Mr. *John Rolf*, an *English* Gentleman. And had more of our People intermarry'd with the *Indians* I am inclin'd to think it would have been the most effectual Way of establishing the Colony in Peace; for *Powhaton* is said to look upon this Match as a sincere Mark of the Friendship of the *English*. But our Adventurers appear'd unaccountably squeamish in this Particular. They seemed to despise and abhor such Alliances, which rendered the Natives averse to us afterwards. Whereas, if the *English* had continu'd to intermarry with them, they would in time have became one Nation, and those Massacres and other Calamities that ensu'd had infallibly been avoided. The Natives probably would have embrac'd the Christian Religion voluntarily, as this Princess did. But to proceed.

The Princess *Pacahunta* marry'd to Mr. *Rolf*.

A Peace between the *English* and King *Powhaton*.

A Peace being concluded with King *Powhaton* upon this Marriage, in the Year 1613, the *English* and his Subjects lived in a good Understanding, and traffick'd together for some time: And the *Chickahommony Indians*, another Tribe, by their Example also concluded a Peace with the Colony, which now appear'd in a very flourishing Condition: And in the Year 1616, Sir *Thomas Dale* leaving the Administration of the Government to Captain *Yardly*, return'd to *England*, carrying Mr. *Rolf* and the Princess his Wife with him, where King *James*'s Queen and Court paid her the same Honours that were due to a *European* Lady of the same Quality, after they were inform'd by Captain *Smith* what Services she had done the *English* Nation, and particularly how she had saved the Captain's

The Princess *Pacahunta* comes to *England*.

Life

Life when his Head was upon the Block. But it seems before this Princess marry'd Mr. *Rolf*, she had been given to understand that Captain *Smith* was dead; for he was the first Man she had set her Affections upon, and I make no doubt he had promised to marry her when he was in her Father's Court; for when he came to wait upon her, on her Arrival in *England*, she appear'd surprised, turned away from him with the utmost Scorn and Resentment, and it was some Hours before she would be prevail'd with to speak to him. She could not believe any Man would have deceiv'd her for whom she had done so much, and run so many Hazards; and when she did vouchsafe to hear his Excuses, she still reproach'd him with Ingratitude. In all her Behaviour, 'tis said, she behav'd herself with great Decency and suitable to her Quality, and mighty Expectations there were of the future Services she would have done the *English* upon her Return to her own Country; but she was taken ill at *Gravesend*, as she was about to embark for *Virginia*, and dy'd in that Town a very devout Christian, 'tis said, leaving one only Son, named *Thomas Rolf*, whose Posterity now flourish in *Virginia*, and enjoy Lands descended to them as Heirs of the Princess *Pacahunta*. But to return. Virginia.

Captain *Yardly*, during his Administration, first promoted the planting of Tobacco, finding there began to be a great Demand for it in *Europe*, which brought an immediate Gain to the Company; but 'tis said he did not so much regard the Buildings and Fortifications, and planting of Corn, as he ought to have done. On the contrary, he entered into the greatest Intimacy with the *Indians*, employ'd them Captain *Yardly* first encourages the planting Tobacco.

Virginia. them in hunting and fishing for the Colony, and they lived together very sociable in his Time. Captain *Argoll*, who succeeded him, did not approve of this Familiarity and Confidence in the Natives, but repair'd the Forts that were running to decay, and affected to render himself more formidable to the *Indians* than his Predecessor. Both these Gentlemen seem to have been but Deputies to the Lord *De la War*; for in the Year 1618, that Nobleman embark'd again for his Government of *Virginia* with a Re-inforcement of two hundred Men, and Supplies for the Colony; but meeting with contrary Winds, which rendered the Passage more tedious than usual, the Ship's Company became sickly, and his Lordship dy'd in the Voyage, with thirty or forty Planters more that embark'd with him. Whereupon Mr. *Argoll* was continued some time longer in the Government, which he spent in making Discoveries on the Coast of *New-England* and *New-Scotland*, or *Acadia*; and finding the *French* had made some Settlements there he expell'd them from thence, the Crown of *England* claiming those Countries as Parts of *Virginia*. This Year (1618) also died the famous *Powhaton*, being succeeded in his Empire by his Brother *Itopatin*; but he being a weak Prince, *Oppaconcanough*, King of *Chickahommony*, afterwards usurp'd the Empire, reducing several more of the neighbouring *Weroances* under his Dominion; however, both *Oppaconcanough* and *Itopatin* renewed the Peace with the *English* on the Death of *Powhaton*.

Argoll Governor.

Lord *De la War* dies.

The *French* driven from *New-England*.

Powhaton dies.

Sir *George Yardly*'s second Government.

Governor *Argoll*, being recall'd from *Virginia* soon after his Expedition to the Northward, left the Administration in the Hands of

of Captain *Powel*, to whom Captain *Yardly* succeeded, having been knighted by King *James*. He carried over with him a Re-inforcement of twelve hundred Men, and proportionable Supplies of Cattle and Proviſions. I preſume the Company were by this time ſenſible of the Advantage of planting Tobacco; and as Sir *George Yardly* firſt put them upon it, thought him the propereſt Perſon to encourage that Plantation. Virginia.

Sir *George*, upon his Arrival, apply'd himſelf to render the Government as like that of *England* as poſſible. He increaſed the Number of the Council, intending they ſhould ſupply the Place of a Houſe of Lords, and ſummoned an Aſſembly of Burgeſſes from every Settlement in the Country. The firſt Aſſembly or Parliament ſat at *James-Town* in *Virginia*, in *May*, 1620, and then compoſed but one Houſe, tho' they afterwards ſeparated, and ſat as the Parliament do in *England* in two Houſes; and Mr. *Beverley* inſinuates, that the Views of the upper and lower Houſe have been different ever ſince. The Government ſettled as in *England*. The firſt Aſſembly, 1620.

Negroes were firſt brought over to *Virginia* this Year in a *Dutch* Ship, and proving extremely ſerviceable in planting Tobacco, more were imported annually from *Guinea*: And now Sir *George* proceeded to parcel out the Lands, allotting to the Company a certain Proportion in ſeveral Diſtricts for the Support of the Government; other Portions were allotted for the Uſe of a College and Schools intended to be erected. Glebes were aſſign'd in every Pariſh for the Support of the Miniſters, and the Planters had their reſpective Shares allotted them; whereupon, 'tis ſaid, they became exceeding induſtrious, and began to vye with *Negroes* firſt imported. The Lands parcel'd out among the Planters.

Virginia.

with each other in Planting, Building, and other Improvements; and Encouragements were offered to all such as should come and settle in *Virginia*, and increase the Colony. Whereupon fresh Supplies of Men and Cattle continually arriv'd, and new Settlements were daily made in all Parts of the Country. Salt-works were set up at Cape *Charles*, on the Eastern Shore, and an Iron-work at *Falling-Creek* in *James River*, where they found the Iron Ore good, and had near brought that Work to Perfection. At this time, says my Author, (Mr. *Beverley*) the Fame of the Riches and Plenty in which the *English* liv'd at *Virginia* was exceeding great, and ascribes their Happiness in a great measure to the prudent Conduct of Sir *George Yardly*, but condemns him however for neglecting the Fortifications; and indeed if he took upon him to parcel out the Lands of the *Indians* among the *English* without their Leave, and gave them no valuable Consideration for them, it could not be expected the Natives should long remain their Friends; however, during his Government, I meet with no Complaints or Misunderstandings on either Side, which makes me of opinion these Allotments were made with the Consent of the *Indians*; and if the succeeding Governor had behaved himself in the like friendly manner towards the Natives, possibly none of those Heart-burnings or Massacres which follow'd had ever happen'd.

The Colony flourishes.

Wyat's Government.

Sir *George Yardly*'s Government of three Years expiring in the Year 1621, he was succeeded by Sir *Francis Wyat*, a young Gentleman, who arriv'd in *James-Town* in the Month of *October*, with twelve hundred Planters; and the same Year fifty Men more were

were carry'd thither by Captain *Newport*, whom he planted in a Part of the Country to which he gave his own Name. But there was, it seems, such Quantities of Tobacco exported from *Virginia* at this time, that Orders were sent from *England*, that no Planters should be permitted to send over more than an hundred Weight of Tobacco in one Year. They were advised to apply themselves to the making of Pot-ash and other Manufactures; to plant more Corn, and improve their Stocks of Cattle instead of running too much upon Tobacco. Virginia.

In the Year 1622, according to Colonel *Beverley*, inferiour Courts were first instituted by the General-Assembly under the Name of Country Courts, for the Trial of civil and criminal Causes, reserving an Appeal to the Governor and Council, which remain'd still the supreme Court of Judicature. The Colonel proceeds to give us an Account of the Massacre which happen'd the same Year, wherein he observes, that the great Increase of the Planters, and the long Quiet the *English* had enjoy'd among the *Indians* since the Marriage of the Princess *Pacahunta* with Mr. *Rolf*, had lull'd all Men into a fatal Security. The *English* became every where familiar with the *Indians*, eating, drinking and sleeping amongst them; by which means they were perfectly acquainted with all our *English* Strength and the Use of our Arms, knowing at all times when and where to find our People, whether at home or in the Woods, in Bodies or dispers'd, in Condition of Defence or indefenceable. This exposing of their Weakness gave them Occasion to think more contemptibly of the *English* than otherwise perhaps they would have done, for Courts of Justice instituted.

Virginia. which Reaſon they became more hardy to attempt any thing againſt them.

Oppaconcanough's Plot to maſſacre the *Engliſh.*

Thus, upon the Loſs of one of their leading Men (a War-Captain, as they call him) who was ſuppoſed to be juſtly put to death however, their King *Oppaconcanough* appear'd enrag'd, and in Revenge laid the Plot of a general Maſſacre of the *Engliſh*, to be executed on the 22d of *March*, 1622, a little before Noon, at a time when our Men were all at work abroad in their Plantations, diſpers'd and unarm'd. This Conſpiracy was to have taken Effect upon all the ſeveral Settlements at one and the ſame Inſtant, except on the *Eaſtern* Shore, whither this Plot did not reach. The *Indians* had been made ſo familiar with the *Engliſh* as to borrow their Boats and Canoes to croſs the River when they went to conſult with their neighbouring *Indians* upon this execrable Conſpiracy; and to colour their Deſign the better, they brought Preſents of Deer, Turkies, Fiſh, and Fruits to the *Engliſh* the Evening before. The very Morning of the Maſſacre they came freely and unarm'd among them, eating with them, and behaving themſelves with the ſame Freedom and Friendſhip as formerly till the very Minute they were to put their Plot in Execution; then they fell to work all at once, every where ſurpriſing and knocking the *Engliſh* on the head, ſome with their Hatchets, which they call *Tommahauks*, others with the Hoes and Axes of the *Engliſh* themſelves, ſhooting at thoſe who eſcap'd the Reach of their Hands; ſparing neither Age nor Sex, but deſtroying Man, Woman, and Child, according to their cruel Way of leaving none behind to reſent the Outrage. But whatever was not done by Surprize that Day

was

was left undone, and many that made early Resistance escap'd. Virginia.

By the Account taken of the Christians murder'd that Morning, they were found to be three hundred and forty seven, most of them falling by their own Instruments and Working-tools. Three hundred and forty seven murder'd.

The Massacre had been much more general had not this Plot been providentially discover'd to the *English* some Hours before the Execution. It happen'd thus:

Two *Indians*, that used to be employ'd by the *English* to hunt for them, happen'd to lie together the Night before the Massacre in an *Englishman*'s House where one of them was employ'd. The *Indian* that was the Guest fell to persuading the other to rise and kill his Master, telling him that he would do the same by his own the next Day: Whereupon he discover'd the whole Plot that was design'd to be executed on the morrow. But the other, instead of entering into the Plot and murdering his Master, got up (under Pretence of going to execute his Comrade's Advice) went into his Master's Chamber, and reveal'd to him the whole Story that he had been told. The Master hereupon arose, secured his own House, and before Day got to *James-Town*, which together with such Plantations as could receive Notice time enough, were saved by this Means; the rest also who happen'd to be watchful in their Defence escaped. Captain *Croshaw* in his Vessel at *Patowmack* had notice given him by a young *Indian*, by which Means he came off untouch'd. The Conspiracy discover'd by an *Indian*.

The Occasion of *Oppaconcanough*'s furious Resentment was this: The War-Captain mentioned before to have been killed was called

Virginia.

The Occasion of this Massacre.

Nemattanow. He was an active *Indian*, a great Warrior, and in much Esteem amongst them; insomuch, that they believed him to be invulnerable and immortal, because he had been in many Conflicts and escaped untouch'd from them all. He was also a very cunning Fellow, and took great Pride in preserving and increasing this their Superstition concerning him, affecting every thing that was odd and prodigious to work upon their Admiration; for which purpose, he would often dress himself up with Feathers after a fantastick Manner, and by much Use of that Ornament obtained among the *English* the Nick-name of *Jack of the Feather.*

Nemattanow's Character.

This *Nemattanow* coming to a private Settlement of one *Morgan*, who had several Toys, he had a mind to persuade him to go to *Pamunky* to dispose of them. He gave him Hopes what mighty Bargains he might meet with there, and kindly offered him his Assistance. At last *Morgan* yielded to his Persuasion, but was no more heard of; and it is believed that *Nemattanow* killed him by the Way, and took away his Treasure; for within a few Days this *Nemattanow* returned to the same House with *Morgan's* Cap upon his Head, where he found two sturdy Boys, who asked for their Master, and would have had him before a Justice of Peace, but he refused to go, and very insolently abused them; whereupon they shot him down, and as they were carrying him to the Governor he died.

As he was dying he earnestly press'd the Boys to promise him two Things; *1st*, That they would not tell how he was killed; and, *2dly*, That they would bury him among the *English*. So great was the Pride of this vain Infidel,

Infidel, that he had no other Views but the being esteemed after his Death (as he had endeavoured to be while he was alive) invulnerable and immortal, tho' his increasing Faintness sufficiently convinced him of the Falsity of both. He imagined, that being buried among the *English* perhaps might conceal his Death from his own Nation, who might think him translated to some happier Country. Thus he pleased himself to the last Gasp with the Boys Promises to carry on the Delusion. The killing this *Indian* Champion was all the Provocation given to that haughty and revengeful Man *Oppaconcanough* to act this bloody Tragedy, and to take such indefatigable Pains to engage in such horrid Villany all the Kings and Nations bordering upon the *English* Settlement on the *Western* Shore of *Chesepeak*. Virginia.

This Massacre (adds Mr. *Beverley*) gave the *English* a fair Pretence of endeavouring the total Extirpation of the *Indians*, but more especially of *Oppaconcanough* and his Nation: Accordingly they set themselves about it, making use of the *Roman* Maxim *(Faith is not to be kept with Heretick)* to obtain their Ends; for after some Months fruitless Pursuit of them who could but too dexterously hide themselves in the Woods, the *English* feigned a Desire of Peace, giving them all manner of fair Words and Promises of Oblivion, designing thereby (as their own Letters now on Record, and their own Actions thereupon prove) to draw the *Indians* home, and entice them to plant their Corn near their Habitations adjoining to those of the *English*, and then to cut it up when the Summer should be too far spent, and so to leave them no Hopes of another Crop that Year; by which Means they proposed to bring them

The *English* act a treacherous Part,

Virginia. and maſſacre the *Indians* in their turn.

them to want Neceſſaries and ſtarve. And the *Engliſh* did accordingly bring the *Indians* to plant their Corn at their uſual Habitations, whereby they gained an Opportunity of repaying them ſome Part of the Debt in their own coin; for they fell ſuddenly upon them, cut to pieces ſuch of them as could not make their eſcape, and afterwards totally deſtroy'd their Corn.

Another Effect of the Maſſacre of the *Engliſh* was the reducing all the Settlements again to ſix or ſeven in Number for their better Defence. Beſides, it was ſuch a diſheartening to ſome good Projects then juſt advancing, that to this Day they have never been put in execution; namely, the Glaſs-houſes in *James-Town*, and the Iron-work at *Falling-Creek*, which has been already mentioned. The Maſſacre fell ſo hard upon this laſt Place, that none eſcaped but a Boy and a Girl, who with great Difficulty hid themſelves.

The Glaſs Manufacture and Iron-work ruined.

A Lead-Mine diſcover'd.

The Superintendant of this Iron-work had alſo diſcover'd a Vein of Lead-Ore, which he kept private, and made uſe of to furniſh all the Neighbours with Bullets and Shot: But he being cut off with the reſt, and the Secret not having been communicated, this Lead-Mine could never after be found, till Colonel *Bird* ſome Years ago prevailed with an *Indian*, under Pretence of Hunting, to give him a Sign, by dropping his Tommahauk at the Place (he not daring publickly to diſcover it for fear of being murder'd.) The Sign was accordingly given, and the Company at that time found ſeveral Pieces of good Lead-Ore upon the Surface of the Ground, and mark'd the Trees thereabouts; notwithſtanding which, I know not by what Witchcraft it happens, but no

Mortal

Mortal to this Day could ever find that Place again, tho' it be upon Part of the Colonel's own Poſſeſſions; and ſo it reſts till Time and thicker Settlements diſcover it. Virginia.

Thus the Company of Adventurers having, by frequent Acts of Miſmanagement, met with vaſt Loſſes and Misfortunes, many grew ſick of it, and parted with their Shares, and others came into their Places, and promoted the ſending in freſh Recruits of Men and Goods; but the chief Deſign of all Parties concerned was to fetch away Merchandiſe from thence, aiming more at ſudden Gain than to form any regular Colony, or eſtabliſh a Settlement in ſuch a manner as to make it a laſting Happineſs to the Country.

Several Gentlemen went over upon their particular Stocks, ſeparate from that of the Company, with their own Servants and Goods, each deſigning to obtain Land from the Government as Captain *Newport* had done, or at leaſt to obtain Patents according to the Regulation for granting Lands to Adventurers; others ſought their Grants of the Company in *London*, and obtained Authorities and Juriſdictions, as well as Land, diſtinct from the Authority of the Government; which was the Foundation of great Diſorder, and the Occaſion of their following Misfortunes. Among others, one Captain *Martin*, having made very conſiderable Preparations towards a Settlement, obtained a ſuitable Grant of Land, and was made one of the Council there; but he graſping ſtill at more, and aiming at Dominion as well as boundleſs Poſſeſſions, cauſed ſo many Differences, that at laſt he put all Things into Diſtraction; and the *Indians*, ſtill ſeeking Revenge, took Advantage of theſe Diſſentions, and Grants to particular Perſons independent of the Company. Occaſions Confuſion. Another Maſſacre.

Virginia.

and fell foul again on the *Engliſh*, gratifying their Vengeance with new Blood-ſhed.

The fatal Conſequences of the Company's Male-Adminiſtration cried ſo loud, that King *Charles* I. coming to the Crown of *England*, expreſs'd a tender Concern for the poor People that had been betray'd thither and loſt; upon which Conſideration he diſſolved the Company in the Year 1626, reducing the Country and Government under his own immediate Direction, appointing the Governor and Council himſelf, and ordering all Patents and Proceſs to iſſue in his own Name, reſerving to himſelf a Quit-Rent of two Shillings for every hundred Acres of Land, and ſo *pro rata*.

The Company diſſolved.

The Crown appoints a Governor, &c.

The Country being thus taken into the King's Hands, his Majeſty was pleaſed to re-eſtabliſh the Conſtitution by a Governor, Council and Aſſembly, and to confirm the former Methods and Juriſdictions of the ſeveral Courts, as they had been appointed in the Year 1620, and placed the laſt Reſort in the Aſſembly. He likewiſe confirmed the Rules and Orders made by the firſt Aſſembly for apportioning the Land and granting Patents to particular Adventurers.

This was a Conſtitution according to their Hearts Deſire, and Things ſeemed now to go on in a happy Courſe for Encouragement of the Colony: People flocked over thither apace, every one took up Land by Patent to his liking, and, not minding any thing but to be Maſters of great Tracts of Land, they planted themſelves ſeparately on their ſeveral Plantations; nor did they fear the *Indians*, but kept them at a greater diſtance than formerly; and they, for their Parts, ſeeing the

Engliſh

Engliſh ſo ſenſibly increaſe in Number, were glad to keep their diſtance and be peaceable. Virginia.

This Liberty of taking up Land, and the Ambition each Man had of being Lord of a vaſt, tho' unimproved Territory, together with the Advantage of the many Rivers which afford a commodious Road for Shipping at every Man's Door, has made the Country fall into ſuch an unhappy Settlement and Courſe of Trade, that to this Day they have not any one Place of Cohabitation among them that may reaſonably bear the Name of a Town.

The Conſtitution being thus firmly eſtabliſhed, and continuing its Courſe regularly for ſome time, People began to lay aſide all Fears of any future Misfortune. Several Gentlemen of Condition went over with their whole Family, ſome for bettering their Eſtates, others for Religion, and other Reaſons beſt known to themſelves; among theſe the noble *Cecilius Calvert*, Lord *Baltimore*, a Roman-Catholick, thought, for the more quiet Exerciſe of his Religion, to retire with his Family into that new World; for this purpoſe, he went to *Virginia*, to try how he liked the Place; but the People there looked upon him with an evil Eye, on account of his Religion, for which alone he ſought this Retreat, and by their ill Treatment diſcouraged him from ſettling in that Country.

Upon that Provocation his Lordſhip reſolved upon a farther Adventure, and finding Land enough up the Bay of *Cheſepeak*, which was likewiſe bleſs'd with many brave Rivers, and as yet altogether uninhabited by the *Engliſh*, he began to think of making a new Plantation of his own; and for his more certain Direction in obtaining a Grant of it, he

Virginia.

undertook a Journey Northward, to discover the Land up the Bay, and observe what might most conveniently square with his Intent.

Lord *Baltimore* obtains a Grant of *Maryland*.

His Lordship finding all Things in this Discovery according to his Wish returned to *England*; and because the *Virginia* Settlements at that time reached no farther than the South-side of *Patowmack-River*, his Lordship got a Grant of the Propriety of *Maryland*, bounding it to the South by *Patowmack-River* on the Western Shore, and by a Line from *Point Look-out* on the Eastern Shore; but died himself before he could embark for the promised Land.

Maryland had the Honour to receive its Name from Queen *Mary*, Royal Consort of King *Charles* I.

The old Lord *Baltimore* being thus taken off, and leaving his Designs unfinish'd, his Son and Heir, in the Year 1633, obtained a Grant or Patent, and went over in Person to plant this new Colony.

By this unhappy Accident a Country which Nature had so well contrived for one became two separate Governments. This produced a most unhappy Inconvenience to both; for these two being the only Countries under the Dominion of *England* that plant Tobacco in any Quantity, the ill Consequence to both is, that when one Colony goes about to prohibit the Trash or mend the Staple of that Commodity, to help the Market, then the other, to take the Advantage of that Market, pours into *England* all they can make, both good and bad, without Distinction. This is very injurious to the other Colony, which had voluntarily suffer'd so great a Diminution in the Quantity to mend the Quality; and this is noto-

notoriously manifested from that incomparable *Virginia* Law appointing sworn Agents to examine their Tobacco. Virginia.

Neither was this all the Mischief that happen'd to *Virginia* upon this Grant, for the Example of it had dreadful Consequences, and was in the end one of the Occasions of another Massacre of the *Indians*; for this Precedent of my Lord *Baltimore*'s Grant, which intrenched upon the Charters and Bounds of *Virginia*, was Hint enough for other Courtiers (who never intended a Settlement as my Lord did) to find out something of the like Kind to make Money of. This was the Occasion of several very large Defalcations from *Virginia*, within a few Years afterwards, which were forwarded and assisted by the Contrivance of the Governor Sir *John Harvey*; insomuch, that not only the Land itself, Quit-Rents and all, but the Authorities and Jurisdictions that belonged to that Colony, were given away; nay, sometimes in those Grants he included the very Settlements that had been before made. Other Parts of *Virginia* separated from it.

As this Gentleman was irregular in this, so he was very unjust and arbitrary in his other Methods of Government: He exacted with Rigour the Fines and Penalties which the unwary Assemblies of those Times had given chiefly to himself, and was so haughty and furious to the Council and the best Gentlemen of the Country, that his Tyranny grew at last insupportable; so that in the Year 1639 the Council sent him Prisoner to *London*, and with him two of their Number to maintain the Articles against him. This News being brought to King *Charles* I. his Majesty was very much displeased, and without hearing any thing caused him to return Governor again; but by

Virginia. the next Shipping he was graciouſly pleaſed to change him; and ſo made amends for this Man's Male-Adminiſtration, by ſending the good and juſt Sir *William Berkeley* to ſucceed him.

While theſe Things were tranſacting there was ſo general a Diſſatisfaction, occaſion'd by the Oppreſſions of Sir *John Harvey*, and the Difficulties in getting him out, that the whole Colony was in Confuſion. The ſubtle *Indians*, who took all Advantages, reſented the Incroachments upon them by his Grants: They ſaw the *Engliſh* uneaſy and diſunited among themſelves, and, by the Direction of *Oppaconcanough* their King, laid the Ground-work of another Maſſacre, wherein by Surpriſe they cut off near five hundred Chriſtians more. But this Execution did not take ſo general Effect as formerly, becauſe the *Indians* were not ſo frequently ſuffered to come among the inner Habitations of the *Engliſh*; and therefore the Maſſacre fell ſevereſt on the South-ſide of *James-River*, and on the Heads of the other Rivers, but chiefly of *York-River*, where this *Oppaconcanough* kept the Seat of his Government.

A third Maſſacre.

End of the Thirtieth Volume.

THE

THE

TABLE

TO THE

Third Volume of *AMERICA.*

A

ACOMAC, *a Country of* Virginia Page 329
AFRICA, *the Ancients knew nothing of it beyond the Equator* 1
Objections to this Opinion 2
Farther Reasons to shew the Ancients never sail'd round Africa 11
Almagro's *Expedition to* Chili 83
AMAZON *Country* 197
The Situation and Extent 198
The River Amazon *discovered by* Gonzalo Pizarro ibid.
The Difficulties of the first Discovery 199
Orellana *with fifty Soldiers embarks on Board a Brigantine, and runs down the River* 205
Sails to Spain, *and obtains the Government of the* Amazon *Country* 207
Dies in an Attempt to subdue it ibid.
Peter de Orsua *attempts to discover this Country* 209
Two Friars successful in discovering it 210
Texeira *sails up the River to* Peru ibid.
The Sources of the River Amazon 211
Its Course and Magnitude ibid.
The Air, Winds and Seasons of the Amazon *Country* 212
Trees and Fruits ibid.
Corn, Roots and Plants ibid.
Animals ibid.
Persons of the Natives 213
Their Genius, Habits, Government and Wars ibid.
Their Religion 214
No Gold in this Country ib.
America *possess'd by the* Spaniards *alone for one hundred Years* 247
Andes *of* Chili 34, 37
Animals of Brazil 284

Animals

Animals of Chili 70
Animals of La Plata 188
Animals of Virginia 339
Animals of Hiſpaniola *and the* Spaniſh *Iſlands* 222, 223, 230
Animals of the Amazon *Country* 212
Angol, *a City of* Chili 56
Aranco, *a Town and Country of* Chili ibid.
Argol, *Governor, his Adminiſtration in* Virginia 451
Aſſembly, or Parliament, the firſt in Virginia 455
Aſſumption, *a Town of* La Plata 177
Auguſtin *Cape in* Brazil 265

B

BAHIA, *a Port and Province of* Brazil 265, 268
Baldivia. *See* Valdivia 53
Baltimore, *Lord, obtains a Grant of* Maryland 466
Bermudas *Iſlands diſcover'd by* Summer *and* Gates 446
Brewer's *Harbour* 107
BRAZIL, *its Situation* 256
The Name and Face of the Country 257
Springs, Lakes and Rivers ib.
The Sea, Harbours and Capes 258
Air, Winds and Seaſons ib.
The Provinces and Towns of Brazil 261
Captainſhip of Bahia 265
Trade and Shipping 261
The Voyage from Portugal *to* Brazil 270
From Brazil *to* Guinea ib.
Whale-Fiſhery 271
Ship-building ibid.
The Way of Life of the Portugueſe *at* Bahia ibid.
Carriages and Viſits 272
Artificers ibid.
Slaves 273
Diamonds and other precious Stones 278
Towns, Houſes and Furniture of the Natives ibid.
Some vagrant Nations 279
Two great Nations of the Brazilians 280
Tapuyers, *their Perſons* ib.
They wear no Cloaths ib.
Ornaments 281
Tupinambes, *their Perſons and Food* ibid.
Arts and Sciences 282
Animals, thoſe of Europe *carried thither* 284
Beaſts and Fowls proper to this Country ibid.
Serpents and Inſects 285
Fiſh 287
Amphibious Animals ibid.
Vegetables of Brazil 288
Minerals 295
The Hiſtory of Brazil 296
Knivet's *Account of Canibals, Giants, Monſters, &c.* 298
The Religion of the Brazilians 301
Marriages and Funerals 303
Wars and Arms 304
The Dutch *take* Olinda *and the whole Province of* Pernambuco 305
Count Maurice *Governor of* Dutch

Dutch Brazil ibid.
Reduces three Provinces more 306
The preſent Inhabitants of Brazil ibid.
The Force of the Portugueſe *there* 308
BRITISH PLANTATIONS, *their Situation and Extent* 311
The ſeveral Provinces 312
Buccaneers, their Original 235
Buenos Ayres 176

C.

CANIBALS, &c. Knivet's *Account of them* 298
Cape Henry *and Cape* Charles *in* Virginia 434
Caſtro *Town* 55
CAUPOLICAN, *General of the* Chileſe 88
Taken and put to death 93
Cheſepeak, *a Country and Bay in* Virginia 316
CHILI, *its Name* 33
Situation, Extent and Face of the Country 34
Weather on the Andes 39
Springs and Rivers 43
Baths 44
Lakes and Rivers 45
Ports, Seas, Winds and Tides 47
Seaſons 48
Provinces and chief Towns 51
Buildings of the Chileſians 58
Natives of Cuyo *no fixed Abode* 59
Fortreſſes 60
Their Perſons and Habits 61
Their Ornaments 63
Genius and Temper 64
Their Food and Diverſions 65
Exerciſes, Learning and Phyſick 67
Their Averſion to Servitude 68
Animals of Chili 70
Vegetables of Chili 73
European *Fruits* 75
Mines 76
Foreign Trade 77
The Difference between Cuyo *and* Chili Proper 78
The Deſarts of Pampas 79
The Hiſtory of Chili 82
Almagro's *Expedition thither* 83
Valdivia's *Invaſion* ibid.
The Civil Wars of the Spaniards *in* Chili 85
The Chileſians *revolt* 87
The Spaniards *routed* 90
Valdivia *taken and executed* ibid.
The Chileſians *obtain a ſecond Victory* 92
The Spaniards *driven out of all* Chili *almoſt* 93
Six Spaniſh *Towns taken by them* 94
Remarks on theſe Calamities 95
The Hollanders *attempt to ſettle Colonies in* Chili ib.
A Treaty between the Dutch *and the* Chileſians 102
The Dutch *abandon* Chili 106

Narbo-

Narborough's *Voyage thither* Anno 1669 107
Magellanick *Streights* 117
The Account the Spaniards *give of the State of* Chili 122
Remarks on the Spaniſh *Accounts of* America 126
Chili *deſcribed* 131
Governor Pullen *propoſes ſettling Colonies in* Chili 148
Captain Pain's *Remarks on* Chili 161
The Author's Remarks on Governor Pullen's *Project of ſettling Colonies in* Chili 162
Chiloe *Iſland* 50, 133
Comfort *Cape or Point in* Virginia 435
Conception *City* 53
Copiapo *Town* 56
Coquimbo *Town* 53
Croatan, *an Iſland on the Coaſt of* Carolina 407
CROMWELL *attempts the Conqueſt of* Hiſpaniola 234
His Forces reduce Jamaica ib.
CUBA, *Situation and Extent* 215
Face of the Country, Rivers, Harbours and Seaſons 216
Chief Towns 217
St. Jago ibid.
The Havana ibid.
Some Deſcription of the People 218
Fortifications of the Havana 219
Churches and Weather ibid.
Forts 222
Animals 223
Trees and Fruits 222, 224
CUMBERLAND, *Earl, takes* Porto Rico 242
Loſes his Men by Sickneſs, and forced to quit it ibid.
Cuyo, *a Province of* Chili 57

D

DARIEN, *Iſthmus, the Advantage of erecting Forts thereon* 166
Daries, Virginia 383
De la War, *Lord, made Governor of* Virginian 446
His prudent Adminiſtration 447
His Death 454
Deſire, *a Port of* Patagonia 118
Diamonds and other precious Stones lately diſcover'd in Brazil 278, 295
Domingo, *St. the Capital of* Hiſpaniola 272
DRAKE *repulſed at* Porto-Rico 241
Brings Sir Walter Ralegh's *firſt Colony from the Iſland of* Roanoak *in* Virginia 405
DUTCH *attempt to ſettle Colonies in* Chili 95
A Treaty between them and the Chileſians 102
The Dutch *abandon* Chili 106
They take Olinda *and the whole Province of* Pernambuco 305
Count Maurice, *Governor of* Dutch Brazil ibid.

Reduces

Reduces three Provinces more 306

E

ELIZABETH, *a County in* Virginia 327
Eſſex, *a County in* Virginia 328

F

FAITH, *St. a City of* La Plata 176
Ferdinando, John, *Iſland* 134
The Plantation of it by the Engliſh *propoſed* 135
Florida, *the* French *ſettle there* 247
France, *its Ports and Plantations in* Hiſpaniola 228
Fronteira, *St.* John, *a Town of* Chili 57

G

GARDENS *and Orchards in* Virginia 388
Gates, *Sir* Thomas, *caſt away on the Iſlands of* Bermudas 446
Gilbert *and* Goſnold, *their Voyage to* Virginia 422
Gloceſter, *a County in* Virginia 328
Government of Virginia *modelled after that of* England 455
Greenvile, *Sir* Edward, *carries a Colony to* Virginia 401
Guaſco, *a Port-Town of* Chili 56
Guayra, *a Province of* La Plata 174

H

HAVANA, *a celebrated Town and Harbour in the Iſland of* Cuba 217, 219
Henrico, *a* Virginian *County* 325
HISPANIOLA ISLAND, *the Name, Situation, Extent and Face of the Country* 272
Subdiviſion and chief Towns ibid.
Towns in Hiſpaniola *ſubject to the* French 228
The various Complexions of the People of the Iſland 229
The Beaſts, Birds, Fowls, Fiſhes and Inſects 230
Their Vegetables and Sugar-works 231
Hiſtory of Chili 82
Hiſtory of La Plata 190
Hiſtory of Hiſpaniola 232
Hiſtory of the Iſland of Porto-Rico 239
Hiſtory of Virginia 392

I

JAGO, St. *the Capital of* Chili 91
Jago, St. *Capital of* Cuba 217
JAMES I. *King of* Great-Britain, *his Patent for planting* Virginia, *An.* 1606 430
James *Town in* Virginia, *the firſt* Engliſh *Colony eſtabliſh'd in* America 248, 324
Jeſuites ſent abroad well qualified 193

Jesuites Soveraigns of La Plata ibid.
Imperial, *a City of* Chili 54
Indian *Corn, some Account of it* 377
John Fernando, *an Island on the* South-Sea 134
Iron Mines and Iron Works in Virginia 456
Julian, St. *a Port in* Patagonia 112

K

KENT, *a County in* Virginia 327
King William *County in* Virginia ibid.
King and Queen *County in* Virginia 328

L

LANCASTER *County in* Virginia 329
La Plata. *See* Plata.
Lewis, St. *a Port-Town belonging to the* French *in* Hispaniola 228
Logane, *a* French *Port in* Hispaniola ibid.
London *Company, incorporated by a Patent from K.* James I. *send Colonies to* Virginia 433

M

MAgellanick *Streights described* 117, 129
Manufactures of Glass, &c. *in* Virginia 443
Maryland *granted to Lord* Baltimore 466
Massacre of the English *in* Virginia *by the Natives* 458
Massacre of the Natives by the English 462
Mendoza, *a Town of* Chili 57
Middlesex, *a County in* Virginia 328
Mines of Gold, &c. *in* Chili 37, 76
Mines of Gold, Diamonds, &c. *in* Brazil 293
Mines of Iron and Lead in Virginia 462
Mocking-Bird 365

N

NAnsamund, *a County in* Virginia 326
Narborough, *Capt. his Voyage to* Chili 107, 124
Naval Stores, the Produce of Virginia 391
Negroes first carried to Virginia 455
Nemattanow, *a* Virginian *Champion, killed, which occasions a Massacre of the* English 460
Newfoundland *Fishery begun* 247
Newport, *Capt. carries over the first Colony to* James *Town in* Virginia 433
Norfolk, *a County in* Virginia 326
Northampton, *a County in* Virginia 329
Northumberland, *a County in* Virginia ibid.

O

OLINDA, *a City of* Brazil 264
Oppaconcanough, *a* Virginian *King, his Plot to maſſacre the* Engliſh 458
Orchards and Gardens in Virginia 380
Orellana *firſt ſails down the River* Amazon, *and procures a Grant of the Country* 205
Oromante, *a Town of* Chili 57
Orſua, Peter, *his Voyage down the River* Amazon 209
Oſorno, *a Port-Town in* Chili 55

P

PACAHUNTA, *Princeſs, the Daughter of* Powhaton, *ſaves the Life of Captain* Smith 440
Her Friendſhip for the Engliſh ibid.
She marries Mr. Rolf, an Engliſh *Gentleman* 452
Makes Peace between her Father and the Engliſh ibid.
She comes over to England, *and dies here* 452, 453
PAIN's *Obſervations on* Spaniſh America 155
Pampa's, *Deſarts in* Chili 79
Paragua. *See* Plata 168
Parana *River* 171
Parana *Province* 175
Patagonia, *the moſt Southern Province of* South-America 58, 113, 131
Patowmack, *a River in* Virginia 466
Paul's, St. *a Town near the Mines in* Brazil 277
Penguins *deſcrib'd* 116
Pernambuco, *a Province of* Brazil 263
Petitguaves, *a* French *Port on the Iſland of* Hiſpaniola 228
Pizarro Gonzalo, *diſcovers the River* Amazon 199
Plantations Britiſh. *See* Britiſh *Plantations* 311
PLATA *or* PARAGUA
The Name, Situation, Extent, and Face of the Country 168
Its Seas, Lakes, Rivers and Seaſons 170
The Provinces, chief Towns and Buildings 174
Indian *Towns in* La Plata 178
The Perſons and Habits of the Natives 181
Their Genius and Temper, Food and Exerciſes 182
Their Huſbandry, Plants, Animals, and Minerals 184
The Hiſtory of La Plata 190
The Jeſuites Soveraigns of Part of La Plata 193
The Religion and Marriages of the Natives 194
PORTO RICO *Iſland*
Its Situation, Extent, and Face of the Country 237
Winds and Seaſons 238

Chief Towns ibid.
History of the Island 239
Assaulted by Drake 241
Porto Rico *Town taken by the Earl of* Cumberland 242
Produce of the Country 243
POWHATON, *the* Virginian *King or Emperor, takes Captain* Smith *Prisoner* 440
He spares his Life, and sends him back with Honour at the Intercession of his Daughter Pacahunta ib.
Powhaton *is crown'd by the* English, *and acknowledges King* James *his Soveraign* 441
He afterwards proves an Enemy to the English, *but makes Peace with them on the Marriage of his Daughter* Pacahunta *with Mr.* Rolf, *an* English *Gentleman* 451, 452.
Prince George *and* Prince Charles *Counties in* Virginia 326
Princess Anne *County in* Virginia ibid.

R.

RALEGH, *Sir* Walter *Sends Colonies to* Virginia 394
His Patent for it granted by Queen Elizabeth, Anno 1584 ibid.
He leaves the Colonies he sent thither to perish 412
Raphanock, *a River in* Virginia 310
Rattle-Snakes 345
Richmond *and* Stafford *Counties in* Virginia 328
Rio Janeiro *Province and River of* Brazil 276
Roanoak, *an Island on the Coast of* Carolina, *where the first Colonies of the* English *were settled and left to perish* 399

S.

SALVADOR, St. *the Capital of* Brazil 265
Seal Island *on the Coast of* Patagonia 111
Seals described ibid.
Sebastian, St. *a Town of* Brazil 276
Serpents. See *Snakes*
Silk Grass in Virginia 391
Slaves in Brazil 273
Smith, *Captain, his Services in settling and protecting the Colony of* James-Town *in* Virginia 443
Taken Prisoner by King Powhaton 440
His Life saved by the Princess Pacahunta ibid.
Snakes and Serpents 285, 345, 350
SPANIARDS *and* Spanish America 245
Spanish *Accounts of the State of* Chili, *with Remarks upon them* 122, 126, 253
Spanish *Islands in* America *described* 215

The Spaniards *almoſt driven out of* Chili *by the Natives* 93, 98
Spirito Sancto, *a Province of* Brazil 275
Sugar Plantations of the French *and* Spaniards *in* Hiſpaniola *prejudicial to* Britain 231
Sugar of Brazil 269
Summers, *Sir* George, *caſt away on the Iſlands of* Bermudas 446

T.

TAPIA, *a Town of* La Plata 175
Tapuyers, *a Nation of* North-Brazil 280
Terra del Fogo, *the moſt Southerly Part of* South-America 117, 130
Tobacco, the planting it in Virginia *firſt encouraged by Sir* George Yardly 453
Tucuman, *a Province of* La Plata 175
Tupinambes, *a Nation of* South-Brazil. 281

V.

VALDIVIA, *or* Baldivia, *his Conqueſt of* Chili 83
He is defeated and put to death by the Chileſe 91
Valdivia *Town founded* 88
Its commodious Harbour deſcrib'd 107, 121
Vincent, St. *a Town and Province of* Brazil 277
Vipers. *See* Snakes.
VIRGINIA 314
The Face of the Country 315
Its Capes, Bays, Seas, Rivers, Springs, and Lakes 316, 317
The Air and Seaſons 318
Diſeaſes and Remedies 319, 338
Terrible Thunder 320
Provinces and chief Towns 323
Their Perſons, Habits, Genius and Temper 332, 333
Arts and Sciences 335
Food and Diverſions 336, 337
Animals 339
Birds 361
Soil and Vegetables 375
Corn and Huſbandry 377
Hiſtory of Virginia 392
Diſcover'd by Cabot ibid.
Mr. Ralegh *firſt attempted to fix Colonies there* 394
Mr. Ralegh's *Patent to ſend Colonies to* America ibid.
Two Ships ſent to Virginia 397
An inoffenſive hoſpitable People 400
A ſecond Voyage by Sir Edward Greenvile 401
He burns an Indian *Town* ib.
He ſails to the Iſland of Roanoak ibid.
Sir Edward *leaves a Colony at* Roanoak *and returns to* England 402
They diſcover as far as Cheſepeak *to the North* ibid.
The Indians *enter into a Confederacy*

federacy againſt them 403
A Conſpiracy againſt the Engliſh *defeated* 405
The Chiefs of the Indians *cut in pieces* ibid.
The firſt Colony carry'd back to England ibid.
Fifteen Men left at Roanoak *by Sir* Edward Greenvile 406
A third Colony ſent thither by Sir Walter Ralegh ib.
Mr. Howe *kill'd by the* Indians 407
A Detachment ſent to Croatan ibid.
The ſecond Colony loſt ibid.
The third Colony left to periſh 412
Captain Gilbert *and* Goſnold's *Voyage*, An. 1602 422
Captain Pringe's *Voyage from* Briſtol *to* Virginia, An. 1603 426
Weymouth, *Captain, his Voyage to* Virginia 429
King James's *Patent, incorporating the* Virginian *Adventurers in two Companies*, An. 1606 430
The London *Company* 431
The Plymouth *Company* ib.
The London *Company ſend three Ships to* Virginia 433
They land in Cheſepeak *Bay in* Virginia 434
Cape Henry *and Cape* Charles ibid.
The Commodiouſneſs of this Bay ibid.
A Skirmiſh with the Natives ibid.
Point Comfort 435
Poſſeſſion taken of the Country ibid.
The Engliſh *entertain'd by the Natives* ibid.
An Interview with ſome Weroances 436
The Fort of James-Town *erected* 437
The Friendſhip of the Natives very precarious 438
Captain Newport *returns to* England ibid.
The Colony reduc'd to great Diſtreſs ibid.
Captain Smith *goes in ſearch of Proviſions* 439
Takes them by Force from the Natives on their Refuſal to ſell him any ibid.
A Deſign formed to abandon the Fort ibid.
Smith *taken by the King of* Powhaton 440
His Life ſaved by Pacahunta Powhaton's *Daughter, and a Peace made between the Natives and the Colony* ib.
Powhaton *crown'd* 441
The Colony load a Ship home with gilded Duſt 442
Smith *reſtores the Affairs of the Colony* 445
Diviſions among the Planters ibid.
A new Patent 446
Lord De la War *Governor* ib.
Deputy Governors ibid.
Summers *and* Gates *caſt away on* Bermudas ib.

The

The Colony reduced very low 447
Resolve to quit the Country ib.
Lord De la War *arrives and prevents it* ibid.
His prudent Administration ibid.
Powhaton *threatens the* Englisſh 449
Lord De la War *brings him to Terms* ibid.
Lord De la War *returns to* England 450
Gates's *Administration* 451
Pacahunta *marry'd to Mr.* Rolf 452
A Peace between the Engliſh *and* Powhaton ibid.
Pacahunta *comes to* England ibid.
Yardly *promotes the Tobacco Plantation* 453
Argoll's *Administration* 454
Lord De la War *dies* ibid.
Powhaton *dies* ibid.
Yardly *Governor a ſecond time* ibid.
The Government ſettled on the ſame Foot as in England, 1620 455
The firſt Aſſembly ibid.
Negroes *firſt imported* ibid.
The Lands parcell'd out among the Planters ibid.
The Colony flouriſhes 456
Wyat's *Government* ibid.
Courts of Juſtice 457
The Engliſh *maſſacred by the* Indians 458
Treachery of the Engliſh, *who maſſacre the* Indians 461
Manufactures of Glaſs ruin'd and Iron Mines 462
The Company diſſolved 464
The Crown appoints a Governor ibid.
Lord Baltimore's *Grant of* Maryland 466
Other Parts of Virginia *ſeparated from it* 467
Uragua, *a Province and River of* La Plata 171, 175

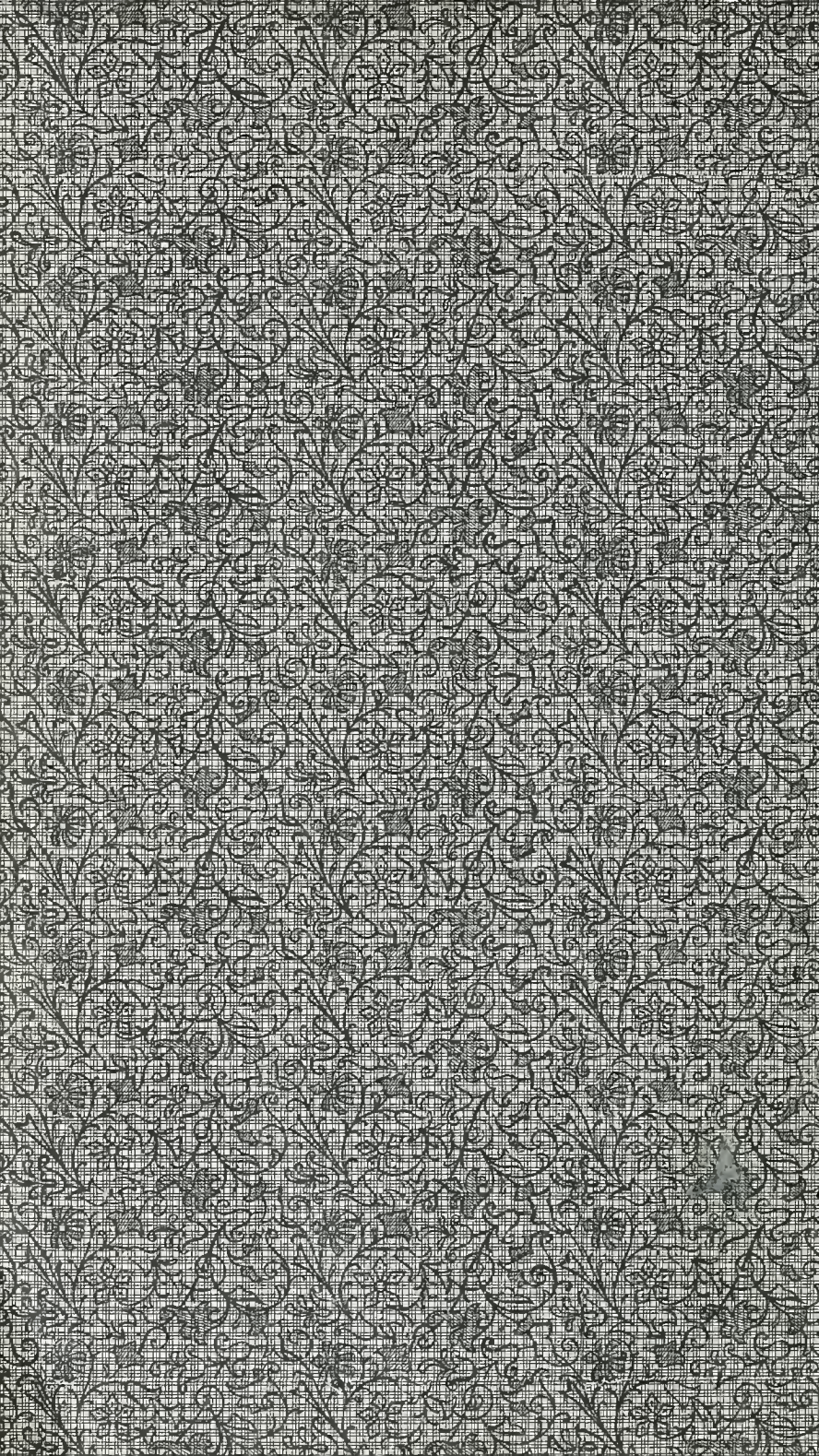
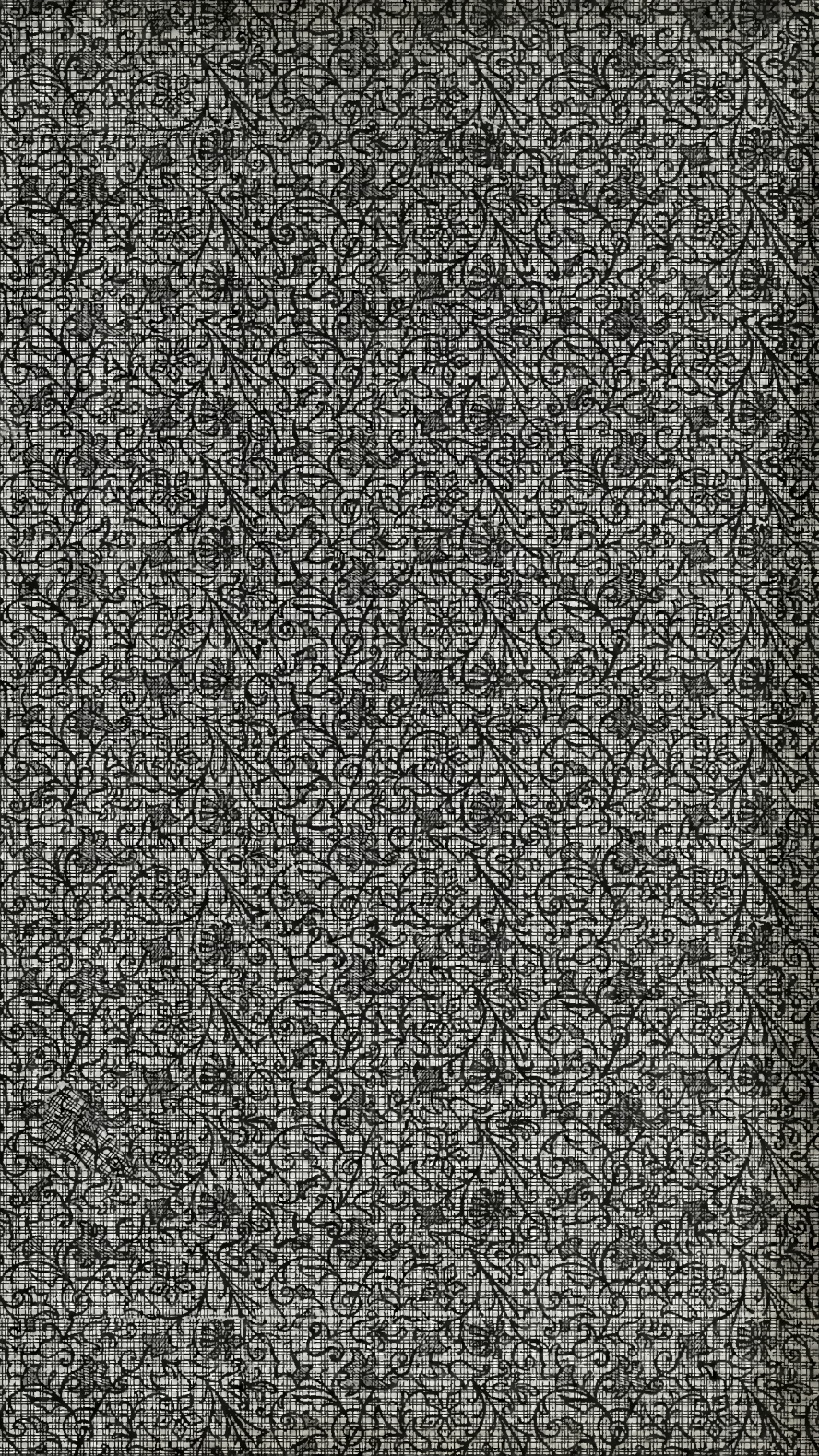
W

WARWICK, *a County in* Virginia 327
Weroances, *or* Virginian *Kings, an Interview between them and the* Engliſh 436
Weſtmorland, *a County in* Virginia 329
Whale Fiſhery at Brazil 271
Williamſburgh, *a Town in* Virginia 325

X

XAVIER, St. *a Town of* La Plata 175

Y

YARDLY, *Sir* George, *Governor of* Virginia, *firſt promotes the planting of Tobacco there* 453
He ſettles the Government like that of England, *and divides the Lands among the Planters* 455
York, *a County and River in* Virginia. 327

FINIS.